



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

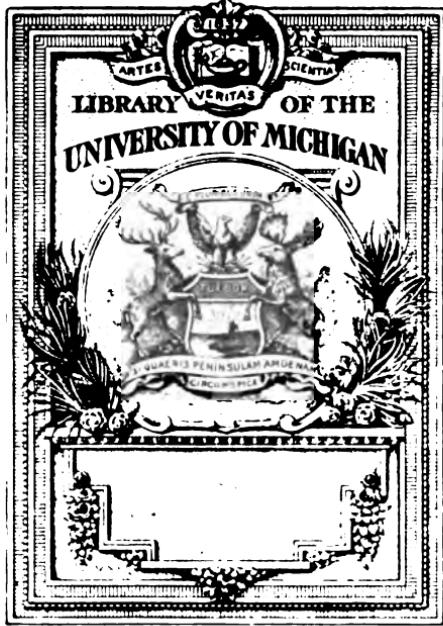
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

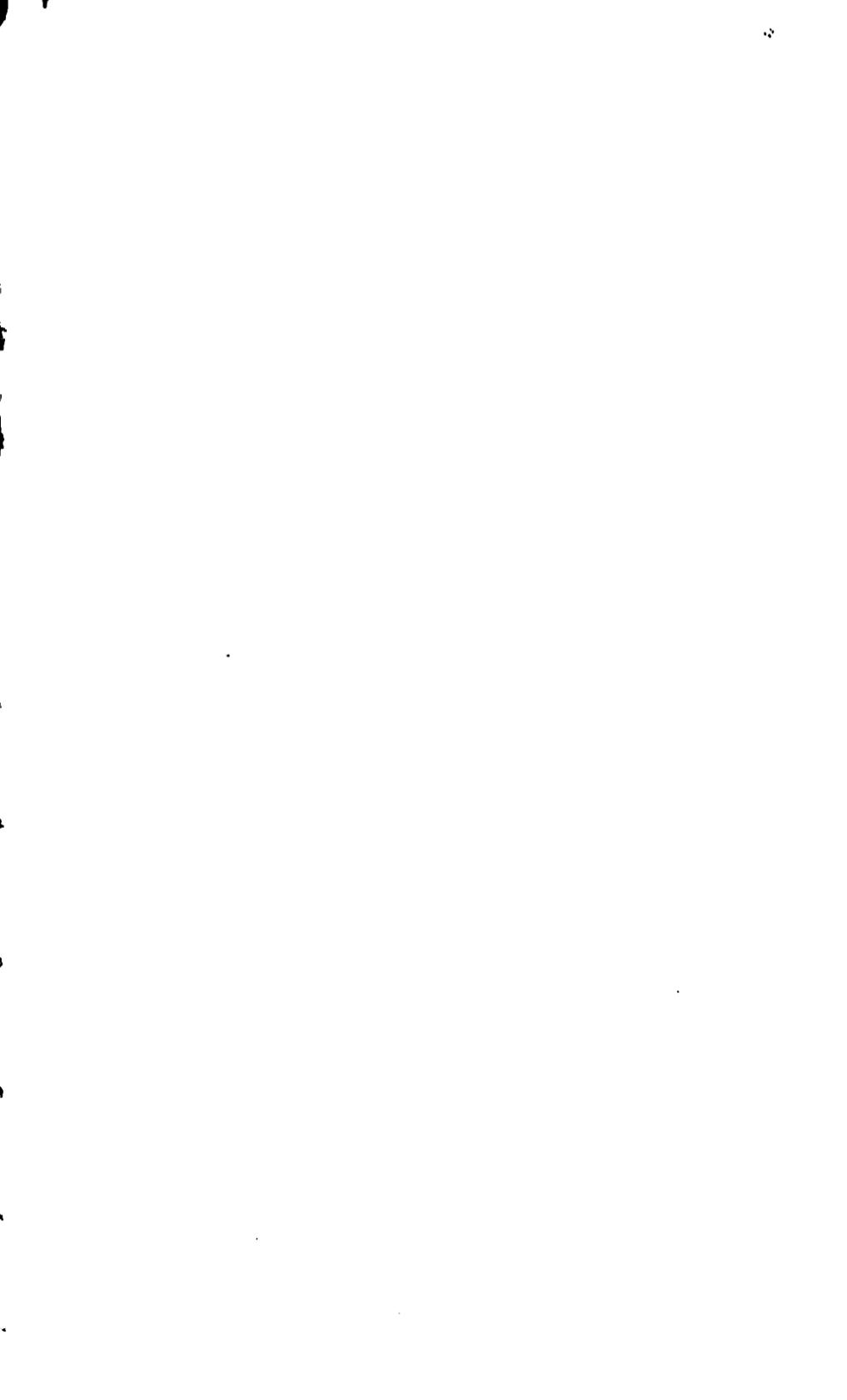
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B 1,473,779



820.6
S43





The Scottish Text Society

BELLENDENS
TRANSLATION OF LIVY



LIVY'S
HISTORY OF ROME
THE FIRST FIVE BOOKS

TRANSLATED INTO SCOTS BY
JOHN BELLENDEN
1533

EDITED, WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY
BY
W. A. CRAIGIE, M.A.

VOL. I.

Printed for the Society by
WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS
EDINBURGH AND LONDON
1901



CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	vii
THE PROLOGUE TO THE TRANSLATION	1
THE PROLOGUE TO THE FIRST BOOK	7
THE FIRST BOOK	12
THE SECOND BOOK	129
THE THIRD BOOK (chaps. i.-xiv.)	240

FACSIMILE OF P. 248 OF THE ADVOCATES' LIBRARY MS.

(see p. 262) *Facing title-page*

INTRODUCTION.

THE Scottish translation of the first five books of Livy, which is here printed for the second time, was made in the year 1533 by John Bellenden or Ballantyne,¹ Archdean of Moray, better known as the translator of Hector Boece's 'History and Chronicles of Scotland.'² The date is definitely fixed by the following entries in the accounts of the Lord High Treasurer, which record the payments made to the translator during the progress, and at the completion, of his work :—

1533.

July 26. Item, to Maister John Ballentyne in part payment of the translatioun of Titus Leuius. viij li.

¹ "Ballantyne" is the form of the name given in the Advocates' MS. of the *Livy*, and this (or "Ballentyne," as in the Treasurer's accounts) was undoubtedly the one by which the author was commonly known to his contemporaries (see the 1821 reprint of the 'Chronicles,' pp. xxxvi-xxxix). That "Bellenden" is more familiar in modern times is entirely due to the fact that it is used in the printed text of the 'Chronicles.' A third form is "Bannatyne" (as in 'Pitscottie's Chronicles,' Introd. lxxviii), in connection with which it may be mentioned that Bannatyne House, near Newtyle in Forfarshire, is locally called "Ballintin."

² As a life of Bellenden would more appropriately be prefixed to a new edition of the 'Chronicles,' I have not thought it necessary to enter into biographical details here.

1533.

Aug. 24. To Maister John Ballentyne, in part payment of the translatioun of the secund buke of Titus Livius. viij li.

Nov. 30. To Maister Johne Ballentyne, be the Kingis *precept* for his lauboris done in translating of Livie. xx li.

Though thus commissioned and paid for by the king, it is improbable that the work was ever much in request, and only two copies of it seem to be preserved. Fortunately one of these is excellent, and its slight defects are so well supplemented by the other, that it is possible to give a text which is practically complete, and of which the correctness can seldom be called in question.

The elder and better of the two copies is a manuscript (*A*) belonging to the Faculty of Advocates. This is a small folio, with pages measuring $10\frac{1}{4}$ by $7\frac{1}{2}$ inches, and evidently written before the middle of the sixteenth century, probably about 1540. The writing, which is clear and good,¹ and averages forty lines to the page, is the same throughout, with the exception of some later additions, of which the following are the most important. At the end of the prologue in verse are these lines, in a hand belonging to the early part of the seventeenth century:—

The copie of the Leter writin by gods awin hand, as it his

¹ Its only defect is the want of a clear distinction between *c* and *t*; both letters are formed by a down and side stroke, and the length and curve of the former is so irregular, that in cases where either *c* or *t* might be used (as *natioun* or *nacioun*, *Tacius* or *Tatius*) it is often impossible to say which letter is really intended. In such cases the shorter or more curved letter has been read as *c* and the longer or straighter one as *t*, but I am not sure that the scribe always intended this. In the other MS. *c* has a different form from *t*, but the one letter is frequently written for the other, showing that even the scribes of the period could not clearly distinguish them.

said, and fune vnder ane staine in ane waig (*sic*) callit ane acombe (*sic*) neir vnto þe toun of Isandamy in þe ȝeir of our Lord God 1603.

Unfortunately the “copy” does not follow on this. Further down on the same page appears the signature of Lord Elliock, by whom the MS. was presented to the Library, “Ja. Veitch, Edin^r, 16 July, 1730”; this is repeated on p. x, “James Veitch, Edinburgh, 1731,” and again on the last page of the book, with the date “16 October, 1731.” The Prologue is followed by a table of the chapters of the fifth book in a later hand, and some one has made a considerable number of marginal notes in Latin: these refer entirely to the subject-matter, and are of no special interest or value. The concluding chapter of Book V., on p. 511, is in the same hand and ink as the lines on p. 512 (“Fyve Buikis, etc.”), which are signed “A. Home.” Then, in a different ink, but perhaps by the same hand, comes Martial’s distich (xiv. 190)—

Pellibus exiguis arctatur Liuius ingens,
quem mea non totum Bibliotheca capit.

Below this appears twice, each time in different ink, the signature “A. Home, St Leonardis.”

The defects of the MS. are fortunately few. A leaf has been lost between pp. 26 and 27, containing the end of chap. v. and the beginning of chap. vi., and a few leaves are missing at the end, containing the original conclusion of Book V.; the defect here is only partially supplied by A. Home’s translation of chap. xxv. Except in these two places the MS. is in perfect condition throughout.

In respect of the text it contains, the Advocates' copy is remarkably good. The scribe evidently wrote with great care, and his mistakes and omissions are comparatively few. The orthography is very regular and free from eccentricities, one noticeable point being the care with which *w* is discriminated from *u* and *v*. In the case of the vowels, the scribe tends to follow the older practice of denoting long *a*, *e*, and *o* by the addition of final *e*, instead of using the digraphs *ai*, *ei*, *oi*; thus he usually writes *wate*, *wrate*, *barne*, *dede*, *here*, *glore*, rather than *wait*, *wrait*, *bairn*, *deid*, *heir*, *gloir*, though examples of the later forms are not wanting, as *haill*, *deith*, &c. As the MS. must have been written within a few years after the translation was made, it probably represents Bellenden's text pretty accurately in this and other points, though the character of some of the errors makes it doubtful whether it was transcribed directly from his autograph.

The edition of 1822¹ was based on the Advocates' MS. which was the only copy then known to exist. Unfortunately the editor, who in other respects seems to have been careful enough, considered that it lay within his editorial duties to normalise still further the already very regular spelling of the manuscript. No hint of this is given in the preface, and the result is very misleading. In some cases also the Roman names have been completely altered so as to agree with modern texts of Livy. The edition is thus altogether useless from a

¹ The First Five Books of the Roman History : translated from the Latin of Titus Livius by John Bellenden, &c. Edinburgh : Printed for W. and C. Tait. M. DCCC. XXII.

strictly philological point of view, as the form of no single word in it can be depended on, though in the main the text is correct enough as far as the wording is concerned.

The other copy of the translation (*B*) is the property of J. C. M. Ogilvie Forbes, Esq. of Boyndlie. The names of some earlier possessors are written here and there on the margins: thus on pp. 27 and 40, "Mongo Wood ought this book"; p. 65, "Mr William Gordon aught this book"; p. 253, "Georg Gordon Aught this booke." No dates or localities, however, are appended to any of these names, so that they give no obvious assistance towards ascertaining the history of the MS. prior to the time when it came into the hands of Mr Forbes' great-grandfather.

This manuscript differs widely in character from the one described above. In form it is a tall folio of 568 pages, measuring $11\frac{1}{2}$ by $7\frac{3}{4}$ inches. A slight examination is sufficient to show that the MS. consists of two distinct portions, the one containing Books I.-III., the other Books IV. and V. The latter portion, exactly 200 pages, is all in one hand and in a somewhat faint ink, whereas that of the first part is of a strong black colour. On looking more closely at this first portion, it becomes apparent that more than one scribe has been at work, and the remarkable fact is finally discovered that at the outset each of these scribes copied separate quires of sixteen pages. This arrangement continues as far as p. 176, after which the division of labour becomes much more irregular. The total number of hands which appear in this portion is no less than

eleven, and the precise pages written by each are shown in the following list :—

<i>No. 1.—1-16.</i>	<i>No. 6.—225-226.</i>
<i>No. 2.—17-48, 65-80, 129-144, 161-176, 241-256.</i>	<i>No. 7.—227-240.</i>
<i>No. 3.—49-64, 81-96, 113-128, 180-208, 273-288, 295-320.</i>	<i>No. 8.—257-261.</i>
<i>No. 4.—97-112, 209-225.</i>	<i>No. 9.—261-272.</i>
<i>No. 5.—145-160, 177-179.</i>	<i>No. 10.—289-295.</i>
	<i>No. 11.—321-366.</i>

It is pretty obvious that the original from which the Boyndlie MS. was copied must have been unbound, so that the separate quires could be distributed among a number of copyists. That this was the procedure adopted is made certain by the way in which each scribe has tried to make his quire end so as to run on neatly with the next; all are not equally successful in this, and sometimes half a line is left blank, or widely spaced writing shows the effort made to fill the allotted space. For some reason the scribe who began the seventeenth quire (p. 257) omitted to finish it, and the blank was afterwards filled up by the one who wrote Books IV. and V.: in this case there was some miscalculation, with the result that a portion of the text is missing between pages 272 and 273. Perhaps this was written on a separate leaf, which has since dropped out. Apart from this, the MS. is defective only in two places: the prologue in verse has disappeared (and with it the translator's name), and the loss of the last page has deprived us of the closing lines of Book V. These few lines, however, are all that is really lost of Bellenden's work, as in other respects the Boyndlie MS. supplies the deficiencies of the Advocates' copy.

From the general character of the various hands, the date of *B* may be set down as 1550-60. Its text is thus naturally of a later type than that of *A*, and is, moreover, inferior to it in every respect. Scribal errors of every kind abound ; misspellings and distortions of words are frequent, and there are constant omissions of words and lines, occasionally of several lines at a time. Some of the scribes are certainly better than others, but no one of them can at all compare with the writer of *A*. In all probability the portion containing Books I.-III. was executed very hurriedly, which would account for most of the blunders, but there is also some reason for believing that the original itself was of an inferior type. There has been no attempt at revision, so that even the most glaring errors have been left uncorrected. The spelling is very irregular, and varies with the different hands : some of the scribes show a strong preference for *w* in place of *v* ; some write *grit*, *cite*, *fader*, *autor*, *solempne*, &c., while others have *greit* or *grete*, *ceite*, *faþer*, *author*, *solemne* ; No. 3 is fond of doubling *r* and *s*, as in *faderris*, *appeirrit*, *rassit*, *inclussit* ; No. 4 has a special fancy for *i* in the terminations *-aible*, *-aige*, *-ait*, *-air* ; and close study would no doubt show that each of the others has his own peculiarities. On the other hand, some spellings which differ from those used in *A* are common to all the hands, and must have existed in their original. That this was on the whole very similar to *A* appears especially from the portions written by Nos. 2 and 10, who probably copied it more closely than their fellows, whereas Nos. 4 and 9 have treated it with considerable freedom, sometimes substituting their own wording for Bellenden's. This is notably the case in the early chapters of Book IV.,

where the copyist must have looked at the Latin, unless we suppose that Bellenden himself made alterations at this point.

Despite its many defects, however, the Boyndlie MS is of considerable value for the text. Not only does it fill up the larger gaps in *A*, but it supplies numerous words and sometimes lines which have been accidentally omitted there, and occasionally has the correct reading when *A* has the wrong one. It is thus an excellent instance of how an inferior copy may be of service as a check upon a better one, and a close comparison of the two is sufficient to yield an almost perfect text.

In the present edition the text is naturally that of the Advocates' MS., an exact transcript of which was made for the purpose by the Rev. Walter Macleod. As the value of the work is chiefly a philological one, the printed text is intended to reproduce the written one as closely as possible. Capitals and small letters are as in the manuscript, expanded contractions are denoted by italics, and the letters *ß*, *ſß*, and *þ* (in the MS. of course identical with *y*) have been retained wherever they occur: on the other hand, the punctuation is entirely editorial. A close collation has been made with the Boyndlie MS., which Mr Ogilvie Forbes kindly placed in my hands for this purpose. As the differences between the two copies are largely those of spelling, it was somewhat difficult to decide how far the variations were worth noting, but on the whole I have worked on the following principles. All differences in wording have been carefully recorded, and all spellings which are not exactly equivalent to those of *A*. Mere variations of *i* and *y*, *w* and *v*, *c* and *k*, have as a rule been passed over, as well as the constant em-

ployment in *B* of *ai*, *ei*, &c., in place of *a-e*, *e-e* (see p. x above). *B* has also, as a rule, *de-*, *sc-*, *-ble*, *-eis*, *-onis*, *-tion*, in contrast to *A*'s *di-*, *sk-*, *-bill*, *-yis*, *-ouns*, *-cioun*; it never inserts the *e* in *spuleye*, *faleye*, &c.; it commonly has single consonants in such words as *hider*, *gader*, *strikin*, *redy*, *gotin*, &c., while in both MSS. there is constant variation between *-er* and *-ar*, *-at* and *-ate*, *twa* and *two*, *mare* and *more*, *said* and *saidis*, *quhilk* and *quhilkis*; in the majority of cases these differences have been ignored. There are also certain words of frequent occurrence in which *B* is fairly consistent in using a spelling which is different from the usual one in *A*; only a few instances of these have been registered, but a full list of them will be given with the notes at the end of the work. So numerous, moreover, are the errors and omissions of *B*, that to record them all would only have cumbered the page without corresponding profit. I have therefore noted only the more extensive skippings of the scribes, and have given only occasional samples of the way in which they could miscopy the simplest words.

With these exceptions, the variants from *B* may be taken to include everything of interest to be found in the manuscript. Owing probably to the haste with which the scribes worked, their spelling is much less conventional than that of *A*, and often supplies interesting evidence as to the pronunciation of the period. There is considerable reason to believe that the Scottish tongue underwent some important changes about the middle of the sixteenth century, which are only partially represented in the usual written forms of the words. Everything in the Boyndlie MS. which seemed likely to throw light on this question has been carefully noted,

and the more interesting points will be discussed in the notes.

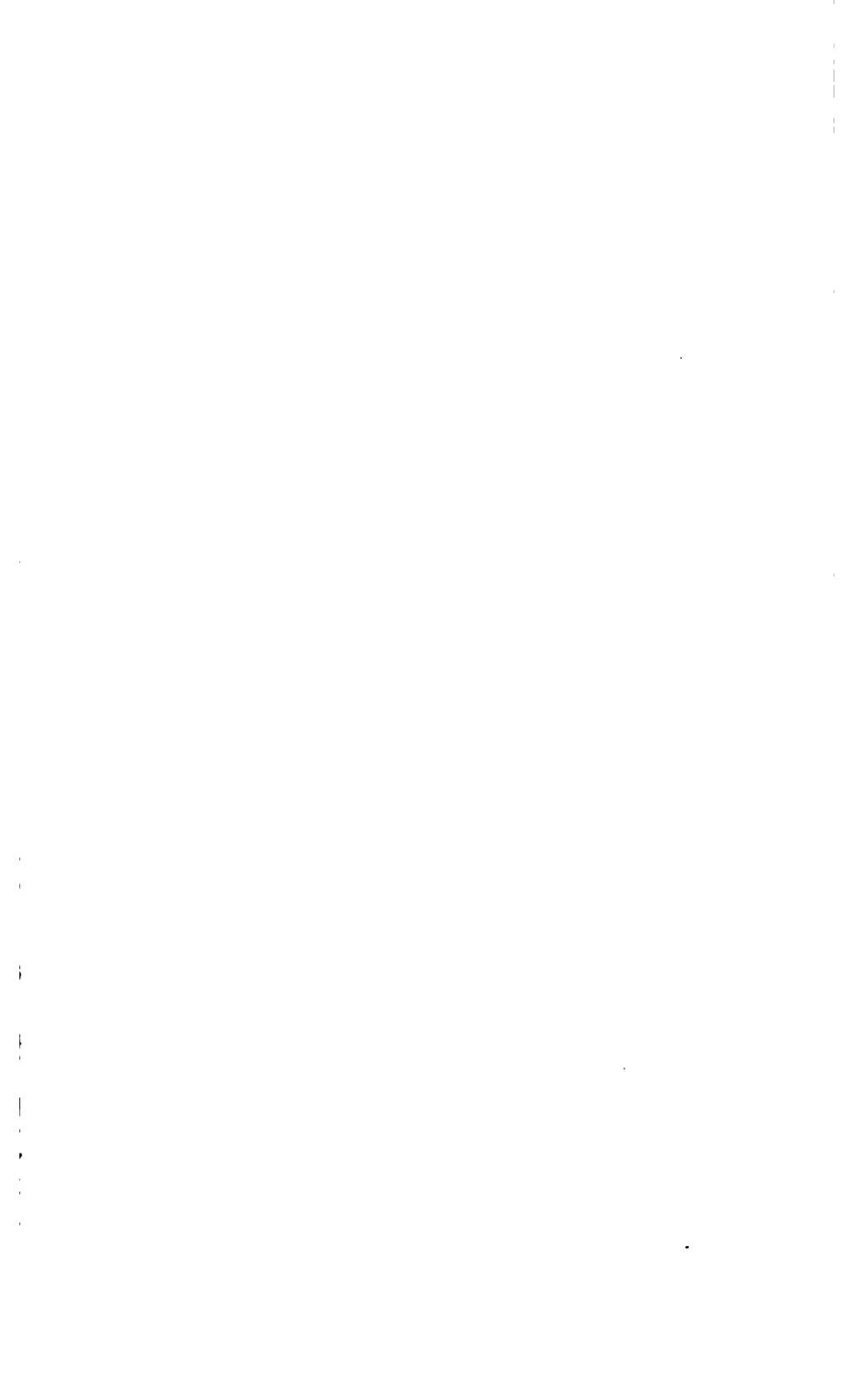
The main text, therefore, is that of the Advocates' MS., printed for the most part without alteration: wherever it has been amended, from *B* or otherwise, the actual reading will be found at the foot of the page, followed by "*A*." All words or letters within square brackets are taken from *B*; in some cases these are not absolutely necessary for the sense, and may be interpolations of the one MS. rather than omissions of the other, but many are obviously genuine. All readings at the foot of the page which are not marked "*A*" are from *B*; and in order to show how the various scribes of the latter MS. dealt with their original, I have printed a number of longer passages for comparison with *A* and with each other. In this way the reader will perhaps have as clear an idea of the general character of the Boyndie MS. as could well be given without printing it in full.

Two sets of numbers will be found on the outer margins. Those preceded by "p." give the pages of the Advocates MS., the exact beginning of each being indicated by an upright line in the text. Those enclosed in round brackets, and corresponding to an asterisk in the text, show the page in the edition of 1822: these have been added to facilitate the use of older references. To assist comparison with the Latin original I have also inserted in the text, within round brackets, the numbers of the chapters as given in the "Oxford Pocket Classics" edition. These do not correspond in any way with Bellenden's chapters, which again are differently numbered in the two copies. In *A* those of each book are numbered separ-

ately ; in *B* the numbers are continuous to the end of Book III., after which they are altogether omitted.

As one of the few specimens of older Scottish prose which can properly be classed under the head of literature, the translation of Livy has considerable value, though in point of general interest it falls far short of the translator's other work. Along with a somewhat excessive Latinism, Bellenden has a large command of the vernacular, and his Scottish words and phrases are often very effectively employed. He has avoided the mistake of translating too closely, while at the same time he rarely paraphrases more loosely than is necessary to give a natural turn to the sentences. On the whole he correctly represents the meaning of the original, and some of the more prominent errors may be due to faults in the Latin text of the period. Why his translation extends no further than the five books can only be conjectured, but in the portion he did execute, Bellenden has shown both scholarship and a ready use of language, and it is an undoubted gain for Scottish literature that his work has been preserved in so original and accurate a form as that here presented to the reader.

W. A. C.



Here begynnys the prolog¹ apoun ge traductioun of titus i (iii).
linius be Maister Johnne Ballantyne Archden of
Murray.

5 ARMIPOTENT Lady Bellona serene,
Goddes of Wisdome and Ieoperdyis of Were,
Sister of mars and ledare of his rene,
And of his batallis awfull messingere,
Thy Werelike trumpett thounder in myne ere,
The horribill batellis and þe bludy harmes
To write of romanis, þe nobil men of armes.

10 And bricht appollo, with þi courſe eterne
That makis þe frutis spring on euery ground,
And with þi mychty influenc[e] dois governe
The twynkland sternis about þe mappamound,
Thy fyry visage on my verſe diffound,
And quykin þe spretis of my dull Ingyne
With rutuland bemes of þi low dyvine.

15 And ȝe, my souerane, be lyne continewall
Ay cumin of kingis ȝoure progenitouris,
And writis in ornate² stile poeticall
Qwik flowand verſe of rethorik culouris,
Sa freschlie springand in ȝoure lusty flouris,
To þe grete conforte of all trew Scottismen ;
Be now my muse and ledare of my pen.

(iv).

¹ This prologue is wanting in the Boyndlie MS.
² ornage, MS.

That be þoure helpe and favoure gracius
 I may be abill (as ȝe commandit me)
 To follow þe prince of storie liuius,
 Quhais curious ressouns tonit ar so hie,
 And eueri senȝ sa full of maieste,
 That so he pafȝ¹ vthir stories all
 As siluer diane dois the sternes small.

5

ii.

And schortlie for to tell I will assay
 How sobirly begouth þe romane blude,
 Thare commoun weill augmentand day be day
 And mony ȝeris vndir kingis stude ;
 And syne how þai proude terquyne did exclude,
 With tyrannye quhen he abone þame rang,
 And all his lynnage out of þare ciete dang.

10

And þan how stoutlie Brutus was providit,
 And gart þe pepill with mychty aithis swere
 Neuer with kingis estir to be gedit,
 Bot with two consullis changit euery ȝere.
 And quhen maist troubill and perrell did appere,
 How þai create ane prudent dictatoure
 Onlie sex monethis to be gouernoure.

15

(v).

ffollowis how romanis to þe grekis went,
 And brocht ten tabillis of þare constitutions ;
 And because þe samyn was nocht sufficient
 Of euery douttis to gif decisouns,
 With two vthir tablis þai made additiouns.
 Thir twelf tabillis (as þe storie schawis)
 War þe first foundment of þe civill lawis.

20

Apperis, be sindri boundis of þis storie,
 That na thing in þe hicht is permanent,
 Nor in þe samyn may haue tranquillite ;
 ffor as of rome the empire & regymt

25

¹ = passis.

ffa romane kingis vnto consullis went,
Sa fra þe consullis be ane uncouth gise
It come to ten men on þe samyn wise.

Thir ten men estir þare creatioune
Renowne and favoure of all þe ciete gat,
And doand Iustice but appellatioun
Thare courſ about on euery mater sat ;
Quhil at þe last þai war exterminat
ffor siclike crymes, as þe kingis did.
Thus þe empire agane to consullis ȝeid.

Sa knightly dedis in bukis historiall
Sall never be fundin quhil þe wvard Induris,
Seand how fortoun rollis as ane ball
The liffe of man with sindri aventuris,
And how þe state of mortall creaturis
Has nevir mare knaulage (as myne auctor beris)
Of suddand fall ban¹ quhen it leist apperis.

15 And how þe state of mortall creaturis
Has nevir mare knaulage (as myne auctor beris)
Of suddand fall þan¹ quhen it leist apperis.

Quhat realmes and ceteis for falt of Iustice lost,
Quhat vailȝeand campiouns & dukis militare
ffor falt of wisdome bene tynt with all þare Oist,
Myne auctor schewis, and sum tyme will declare
The damage of divisioun populare,
Quhilk haistelie (quhare na concorde is socht)
The commoun weill resoluis in to nocht.

25 Be mony exemplis dois þis storie preif
Of tressoun falsett and rebellioun,
The fynale end Is no thing bot myschefe.
And as na wrangis nor Iniure war done
Amang þe romanis but punyciou,
Richt so þe may in to þare storie rede
Conding rewarde for euery nobil dede.
30

¹ bat, MS.

Of awfull batallis þe crafty gouernance,
 The wise array, þe manlie Ieoperdie,
 3e may fynd here, with mony doutsum chance,
 Als quyk as þai war led afore ȝour Ee.
 5
 3e may also be mony stories see
 Quhat besynes may proffitt or avance
 ȝoure princely state with ferme continuance.

Considdir of romanis in all þare tyme bywent
 baith wikkit fortoun & prosperiteis.
 Nocht fell to þame (quhen þai war negligent
 10 In divyne seruice) bot trubil and distreß ;
 And be þe contrare 3e sall fynd expreß,
 Quhen þai relligious & devote war found,
 All welth and grace with honoure did habound.

iv (vii).

3e may als se how goddis did Invade
 The romane pepil with derth and pestilence,
 Becaus þare sacrifice war nocht deulie made,
 As aucht to be, with glore and reuerence ;
 Syne how of goddis þe cruell violence
 Be erdly wit couth neuer be pecifyit,
 20 Quhil be sum meretis þare Ire war satifyit.

Throw quhilk apperis ane notabil doctryne
 To ws þat has þe trew relligioun,
 To mak ws fervent in þe law divyne
 And for offence to drede punyciou,
 Sen sic vane faith and superstition
 25 Preservit þe pepill (quhen it was deuly servit)
 ffor every vengeance þat þare syn deseruit.

To schaw all proffittis I wil nocht pretend
 Quhilk þe first decade of þis werk dois bere,
 ffor, þocht I spendit ane monetht to þe end,
 Thare suld ȝit rest ane largeare feild til ere
 30

Than all my pleuch mycht teill in to ane ȝere ;
 ffor in quhat sorte ȝoure hienes will delite,
 ȝe may gett stories to ȝoure appetite.

Richt proffittabill till undermynde ȝoure fais
 5 And for to lere þe arte of chevelrie,
 Seand how romanis be þare vertew rais
 Abone þe pepill in riches, honeste,
 Relligioun, manhede, witt and equite ;
 And, finalie, how þai all cuntreis wan
 10 Be Ieoperdyis abone Ingyne of man ;

And war sa strang, þat na thing mycht doun cast
 Thare souerane power nor mak þe samyn declyne,
 War nocht þai rageit on þame self at last
 With civil batellis and weris Intestyne :
 15 Bot I will nathing schew of þare rewyne,
 ffor þat war nocht þe way, I vnderstand,
 To dant þe province quhilk I tuke on hand.

For I Intend of þis difficill werk
 To mak ane end, Or I my lauboure stynt,
 20 War nocht þe passage and stremes ar sa stark
 Quhare I haue salit, full of crag & clynt,
 That ruddir and takillis of my schip ar tynt,
 And þus my schip (without ȝe mak supporte)
 Wil periſſ lang or It cum to þe porte.

v.

FFINIS.¹

Here endis the prolog.²

¹ In paler ink.

² "Of þis guid buik" is added in paler ink. Pages vii-x contain a table of the chapters of Book V. in a later hand.



Here begynnys the prolog made be the nobill clerk titus p. 1.
Liuius, princie of historiographouris, apoun he first decade
fra he begynnynge of rome.

1 WATE nocth gif I war to do ane proffitabil werk, gif I
wrate be dedis of romanis sen the first begynnynge of
rome; peraventure I dar nocth write be samyn pocht I could.
And ȝit I se þare werkis of lang begynnynge and richt divulgat
5 to be pepill, sefi new¹ authouris belevis Ilk day owtir to
write be said history with mare faith and sikkernes, or ellis
be þare crafty eloquence traistis to vincus the rude langage
of anciant authouris. in quhatsumeuir way It sall happen, It
will pleis me to haue pastance and consolacioun with my self,
10 to haue in memorie be Illustir and wourthy dedis of þat pepil
quhilk is be prince of be wold. And pocht in sic pluralite
of writaris my fame is obscure and of litill estimatioun, ȝit I
sall comforde my self in be nobilitie and magnitude of þare

Specimen of the quair written by the first scribe in the Boyndie MS.

15 I WAIT nocth giff I wer to do ane proffit[a]ble werk, gyf I wrait
þe dedis of romanis sen the first beginnyng of rome; perawenture
I dar nocth writ be samyn pocht I culd. And ȝit I se thair werkis
of lang begynnynge and rycht dewulgal to be pepill, Sen new authoris
belevis Ilk day othair to writ be said historie with mair fayht and
20 sickernes, or ellis be thair crafty eloquence traistis to wincus be Rude
langage of anciant authoris. in quhatsumeuir way It sal-happin, It
will pleis me to hayf pastance and consolacioun with my self, to
hawe *in* memory be Illuster and worthy dedis of þat pepill, quhilk
is be prince of the varld. And thocȝt in sic pluralite of writaris my
25 fame Is obscure and of litill existimatioun, ȝit I sall confort my self
in The nobilitie and mangnitude of thair renoun that sall noy my

¹ now, *A.*

renoufi þat sall noy my name. Attoure, þe historie of romanis
 is of grete besines, becaus It is now to be repetit abone sevin
 (2). hundreth ȝeris. And þocheþ Impire of *romanis is procedit
 of smal begynnynge, ȝit it is incresct and rissin in sic magni-
 fiscence and hicht, þat þe samyf Is chargeand and lauborius 5
 to þame self. I dout nocht bot the beginnyng of romanis,
 and þe historyis nixt following fra þare begynnynge, sall be of
 leſs pleser to þe redaris þaf recent historyis, becaus þai will
 haisty þame self to here þir novellis and recent dedis done
 in our dais, In quhilkis þe strenthis of þe maist strang pepill 10
 in erde has devorit and consumyt þame self. Of þe tothir
 parte, I wil desire na thing erare in reward of my laubouris
 þaf to subtract me fra sicht of sic miserijs as oft occurris in to
 oure dayis, quhil I may reherf in mynde the antiquiteis of
 mony ȝeris departit; quharethrow I may be sa void of curis 15
 p. 2. þat, howbeit the samyf may mak my mynde full of sollicitude,
 ȝit þai may na thing divert me fra þe treuth of historie. And
 þocheþ sic thingis (as bene schewin afore þe begynnynge of rome
 or sev It was biggit) be decorit mare be poeticall fabillis þan

name. Attoure, þe histore of romanis Is of grit besines, becaus 20
 It Is now to be repetit abone seuin hundreth ȝeris. And þoth þe
 Empire of romanis Is procedit of small begining, ȝit It Is incresct
 and Rysin to sic mangnifice[nce] and hicht, that þe samin Is chaire-
 and [and] lauborius to þame self. I dout nocht bot þe begynnynge 25
 of romanis, and þe historis nixt following fra thair begynning, sal-be
 of leſs pleser to þe redaris than recent historis, becaus þe redaris
 will haisti thame self to heir thir nowellis and recent Dedis done
 In our dayis, in quhilkis þe strenthis of maist strang pepill hes
 Deworit and consumit þame self. on the toþir part, I will Desyre 30
 na thing erar In reuarde of my Lauboris than to ¹substract me fra
 þe sicht of sik miserijs as oft occurris in to our dayis, quhill I
 may Reherf in mynde þe antiquiteis of mony ȝeris departit;
 Quhairthrow I may¹ be sa woid of curis þat, howbeit þe samin
 may mak my mind full of sollicitude, ȝit thay ma na thing dewert
 me fra the treuth of history. And thocht sic thingis as bene schawin 35
 afore þe beginnin of rome (or sev It was biggit) be decorit mair with

¹—¹ These lines, coming at the foot of p. 1, are repeated at the top of p. 2.

ony Incorruptit testimoniall of trew historiis, *ȝit þe samyn ar nouþir* to be affermit nor reprevit be *ws*; for sic thingis suld be perdonit be ressouñi of þare antiquiteis, *Becaus þai fabillis* in discriving *þe begynnnyng* of romanis wald mak *þe samyn* *þe more divyne and mervellus*, *þat þe power of men* *Is supportit* *be commixtioun* of goddis. Attoure, gif It be lefull to ony pepil to consecrate þare begynnnyng, and to refer þare progenitoris to goddis, sic glore mycht weil be gevin to romanis, for *þai had mars* *þe god of batall* to þare progenitoure and first begynnare. all pepill sustenis *þ[a]ir opinioufis* on *þe samyn maner* as *þai sustene* *þe empire of romanis*. Bot *ȝit*, in quhatsumeuir way thir and sic opiniouns are considerit or belevit, we hald þame of litil forþ. Now euery redare gif his mynde with vehement attendance to knaw quhat maneris has bene afore this tyme amang *þe romanis*, be quhat pepill, be quhat crafty Ingynys, *þe empire of romanis* has be conquest and ekit baith in were and pece to þir dayis. And consider in his mynde how sleuthfull war *þe maneris of romanis*, quheñ morall disciplynis begañ to failȝe. And how *þe more þai slaid* fra gude maneris and doc-

20 poeticall fabillis þan ony Incorruptit testimoniall of trew historiis, *ȝit the samin ar nouþir* to be affirmit nor repreuit be *ws*; for sic thingis suld be perdonat be resson of thare antiquiteis, *Becaus þai fabillis* in discrywing *In (sic) þe beginnyng* of romanis wald mak *þe sammin* *þe more dewine and mervalus*, *þat þe power of men* *Is supportit* *be commixtioun* of *[goddis]*. attoure, gyf it be lefoull to ony pepill to consecrate thair beginnin, and to refere þair progenitoris to goddis, sic glore mycht be gevin to romanis for *þai had mair (sic) þe god of battall* to þair progenitoure & first beginner. all pepill sustenis þair opynionis on *þe samyn maner* as *þai sustene* *þe empire of romanis*. Bot *ȝit*, in quhatsumewer way þir and sik opinnyonis ar considerit or belevit, we hald þame on litill forþ. Now *euery* redar gif his mynd *wit* wehement attendance to knaw quhat maneris hes bene asforis tyme amang *þe Romanis*, be quhat pepill, be *[quhat]* crafty inginis the empire of romanis hes bene conquest and eikit baytȝ in were and pece to þir dayis, and consider in his mind quhow sleuthfull wer *þe maneris*¹ . . . and doctrine thay rane *þe*

¹ No break in MS.

tryne, They ran the more feirslie vnto euery vice, quhil at last It
 is cummyn to þir dayis, In quhilkis we may nouþir suffer oure
 (3.) vices, nor lawis to remeid the samyn. *3it ane thing sall be richt
 hailsum & profitabile to þe þat happynys to haue cognicioun of
 þis historie, seing þe documentis of sa mony Illuster and nobil 5
 exemplis as ar collecteit here togiddir vnder ane historie, quhare-
 throw þow may do grete commodite baith to þi self & commoun
 wele, sum tymes lerand sic doctrinis as þow may vse eftir in þi
 p. 13. | life, And sum tymes lerand to eschew all thingis quhilkis has
 baith ane schamefull begynnyng & ane schamefull ending. And 10
 forthir owtir þe affectioun þat I bure to þis present besines dis-
 savis me, or ellis þare was nevir ciete þat had þare commoun
 weil of mare renoun, of mare halynes, nor more riche of gude
 exemplis, þan was þe toun of rome. Attoure þare was neuer pepil
 in quhilkis avarice and licherie gat later Intreß, nor in quhilk 15
 hie renowne and honoure war gevin sa lang to temperance &
 povertie; for þe mare pouerte þai had þe leß avarice was with
 þame, quhil now latelie Riches and superaboundant pleseris has
 brocht in avarice, and gevin occasioun be voluptuous leving to
 devore and consume euerything. The deploracion of sic miserijs 20

more se[r]slye vnto euerry wice; quhill at þe last It is cumin to þir
 dayis, In quilkis we may nouþir suffer Oure wices, nor Lawis to
 remeid þe samyn. 3it ane thing sal-be rycht halsum and profitabile
 to þe þat happynis to hayf cognicioun Off þis history, seing þe
 documentis of sa mony Iluster & notabill exemplis as ar collecteit heir 25
 togiddir onder ane history, Quhairthrow þow may do grit commodite
 bayt to thy self and þe commone wele, sum tymis lerand sic Doc-
 trinis as þow may wse eftir in thi lyfe, and sum tymes lerand to
 eschew all thingis quilkis hes bayt ane schamefull begynning & ane
 schamefull endyng. And forþir þe affectioun þat [I] beir to þis present 30
 besines dissavis me, Or ellis þair ves neuer ceite þat [had] þair com-
 moun wele of [mair] renoun, of mair halynes, nor more riche of gude
 exemplis, þane wasþ be toun of rome. Attoure þair vas neuir pepil
 in quilkis aurice and lichory gat later Incres, nor In quhilk he renoun
 and honour wer gewin sa lang to temperance & pouerte; for þe mair 35
 pouerte þai had the leß temperance (sic) wes with þame, quhil now
 laitylly riches & superabundand pleseris hes brocht in aurice, And
 gewin occasioun be voluptuous lewing to Dewore & consume all
 thingis. The deploratioun of sic miserijs will nocht be plesand,

wil nocht be plesand, Suppois þe tyme was neccessare þareto ;
 ffor sic thingis suld nocht be rehersit at þe begynnyng of þis grete
 werk, bot erare to convert oure prayeris be Imitacioun of poetis,
 to Implore with solemne cerymonis þe favour of goddis and
 goddefß, to grant me ane happy ending to þe begynnyng of þis
 grete werk.

Here endis the preface of titus livius apon his first
 buke fra þe begynnyng of rome, and begynnys þe
 historye.

10 Suppois þe tyme ver nesessar þairto ; for sik thingis suld nocht be re-
 hersit at þe begysning of þis grit werk, bot erer to convert our pray-
 eris be Immitatioun of poetis, to implore with solemp ceremonis þe
 favour of goddis & goddasis, to grant ane hapy endyng to þe begyn-
 nyng of þis grit werk.

15 Heir endis þe preface of titus liuius Apon his first buke
 fra the begynnyng of rome, & begynnis þe histore.

(4). * How Eneas and antenor come in Italy¹ estir the eversioun of troy; how antenor foundit² Venys; and how Eneas foundit² lavyne, and was allyat with King latyne; of his sindry aventuris³ and deith. *Capitulum primum.* 5

IN the begynnyng It is patent yneuch, quhen troy was takin, p. 14. **I** þat þe grekis slew mony of þe cieteþanis þareof. Two þe | richt of anciant lugeing⁴ noct⁵ Invadit with batall, for thir agane to grekis; and for þir causes war sufferit to departe with þare body and gudis saif. It is als knawin þat Antenor, brokin be sindri aventuris, [come] in þe maist Inwart partis of þe Adriaykis⁶ seyis, having⁶ with him ane multitude of Pepill callit henettis, quhilkis⁷ be seditioun falling amang þame self war doung out of paphlagone þare ciete and constrenit⁷ to seik ane new gouernoure and duelling place, for þare king philome⁸ was slane (5). at Troy. * Antenor, estir his cummyng in Italy with þir henettis & troianis, eiekkit þe auld Inhabitantis þare of, namyt euganis, duelland þat tyme betuix the seyis⁹ and þe montanis⁹ of Italy callit Alpes. Antenor, with thir henettis and troianis, estir þe expulsioun of Euganis tuke reall¹⁰ possession of all þare landis & gudis. The place In quhilk þai come first was namyt be þame Troy, bot¹¹ It was callit estir¹² Pagus, þat is to say, ane landwart towne; Syne callit baith þe¹³ pepill vnder ane name venicianis. 25 It is als patent how Eneas, fugitive fra his ciete on þe samyn

¹ Etalie.

⁴ lugin.

⁷ constrainit.

¹⁰ ryall.

¹² om.

² fundit.

⁵ hadreakis.

⁸ Phelomene.

¹¹ ester.

¹³ þir.

³ auentoure.

⁶ hayfand.

⁹ transp.

maner, (how beit þe weirdis led him to ¹ þe begynnyng of¹ greter renoun and pepill) come first in ² macedone, and to seik ane duelling place was eftir drevin in Sicill, and come eftir *with* ane grete navy ³ in þe cuntry of laurence, and namyt the place (quhare he first landit) Troy, and all his pepill troianis. Thir troianis brokin *with* lang travell in þare viage,⁴ eftir þare cummyn in þe said land, (becaus na thing was þan restand amang þame sauffing ⁵ þare mynyciou and armoure), tuke ane large pray out of þe landis of laurence to refreshe þare wery pepill. In þe meyn tyme, king latyne of laurence assemblit þe auld Inhabitantis of | his realme namyt aborigines, armyt in þare maist werelie p. 5. ordinance, to represþ þe violent Incursion of þir stranglearis.⁶ sindri opinions⁷ ar in þis mater. Sum historianis allegeis þat king latyne was vincust be Eneas in batall, and constrenit⁸ þare throw to gif his dochter Lavinia, þe heretour of his realme, in mariage to þe said Eneas, and made pece with him be þis affinit. Vtheris allegis quhen baith þe armyis⁹ stude arrayit in vtheris¹⁰ sicht, afore þe trumpettis gaif signe¹¹ to Ione,¹² þat king latyne drew Eneas, gouernour of þir stranglearis, to ane freyndlie commonyng, and demandit him quhat pepil þai war þan present¹³ in his cumpany; how and be quhat aventure þai left þare native¹⁴ cuntry, and quhat þai¹⁵ disirit or socht in his landis¹⁶ of laurens. At last king latyne, herand þame troianis and cummyn within his landis *with* grete pussance and multitude of pepil, And how þare prince Eneas was þe son of Anchises & Venus, banist and his ciete brynt, and sekand ane place to big¹⁶ ane toun, and fra he considerit þe grete nobilit of his pepill and þe hie curage of himself, reddy to al aventuris baith in were and pece, he tuke trewis *with* þe said Eneas, Promitting¹⁷ to gif his dochter Lavinia in mariage¹⁸ to him.¹⁸ * Sone eftir, þir twa¹⁹ princis war con- (6). federate, & generall concorde made betuix þare²⁰ pepil. Than Eneas was ressauit in lugeing *with* king latyne, and in presence

¹—¹ *om.*⁶ strangioris.¹¹ sing.¹⁶ byge.² to.⁷ oppinⁿionis.¹² Iune.¹⁷ promittand to him.³ naway.⁸ constrainit.¹³ precent.¹⁸—¹⁸ *om.*⁴ vaige (!).⁹ armis.¹⁴ natyf.¹⁹ two.⁵ saifing.¹⁰ vþthairris (!).¹⁵ þa.²⁰ þair two.

of his familiare goddis Resauit Lavinia his dochter in mariage, in takin of perpetuall amite. This new affinite and concorde gaif ferme esperance¹ to troianis to finis al þare errouris² with ane stabill and sikkir duelling. Sone eftir þai biggit ane toune, quhilk was namyt *lavinium*, eftir þe name of Eneas wiffe. Eneas within 5
 p. 6. lang weris continewit betuix thir | troianis and aborigines, ffor turnus king of Rutules (to quham *lavinia* was hecht in mariage afore þe cummyn of Eneas in Itale) was richt Impatient to suffir ane 10
 strangeare to be preferrit to him, and for þat cauß invadit king latyne and Eneas with batall baith atanis. Nane of þir partyis⁴ war glade of þe chancis⁵ falling be þis fechting, for þe Rutules war vincust, and þocht þir troianis and aborigines war victorius, jit þai tynt king latyne, for he was slane in þe said batall. Than 15
 turnus and þe Rutules, disparit of releif, fled to Mezentius king of hetruria to get support of his maist riche and pussant pepill þe hethruschis.⁶ This mezentius regnand⁷ in his toun of Cere, than flowand⁸ in hie prosperite and richeß, was na thing content of 20
 þe suspicius rising of þis new toun of lavyne, traisting þe commoun 25
 weil⁹ of troianis to rise haistelie of sic firmance, þat na sikkir rest nor¹⁰ felicite mycht stand to þare nychtbouris; and for þat cauß Mezentius was confederate lichtlie with þe Rutuleis. Than Eneas to resist þe rage and terroure of sa pussant Inemyis, and to conqueß þe mare hartlie kyndenes of þe auld Inhabitantis of 30
 þat regioun, callit baith þame and þe troianis vnder ane name latynis, to þat fyne þat baith þe pepill suld Increß togiddir¹¹ vnder ane mynd & lawis. ffa þat furth þir aborigines concurrit with Eneas in all aventuris, In na leß faith & ferme societe than did þir¹² troianis. Eneas confiding in¹³ þe curage of þir two pepill 35
 Increasing Ilk day in more riches and strenth, Howbeit þe Realme of hethruschis flowit in sic felicite & welth þat þare grete

¹ asperance.⁵ chanſt.⁹ followand (?). ¹¹ þe giddar.² errouris.⁶ Ethruschis.¹⁰ na.¹² þe.³ (namit *Ascanius here.*)⁷ ringand.¹³ considering.⁴ partyis.

senȝorie fillit baith * seyis and landis, fra þe montanis namyt (7).
 Alpes endlang¹ Italie² vnto Sicill with þe renoun | thareof; ȝit p. 7.
 Eneas (suppois he mycht haue³ resistit þe Incursioun of þir
 maist strang pepil be onlye mvnitiosuns⁴ and wallis of his new
 5 toun) he brocht furth þe⁵ pepil arrayit to þe campis to gif batal to
 all Invasouris. Þis batall was richt fortunate to latynis, and was
 þe last of al Eneas mortale laubouris, for þe Etruschis war
 vincust and Eneas slane in It, and buryit beside þe River of
 10 Numyk.⁶ with quhatsumeuir name It is lefull to call him, he
 was haldin be þe pepil for Iupiter Indiges, and ekit to þe nowmer
 of goddis.

15 Of Ascanius empire estir þe deith⁷ of Eneas, And
 how he foundit⁸ þe Ciete of Alba; of þe lang 2.
 posterite succeding estir him; how romulus and
 remus slew þare eme Amulus, & restorit numi-
 tor þare gudeschir to his realme. Ca. ij.

(III) Ascanius, estir þe deith⁹ of Eneas, was be his minorite
 nocht ganand to succede to his empire; Howbeit It remanit
 hail to his age of xiiii ȝeris. The realme of latynis and troi-
 20 anis was sauffit to þis childe Ascanius be prudent tutorie of
 lavinia his moder, In quham¹⁰ grete vertew haboundit. quha
 may sikkerlie afferme sa remote & vncouth¹¹ historie? I wil
 nocht dispute gif þis Ascanus was more agit þan to be
 gottin on lavinia; he was gottin (as sum belevis) on Creusa¹²
 25 þe spous of Eneas mony ȝeris afore¹³ þe exterminioun of
 troy, and come with his fader as fugitive & companjoun¹⁴ in
 all his aventuris, namit Iulus, fra quham the houȝt of Iulius

¹ endland, *A.*

² etalie.

³ a.

⁴ inventionis(!).

⁵ his.

⁶ nunyk, *A.* ; mwnik, *B.*

⁷ detht.

⁸ fundit.

⁹ deth.

¹⁰ quhom.

¹¹ vncouht.

¹² Crusa, *A.*

¹³ ester (!).

¹⁴ compainȝeone.

tuke begynnynge. Trew It is¹ þat Ascaneus, (in quhatsumeir place or on quhatsumeir woman he was gottin) was þe son of Eneas, and becaus he saw þe toun of lavyne fluriß in grete felicite be fouth² of men & richeß, he left þe samyn p. 8. to be Inhabit be his moder, | or ellis his stepmoder, lavinia, 5
(8). And³ in esperance of greter⁴ felicite he beildit ane vþir new toun vndir the fute of mont Albane. This toun (becaus It was mare extendit to þe lenth þan brede) was callit lang Alba. fra þe begynnynge of lavyne to þe begynnynge of Alba þe colony and pendikillis⁵ þareof war xxx ȝeris. Thir townys, 10 lavyne and Alba, increscit togidder in sic affluence of men and richeß, specially estir þis huge victorie gottin on mezentius and hethruschis, þat nothir⁶ þe said hethruschis nor ȝit ony vthir pepil had audacite to Invade þame in þe deith of Eneas, nor in þe tutorie of lavinia, nor ȝit in þe first 15 ȝeris of Ascaneus empire; for sic pece was made betuix þe hethruschis and [þe] latynis, þat þe river of Albula, quhilk is now callit tyber, was equale marche to þame baith. Efter Ascaneus succedit his son Siluius, quhilk was borne be aventure in ane wod. Siluius had to his son Eneas siluius, 20 succeding estir him. Eneas siluius gat Latynus siluius, fra quhom mony smal cieteis tuke [þair] begynnynge, quhais Inhabitantis war callit þe anciant latynis. Siluius was þe commoun surname to all þame quhilk estir þe deith of latynus siluius succedit to þe empire of Alba. Estir latynus siluius succedit 25 his son, Alba siluius. Estir alba succedit Atis; estir Atis succedit Capis; And estir capis rang Capetus; And estir capetus rang Tiberinus, quhilk passand oure þe river of Albula perist, throw quhilk þe Ryver was callit estir his name tiber. Estir tyberinus succedit Agrippa siluius; And estir 30 Agrippa rang Romulus siluius, and resignit⁷ the croun to his soun⁸ Aventyne, quhilk⁹ aventyne was slane be thunder on ane litill montane quhilk is now ane parte of rome, be quham þe said Montane was estir callit Aventyne. Estir þe

¹ Trewth is.² foucht.³ An.⁴ gretar.⁵ pendikill.⁶ nouþir.⁷ resignit.⁸ sone.⁹ This.

deith of aventyne succedit his son Proca, quhilk had twa p. 9.
 sonnys Nunitor¹ and Amulus. This proca left in legacy to
 Nunitor² (becaus he was eldest son) the kingdome of þe
 houß and lynage of siluius; ȝit þe preiþ and violence of
 5 tyranny³ was mare pussant in þis mater þan ony reuerence
 of age or faderly piete;⁴ for Amulus banist his brother, &
 vsurpit þe croun be force, and, to eik Ilk cruelte abone vthir,
 he slew all þe lynage mail of his brother, traistint þare throw
 to regne⁵ in quiet, but ony estir clame. Syne tuke his
 10 brother dochter namyt Rhea, and profest hir as ane nvn⁶ in
 þe tempil of Vesta, goddes of chaistite,⁷ vnder culouȝt to de-
 core hir with solemne⁸ religioun, how * beit his purpoiþ was (9).
 þat be hir perpetual virginite the successioun of hir body suld
 aluterly expire. (IV) ȝit, as I beleif, þe begynnyng of rome,
 15 the maist pussant kingdome vnder þe power of goddiþ, was
 thirlit to destanye⁹ and fatale chance of werdis. This Rhea¹⁰
 happynnyt to be deflorit of hir virginite, and brocht atanis to
 þe licht twa twynnys, namyt estir Romulus and Remus. All
 wayis scho held Mars¹¹ þe god of batall to be fader to hir
 20 sonnys, vncertane quhiddir scho fermelie traistit sa was as
 scho ymaginit, or gif scho thocht mars mycht be þe mare
 honest excuse for þe offence made aganis hir religion. ȝit
 nothir¹² þe fere of goddis nor meþ mycht deliuer hir nor hir
 sonnys fra tyranny¹³ of Amulus, ffor scho, noȝt withstanding
 25 þe reuerence of hir religion,¹⁴ was cassin in presoun,¹⁵ quhare
 scho sone estir decessit, And hir sonnys war commandit but
 ony miseracioun to be cassin in tyber. This Ryver be divyne
 purviance was ȝett¹⁶ furth with large flude abone þe brayis, in
 sic maner þat na men mycht haue passage to þe streme or
 30 Iuste bankis þare of; ȝit It gaif¹⁷ sic esperance to þe bur-
 reouris quhilkis bure þe barnis¹⁸ to þe River, þat þai traistit,
 how beit þai kest þame in þe schald wattir¹⁹ þareof, | ȝit þai p. 10.

¹ Altered from Mvnitor, as in B.

¹—² om.

² orig. Munitor, A.

³ tirrany.

⁴ pete.

⁵ renge.

⁶ nwne.

⁷ chestite.

⁸ solemp.

⁹ destine.

¹⁰ Rea.

¹¹ Merȝ.

¹² nouþir.

¹³ tyrany.

¹⁴ religioun.

¹⁵ prissoun.

¹⁶ ȝit.

¹⁷ gef.

¹⁸ þir barnis.

¹⁹ walter.

suld periſſ. Their surreouris, traisting to haue done suffici-
entlie þare devore, keſt baith þir barnis¹ in ane pule within
þe flude mark. The place quhare þir barnis war cassin to be
perist is now callit *ficus Ruminalis*, quhare grete wildernes
and desertis war in þai dayis. The fame is, quhen þe River 5
was fallin to the ald marchis,² ane wolf, richt thristy eſtir
chaiſſ of beistis, discendit fra þe montanis to þe said Rivere,
and be skirl of þir barnys come to þe samyn place quhare
þai war cassin to be perist,³ all ourecoverit sauffand⁴ þare
hedis with watter; And be divyne providence this wolf schev 10
hir sa meik to þir barnis, þat þe maister scheipherd⁵ fastulus
fand hir nocht alanelry gevand⁶ þame souke with hir pappis,⁷
bot als likkand þame with hir young. This hird, movit be
pietuous⁸ commiseracioun, brocht hame thir barnis⁹ to be
nurist be his wife, namyt Laurence. Sum haldis þis laurence, 15
(beacaus hir body was commoun to lust of men) was callit
lupa, quhilk in oure langage is ane wolf; throu quhilk It is
(10). fenȝeit be poetis þat þir barnis¹⁰ war nurist be ane wolf. * In
quhatsumeir way þai war nurist, treuth is, fra þai¹¹ come to
strenth¹² and perfectioun of ȝeris, þai myȝt nothir¹³ be haldin 20
at vile nor small laubouris, bot be Innative ferocite sum
tymes¹⁴ quhen þai kepit þair bestiall, þai chasit¹⁵ and slew
Ravenus beistis; and nocht satifyit¹⁶ with sic besynes, slew
and tuke be frequent Incursiouns sindri strang thevis¹⁷ of þe
cuntry, quhilkis war accustumyt to Invaid þe hirdis þareof. 25
And to conqueiſſ¹⁸ þe more benevolence of þare compan-
ȝeouns¹⁹ þai devidit þe pray and spuleȝeis quhilkis war takin
fra þe saidis Theiffis amang þe remenant²⁰ hirdis of þat
regioun. Schortlie, be sindry cumpanyis of feirſ and ȝoung
p. 11. cumpanȝeouns¹⁹ daly²¹ assisting to þare opinioun, thay | had 30
exercitioun alſſ wele in merynes as in vþer more ernyst
gammyn. And to mak þare laubouris succede with more

¹ bairnyſſ.⁶ gyfand.¹⁰ barnes.¹⁴ tyme.¹⁸ conques.² marchis.⁷ palpis.¹¹ þa.¹⁵ chayſſit.¹⁹ compainȝeonis.³ pereist.⁸ peteous.¹² strenth.¹⁶ satyfeit.²⁰ remenantis.⁴ sauffing.⁹ bairnyſſ.¹³ noder.¹⁷ thewis.²¹ daly.⁵ schiphird.

felicite, þai maid solemne¹ feistis estir þare vsage on ane
 montane namyt palentine. (V) This montane was namyt
 palantium² fra palanteum ane toun of Archadie, bot estir þat
 [it] was callit palantyne. Vnder þe fute of þis montane was
 5 ane den or ellis ane Vale³ namyt lupercall, dedicate to Pan
 god of Archadie be king Evander, quhilk rang mony ȝeris
 abone þe pepil of þat region. Be þis evander was institute
 ane sportsum play, þat ȝoung men⁴ suld ryn nakit in þare
 lust and Insolence, to wourschip⁴ pan Liceus, þe foresaid god
 10 of Archadie, quhilk estir was callit Invus be þe romanis.
 quhen þe ȝoung men of þis cuntry war rynnand⁵ estir þare
 gise⁶ in veneracioun of þe said pan, god of Archadie, Ane
 buschement of brigantes lay in wate,⁷ with grete haterent
 aganis Romulus and Remus for þe recovering of diuers
 15 prayis of gudis fra þame. And þoche Romulus eschapit be
 his singulare manhede, ȝit þai tuke Remus, and deliverit him
 as⁸ presoner to Amulius, saying he was ane theif and, be
 assistance of vthir lyymmaris his companȝeouns, waistit & rest
 þe landis of Nunitor þe kingis brother. Thus was Remus
 20 gevin to nunitor to be punist. Now had fastulus gude
 cognossance⁹ þat Romulus and Remus, quhilkis war nurist
 be him, war of þe¹⁰ lynage and blude Riall; for he knew
 weill how þai war commandit to be drownit, and saw þe tyme
 of þar finding¹¹ and date of ȝeris aggreand togiddir.¹² how
 25 beit he wald noct opin ane haisty and vnprovisit mater, les
 þan he war *constrenit be necessite, Or ellis had fundin¹³ (11).
 sufficient occasioun to reveil þe samyn. Alwayis sic necessite
 occurrit, þat he for fere of Remus life opynyt this¹⁴ | mater to p. 12.
 Romulus and on þe samyn¹⁵ maner oppynyt this mater to
 30 numitor, quhilk havand the said Remus in presoun, and
 herand how he and his brother Romulus war twynnys, and
 þare age respondent to þe samyn date and supputatioun of

¹ solemp.⁵ vas rinand.⁹ congnosce.¹³ fund.² palantin.⁶ gyift.¹⁰ he.¹⁴ þe sam.³ om.⁷ vait.¹¹ findin.¹⁵ sam.⁴ wirchop.⁸ aȝe ane.¹² wele aggreand þe giddar.

3eris In quhilkis þai¹ war devisit to be slane; And findand þame of hieare² curage and sprete þan apperis with men of vile and obscure lynage, come haistelie to his mynde the memorie of his nevois,³ and seirchit finalie⁴ the mater sa fer þat he knewe al maist perfitelie Remus. Thus was ane 5 conspiration made on Ilk⁵ side aganis þe king Amulus. Romulus seand him self nocht⁶ party to Invade the king be opin violence, come nocht with ane cumpany of armyt men atanis, bot trystit his freyndis and companȝeouns to mete him, Ilk man cūmmand ane sindri gate, at þe palace of amulius 10 agane ane certane houre. Remus, supportit with na litill garnisoun be his gudeschir Nunitor, met romulus at þe samyn place at tyme affixt, And be this slicht⁷ slew þare eme Amulius. (VI) Numytor, herand þe suddane effray,⁸ said to his folkis þat sum Inemyis had Invadit þe toun; And be 15 þat occasioun gadderit haistely ane strang band of armit men, as he wald haue passit to defend the king and palace fra Incursioun of all Inemyis; and quhen he was enterit in the castell, and saw his nevois eftir þe slauchter returnyng with reiosit visage to him, he callit the pepill haistelie to ane 20 counsale, & began to schaw baith þe cruelte⁹ of his bruthir aganis him, and þe mervellus and wunderfull begynnyng of his twa nevois; how þai war gottin and nurist, and in quhat maner þai war first knawin to him; And eftir this schew þe slauchter¹⁰ of þe tyran Amulius, grantand him be oppyn con- 25 fessioun þe slaare¹¹ þareof. And in the myddis of his orisoun p. 3. enterit Romulus & Remus with | ane band of armit men and salute thare gudeschir nunitor as king. Than þe remanent pepill did salute and ratify him king on þe samyn maner.

¹ þa.	⁴ serschit finely.	⁷ slyth.	¹⁰ slauther.
² heair.	⁵ ilk ane.	⁸ affray.	¹¹ slayare.
³ newoyȝ.	⁶ sell noth.	⁹ crewelte.	

How rome was foundate¹; of þe slauchter of remus; (12).

how cacus was slane be hercules for steling of
his ky; of þe sacrifice dedicate be evander to þe
said hercules, and how romulus made lawis to
governe his pepil in Iustice.

Ca. iij.

Quhen the crowne of Alba was restorit to Numitor in þis
maner, Romulus and Remus tuke purpos to edifie ane ciete,
in þe samyn place quhare þai war cassin to danger and nurist.
Than war with Romulus and Remus greit confluence baith of
10 latynis and albanis assemblit togidder,² with mony vthir hirdis
þare compaþeonouns.³ All thir pepill vnder ane mynd and
esperance traistit fermelie the townis of lavyne & alba to be of
litill estimacioun in respect of þis towne quhilk was to be
edifyt.⁴ followit be þir slichtis⁵ þe samyn⁶ displeser þat
15 Numitor þare gudeschir sustenit afore, þat is to say, avarice and
desire of kingdome. succedit finalie ane schameful debate,
rasit fra ane richt pure begynnyng; for sen þir brethir war
twynnys, þe decisioun of þare richtis⁷ mycht nocth follow be re-
uerence of age; And for thir ressoun⁸ It was statute to explore
20 and serche the myndis of þare goddis (in quhais tutorie þai placis
war dedicate) be auguris and divinacioun of foulis, quhilkis of þir
two brethir sall put name to þis [new] tovne, and reiose⁹ þe
senþeory of þe pepill þareof in tymes cummyn. Romulus went
to mont palentyne, and Remus to mont aventyne, to mak þare
25 templis þareon; and to haue knaulege of þare desiris be au-
gures & divinatioun of foulis. (VII) Apperit to Remus sex
grapis afore ony foule apperit to Romulus; and quhen he had
schawin þe samyn, apperit to Romulus xij¹⁰ grapis. als sone as
þir brethir had schawin þir augures,¹¹ | every ane of þame war salute p. 4.
30 king be thare favoraris and freyndis. The freyndis of Remus

¹ fundit.

⁴ edyfeit.

⁶ sam.

⁸ rasonis.

¹⁰ twoll.

² þe giddar.

⁵ þis slychtthis.

⁷ rychtthis.

⁹ reois (!).

¹¹ augureis.

³ compainþeonis.

allegit þat he suld regnne,¹ for he was preferrit to Romulus be
 priorite of tyme, for he saw first [þe] sex grapis. On ² þe tothir
 (13). * side was allegit þat Romulus suld regne ⁸ be pluralite of nowmer,
 for he saw xij grapis. be thir contencions þir brethir raiß Ilk
 day in grete haterent, persewing vthir with maist⁴ cruelte and ⁵
 slauchter.⁵ At last þai mett togiddir at ane skarmusche, In
 quhilk Remus alwayis was slane. The opinioun mare vulgare is
 þat Remus, in ⁶ derisioun of his brother, past oure the new wallis
 of þis toun, and was slane þarefore be Romulus, Rageand [In]
 þat tyme in maist Ire,⁷ to certisye þe pepil þat every vthir ¹⁰
 persoun þat past oure his wallis suld be slane in þe samyn maner.
 Thus succedit Romulus, but ony [mair] colleig, to þe haill
 empire of þis new toun, and namyt þe samyn ⁸ fra his name
 rome. Sic thingis done, he garnist mont palentyne, quhare he
 was nurist, with strang mvnitiooun; syne made sacrifice to þe ¹⁵
 greke⁹ Hercules, in þe samyn gise as þai war ¹⁰ institute be king
 evander þe forsaide king of Archadie; And eftir þat, he made
 sacrifice to þe remanent goddis on the albane wise. Sum men
 sayis þat Hercules, eftir the slauchtir of gereon, draif in thir
 boundis ¹¹ fare tydy ¹² kye of maist plesand bewtie, And, becaus he ²⁰
 was sowpit ¹³ with lang travel, he lay doun in ¹⁴ ane halesum and
 plentuus gerß beside the Ryver of tyber, Nocht fer fra the samyn
 place quhare he swam oure þe said Ryver with his beistis, to
 refresh þame with þe battill ¹⁵ gerß þareof. This hercules, eftir
 þat he was fillit with surfett ¹⁶ mete & wynes, fell on ane hevy ¹⁷ ²⁵
 slepe; And in the mene tyme ane hird of þat cuntre namyt
 Cacus, cruell & richt strang of body, was sa revist ¹⁸ with the
 bewtie of þir kye, þat he pullit ¹⁹ ane certane of þame (quhilkis war
 farest and of maist bewtie) bakwartis be the talis in his cove;¹⁹
 for gif he had drevin þame to his cove,²⁰ thare futesteppis ²¹ ³⁰
 wald haue schewin to hercules to quhat place þai war brocht.

¹ ring.⁷ Iir.¹³ sopit.¹⁹—¹⁹ ane certane off þir² on to.⁸ sam.¹⁴ on.

kye bakuertis quhilk

³ ringne.⁹ grete, *A.*¹⁵ battall.

waß of farest bewtie be

⁴ grit.¹⁰ þa wair.¹⁶ surfeit.

þe talis in this coyse.

⁵ slauchter.¹¹ bondis.¹⁷ heue.²⁰ coys.⁶ be.¹² plesand, *A.*¹⁸ reueist.²¹ futstappis.

Hercules, arelie awalkynnyt on þe nixt morow out of his slepe, estir p. 15.
 he had vesyt¹ his flok & found ane large parte of þame absent,
 past to þe nixt cove,² to espy gif he could fynd þare ony fute-
 steppis³ of his ky. And becaus he saw þe futesteppis³ fordwart,
 5 apperandly as certane beistis had be cumin⁴ fra þat cove,² he was
 confusit, and nocht knawand in his mynde quhat was to be done,
 And began to drive⁵ away the residew of his beistis fra þat
 noysum pasture At⁶ last, quhen hercules was drivand⁷ þe saidis
 ky by þe * cove,⁸ ane certane of þame lowit,⁹ be desire to haue (14).
 10 þare marrowis.¹⁰ The ky, quhilkis war stollin and Inclusit within
 þe said cove,⁸ lowit⁹ agane on þe samyn maner, and causit
 hercules to returne haistely to þe said cove.⁸ Cacus, seand him
 cum, made him with grete mynassing to defend the said cove,⁸
 and schoutit on þe remanent hirdis & pepill of þat cuntry to assist
 15 to his defence; nochtþeles hercules slew him with his maif.¹¹
 King Evander, fugitive fra peloponeso ane province of grece,¹²
 governit thir boundis in þai dayis, mare be autorite þan ony
 empire; And was haldin in veneracioun for his lettres, quhilkis
 war ane new and vncouth thing amang þe rude and vncrafty
 20 pepill of þat regioun. Bot ȝit he was haldin in more honoure &
 veneracioun amang þame for þe prophecy and divinacioun of his
 moder carpenta, quhom þe pepill held in na littill admiracioun
 afore þe cummyng of Sibilla in Italie. This evander assemblit
 haistelie þe hirdis and pepill of þat regioun, to revenge þe
 25 slaunchter of Cacus sa pertlie¹³ committit. Nochtþeles, quhen he
 vnderstude clerelie the maner of his slaunchter, with þe hie offence
 and tressoun committit be him, & had vesyt þe habit, forme,
 and contenance of hercules, apperand of mare devyne and
 hevinlie stature þan was sene with erdlie¹⁴ creaturis, he began to
 30 demand him quhat he was. Alsone¹⁵ as he was aduertist of his
 name, his fader and cuntry, he fell on kneis and said, "haill¹⁶
 hercules, son of Iupiter. my moder | carpenta, the trew Inter- p. 16.

¹ wysyt.⁵ dryfe.⁹ rowtit.¹³ peirtlye.² cowe.⁶ And, A.¹⁰ marrouȝ.¹⁴ ert hilie.³ futesteppis.⁷ dryfand.¹¹ meif.¹⁵ Alþ sone.⁴ cumand.⁸ coyf.¹² grit (!).¹⁶ hale.

pretour of divyne mysteriis, revelit to me þat þow suld eik þe nowmer¹ of goddis, and schew þat here sall be dedicate to the ane altar, quhilk sum tyme þe maist riche pepil in erde sal haue in reuerence, makand on It ȝerelie sacrifice to þi honoure and loving." als sone as þis altare was erekkit and dedicate on þis 5 wise,² hercules embrasit Evander, and said he acceppit³ þe werdis, & suld fulfill all destanyis⁴ as his moder carpenta devinit.⁵ And Incontinent þe maist excellent & lusty kow, chosin amang þe residewe of his flok, was slane in sacrifice to hercules; and to mak þe sacrifice war brocht two pepil, þat ane [namit] poticianis 10 and þis vthir pinarianis, descending of twa maist riche & Illuster (15) houſſ⁶ of þat *cuntre. It happynt so⁷ þat þir poticianis war present & reddy with all cerymonis effering⁸ to þe sacrifice, and quhen þai had etin⁹ all þe bowellis of þis sacrifice, comperit the pinarianis to eit of þe remaneſt mete þareof; And for þat cauſ¹⁵ 10 It was commandit be hercules,¹⁰ sa lang as þe pinarianis war on life, nane of þame nor þare lynnage suld ete of þe solemne¹¹ bowellis of ony sacrifice. The poticianis, lernit to mak sacrifice in þis wise be king Evander, war mony ȝeris estir maist happy bischoppis, quhill at [þe] last þe solemne¹² office pertenyng to 20 þare lynnage was gevin¹³ to public servandis, Throw quhilk al þe lynnage of poticianis sone estir failȝete.¹⁴ Thir sacrificis onely ressauit Romulus, of all þe vtheris solemniteis quhilkis war þat tyme accustumyt¹⁴ in þe wold. This Romulus, clothit with vertew of Immortalite, to quhilk his werdis led him, was þe 25 favorare (VIII) of divyne seruice lauchfully done, And callit þe citeȝanis¹⁵ of his new ciete to ane counsale, And gaif to þame mony halesum and proffittabil constituciouns, to mak þame leif & Increſ¹⁶ togiddir¹⁶ vnder his lawis and Justice. Attoure¹⁷ becauſ¹⁷ he knewe þe more venerabill, þe more princely, þat he 30 behad him in his dignite riall, the mor his lawis and constituſiouns wald be dred and estemyit¹⁸ be rude and sympill¹⁹ pepill,

¹ nomer.

² on his vyf (!).

³ exceppit (!).

⁴ destyneis.

⁵ dewisit.

⁶ housſis.

⁷ sua.

⁸ affering.

⁹ eittin.

¹⁰—¹⁰ Hercules commandit.

¹¹ solempt.

¹² solemnit.

¹³ failȝit.

¹⁴ acustomit.

¹⁵ ceiteȝanis.

¹⁶ þegiddir.

¹⁷ Atour.

¹⁸ estimit.

¹⁹ sempill.

Tharefore he | made him in all his abulȝementis¹ mair honest p. 17. þan afore; and first he gart xij lictoris, armyt with xij brade axis, pas afore him quhare he ȝede, baith in signe of his devyne honouris & punytioun of transgressouris. Sum allegis he tuke thir 5 xij axis in honoure of the xij grapis, quhilkis apperit to him in mont palentyne, be þare divinacioun schew þat he suld regnne and gif name to this new ciete; ȝit It plesis me to applaud erare to þe opinioun of þame, quhilkis haldis þat romulus tuke þir xij axis be Imitatioun of þe Etruschis, þare nixt nychtbouris, 10 quhilkis had certane apparatouris and men of armes reddy forment all aventuris þat mycht occur. ffor be exemplill of þir Etruschis þe sadill currill and þe pretext govne, with mony vþir ornamentis quhilkis war haldin in þai dayis In signe of honoure, war brocht vp in rome. The ethruschis had xij seriandis armis 15 with xij axis, becaus þai had vnder þare senȝeorie xij sindri tribus & pepill, of quhilkis euery ane send ane *man armis with ane (16). ax to þe said Etruschis, quhen þare king was to be chosin. In

1 Here begins p. 17 of the Boyndlie MS.; this and the following quair are written by the second scribe, whose orthography is very close 20 to that of the Advocates' MS., though with more contractions: a specimen is subjoined.

And first gart xij littoris, armyt w^t xij braid axis, paſ afore him quhair he ȝeid, baith in signe of his devyne honouris and pvnitioun of transgressouris. Sum allegis he tuke þe xij axis in honour of þe 25 xij grapis, quhilkis appering to him in mont palentyne be þir divinacioun schew þat he suld regne and gif name till his new ciete; ȝit it plesis me to applaude erar to þe opinioun of þame quhilkis haldis þat romulus tuke þe xij axis be Imitatioun of þir nixt nychtbouris, quhilkis had certane apparatouris and men of armys reddy fornence 30 all aventuris þat mycht occurre. ffor be exemplill of þir ethruschis þe sadill currill and þe pretext govne, with mony vþer ornamentis (quhilkis wer haldin in þi dayis in signe of honour), wer brocht vp in Rome. The ethruschis had xij seriandis armys with xij axis, becaus þai had vndir þair senȝeorie xij sindry tribis and pepill, off quhilkis 35 euery ane send ane man armys with ane ax to þe said ethruscis, quhen þair king wes to be chosin. In þe mene tyme, þe romanis Increstit

¹ abulȝementis.

þe menetyme the romanis increscit Ilk day in new mvnitiooun,
 bringand new rowmes vnder þare dominiououn, and dilating þe
 boundis of þare toun *with* grete magnificence, traisting be þare
 esperance mair novmer of pepill to cum haistelie to þare toun
 þan was present for þe tyme. Attoure, þat the renowne and 5
 magnificence of þare toun suld *nocht* appere in vane, be counsell
 of aigit pepill (sic as war begynnaris of new cieteis, *fenzeing* þare
 dochteris gottin on þe erde) to bring ane multitude of vile and
 obscure pepill to Inhabit and fill þare ciete, Thay proclamit ane
 generall refuge within þare ciete. þis refuge was callit Asilum, 10
 circulit and hedgit with thik breris on euery side, betuix twa
 woddis *within* þe said toun; And schortlie, throw þe generall
 proclamationoun, mony and diuers^s cumpanyis of pepill liand þare
 p. 18. about, richt desirus of new | changis, fremen and *servandis* but
 ony difference fied to þe said refuge. This was the first way 15
 þat made þe ciete of rome strang & pussant be multitude of
 pepill. Romulus, na thing penitent of haisty mvniciououn and
 grete novmer of pepill Rising to his new ciete, chesit ane hun-
 dreth men of maist wisdome and age to be senatouris, To þat fyne
 þat his new ciete *mycht* rise equalie in wisdome and pussance. 20

Ilk day in new mvnitiooun, bringand new rowmes vnder þair dominiooun, and dilating the boundis of þair toun *with* greit magnificence, traisting be þair esperance mair novmer of pepill to cum haistelie to þair toun þan wes *present* for þe tyme. Attour, þat þe Renoun and magnificence of þair ton suld *nocht* appere in vane, be counsale of 25
 agit pepill (sis [sic] as war begynnaris of new cieteis *fenzeing* þair dochteris gottin on þe erd) to bring ane multitude of vile and obscure pepill to Inhabet and syll þair ciete, Thay proclamit ane generall Refuge *within* þair ciete. þis refuge wes callit *asylum*, circulit and hedgit *with* thyk breris on *every* syde betuix twa woddis *within* þe said toun. And schortlie throw þe generall proclamationoun mony and diuers^s cumpanyes of pepill liand þairabout, *rycht* desyrus of new 30
 changis, fremen and *seruandis* but ony difference fied to þe said refuge. This wes þe first way þat made þe ciete of rome strang and pussant be multitude of pepill. romulus, na thing penitent of 35
 haisty mvnitiooun and grete novmer of pepill Rysing to his new ciete, chesit ane hundredth men of maist wisdome and age to be senatouris, to þat fyne þat his new ciete *mycht* ryse equalie in wisdome and

The caus of þis nowmer of senatouris was, þat he thocht þe same sufficient (as he belevit) to decide all difficulte of quhatsumeuer materis mycht occur to his pepil, or ellis becaus he could nocht fynd in that tyme ma persouns wourthy to reioisþ þe said auctorite. Thir senatouris war callit Patres, þat Is to say, þe faderis of the toun, be resoun of þare reuerence and honoure, and þe barnis discending of þare blude war callit patricii.

How the romanis send þare legatis, desiring affinite (17).
 and mariage of þare nychtbouris; of þe solemne
 10 play Institute be Romulus, and how he revist þe madynnys & virginis of his nychtbouris; of þe weris rising þarethrow, & of his sindri victoryis.
 Ca. iiiij.

(IX) Now was þe pepill and power of Rome sa strang in euery sorte, þat It was equale in glore of armes to ony toun
 15 approcheand; ȝit þe multitude of pepill þareof mycht nocht endure abone þe age of man, ffor þai had nothir¹ barnis, nor ȝit had mariage of þare nychtbouris to multiply þare successiouon. Than Romulus, be counsell of þe agit faderis, send legatis to his nychtbouris, desiring to haue societe & mariage of þame to
 20 his new pepill, And praying þame to contempe² nocht his desiris, sen citeis (as euery vthir thinges) Rysis of small begynnyng. Attoure þai haue conquest grete Riches & renoun daly³ sen

pussance. The caus of þis nowmer of senatouris wes þat he thocht þe same sufficience (as he belevit) to decide all difficulte Of quhat
 25 sumeuer materis mycht occurre to his pepill, Or ellis becaus he culd nocht fynd in þat tyme may personis worthy to reioisþ þe said autorite, thir senatours wer callit patres, þat Is to say, þe faderis of þe toun, be resoun of þair Reuerance and honour, and þe barnis discending of þair blud war callit patricij.

¹ nowthir.

² contemne.

³ dailie.

þe goddis began to supporte þame be þare awne vertew, throw quhilk þare nycþbouris mycht sufficientlie vndirstand, þat nowthir vertew nor favour of goddis apperit to fail to Romanis In tymes following. fforthir, sen þare nycþbouris war bot men, prayit þame to disdenze noct¹ to haue societe & com- 5 mixtioun of blude with pepill als gude as þame self. This legacioun was contempnit and evil herd in euery partis, for all pepil approcheand towart þame noct¹ onely¹ refusit to haue confederacioun or alliance with romanis, bot als dred þat pis new ciete, Rysing haistelie within the myddis of þare rowmes, 10 be multitude and confluence of pepil suld finalie succede to þe grete damage baith of þame self and þare posterite. The legatis returnit *with* repulß to Rome, estir that sindri pepill had demandit þame, to quhat purpois² or fyne Romulus proclamit ane generale refuge to wemen ³alßwele as to men, 15 thinkand þarefore þe wemen (quhilk war fled to þe said refuge)

(18). mycht be sufficient enewch² for his societe. *The romanis war sa hie commovit at pis repulß, þat but ony dout þai had rvn all to harnes, to haue bene revengit in maist furie on þare nycþbouris, gif Romulus had bene Respondent to þare vndantit 20 furie.³ Nocþþeles Romulus, to fynd ane tyme and place mare ganand to satisfy⁴ þare desiris, dissimulit þe Indignacioun of his mynde, And be his crafty Industry proclamyt ane solemayne⁵ play, callit in þai dayis consualia, quhilkis war dedicate In honoure of Neptunus chevelrier. Sone estir, he commandit 25 generall edictis & proclamacioun to be maid in all partis, to aduertiß⁶ his nycþbouris þareof. The romanis dressit furth þis play In the maist solemayne⁵ maner þai culd or mycht, to mak It þe more sichty and glorius to the pepill. Mony vncouth and strange pepill assemblit to þis conuencioun, Na les desirus⁷ 30 to vesy pis new toun þan to se þis play, especialie þe pepill quhilkis war nerrest nycþbouris, as Cenyanis custumanis &

¹ only.

²—³ *Strangely transposed in B., thus, “quhilkis war fled to þe said refuge | mycht þairfor þe wemen als weill as to men thankand | be sufficient aneuch.”*

³ purpois. ⁴ satisfy. ⁵ solemne. ⁶ aduertice. ⁷ desirus.

antempnatis; And beside þir convenit ane huge nowmer of p. 20.
 Sabinis with þare wyiffis, barnis, & *servandis*, quhilks war all
 plesandlie lugit and Intertenit within þe said tovne. Thir
 pepill, eftir þai had vesyt the situacioun, wallis, and policyis¹
 5 of this new toun, had grete admiracioun þat þe romanis war
 cummyn sa haistelie to grete pussance. At last, quhen þe
 houre of play was cummyn, and þe pepil maist ernistlie gevand
 þare ene to þe contemplacioun thareof, raiß ane suddane effray
 be slicht & crafty Industry. Incontinent, be sound of trumpett
 10 (as was devisit), all þe young men of þe toun, armit in fere of
 were, Ran throw þe stretis, Revisand the virginis and madynnys
 þat come to þis play. The maist parte of þame be chance
 fell in pray to þare takaris; Ilk man reiosit² hir þat he gatt;
 vtheris of maist excellent and passing bewtie war deliverit to
 15 þe maist nobil and principal faderis of þe ciete. It is said
 þat þare was ane lusty virgine³ (quhais bewtie was superlative
 abone all þe laif) revest at þis tyme be þe garde of ane capitane
 namyt Thalasso, And quhen þis gard was demandit be sindri
 persouns, quhom to þai wold haue þis virgine,⁴ þai answerit
 20 ay, "to Thalasso." And þarefore It come in vse mony ȝeris
 eftir, þat þe pepill cryit ay, "Thalasso" at euery feist and
 solempnite of new mariage. quhen þe play was⁵ Interruppit
 be þis vncouth effray, all þe parentis of þir revist virginis⁶ fled
 with drery contenance out of *Rome, Sum tymes accusand (19).
 25 þe romanis for breking of þare alliance and violacioun of þare
 hospitalite, And sum tymes makand þare Invocatioun to þe
 goddis, to quhais solempne feistis and playis þai, cummand
 vnder assurance and faith, war tressonably⁷ dissauit. Attoure,
 þir revist virginis had na leſs Indignacioun in þare myndis
 30 for þe offence committit aganis þame þan had þare sorou-
 ffull parentis, | for þai war all disparit but ony esperance of p. 21.
 relefe. Nochtþeles, Romulus vesyt þame with consolacion,
 Saying þe offence maid aganis þame procedit only be proude
 arrogance of þare parentis, Sen þai denyit to haue ony societe

¹ p[o]lecijs.³ virgen.⁵ wes, B.; war, A.⁷ tresonabillie.² reiosing.⁴ wrygyn.⁶ wrygnis.

or mariage with his pepill. *Nochtþeles*, as þe chance succedit, he thocht þai had na occasioun to lament, sen þai mycht leif in matrymony, and be participant with all richeß and feliciteis þat mycht succede to þare husband & ciete foresaid, Reiosand with þe plesoure of þare barnis, to quhilk na thing in erde 5 mycht be comparit; Providing so þai wald soft þe Indignacioun of þare myndis, And gif þare lufe and kyndnes to þe men þat has won þare bodyis be gude aventure, sen oft tymes Is sene grete kyndenes and amyte follow estir Iniuris. Attoure, þai suld fynd þare husbandis þe mare luffand¹ to þame in tymes cuming, 10 þat sic offence has afore procedit; ffor þare husbandis wald gif þare vter besines, estir þat þai haue done þare devore & chargis pertenand to mariage, to recovir baith þe favour of þare freyndis and cuntre. Attoure, to meiß þe haterent of þir revist virginis, come plesandlie þare new luffaris, Saying 15 with amiabil countenance, þe offence done aganis þame procedit be na Invy nor haterent, bot alanelry be desire of lufe; quhilkis wourd² ar richt profittable & effectuus to move þe Ininge of women to pleser.³ (X) Now was þe Ire and Indignacioun of þir revist women in sum parte mesit; *Nochtþeles* 20 þare parentis and tendir freyndis, clothit in vile and funeral habit, movit all þe cieteis and tovnis adiacent with maist pietuous⁴ and dolorus⁵ lament of teres; And nocht content to sitt with þis Importabil outrage, þai convenit out of all partis and send þare legatis to Tatius king of sabinis (for his 25 renoun⁶ was grete in þai boundis) to assist þame for punycon p. 22. of þir tressonabil offendis. And nocht alanelry | war þe Sabinis at þis assemblance, bot als war with þame thre sindri vthir (20). pepill, *namyt as afore Cenyanis, Crustumanis, and antemnatis, for this Iniure was equaly done vnto þame all. And 30 becauß tatius and þe sabinis war nocht sa fervent to punyß⁷ þir Iniuris as þe dede requirit, Thir thre vthir pepill afore rehersit made þame all atanis to Invade the romanis. And zit þe Crustumanis & antemnatis had nocht sa Impetuus and

¹ lufeand.² wurdis.³ plesour.⁴ petuous.⁵ dolorus.⁶ renone.⁷ pvnice.

brym haterent (as þe Cenijnanis had) to revenge this offence, And þarefore þe foresaidis Cenijnanis, Impatient of more delay, come but ony supporte of þare nychtbouris with suddane In-
 5 cursioun in þe romane landis. Nochtþeles, Romulus met þame quhare þai war skatterit at þare spuleȝe and direptioun of þe cuntry, And be small skarmussing¹ gart þame haue knaulage, þat Ire is vane but strenth. In þis conflict þe Cenynanis war vincust, and þare king Acron chasit and put to flicht, On quham Romulus followit sa fereslie, þat he spuleȝit him baith
 10 of his riche armoure and life attanis, And within þe effray of his slauchter come with suddane Irruption on his toun,² and tuke þe samyn with small contradicition; Syne with his victoriis armye returnit to rome, Na leſs vailȝeant and magnificent prince³ than gloriouſ scheware⁴ of his dedis. Romulus eftir þis Victorie
 15 collectit the riche armour⁵ and spuleȝe of King Acron in ane courtlie veschell namyt feretrum, and ascendit with þe said spuleȝe in the toure of capitoll, And quhen he had hung vp
 þe said spuleȝe⁶ and armoure apoun ane auld aik, quhilk was haldin in thay dayis in grete veneracioun amang þe hirdis of
 20 þat regioun, he compasit ane certane boundis, In þe quhilk he promittit to edifie ane tempil In þe honoure of Jupiter, and decorit þis god with new surname, Saying “O Jupiter feretri,
 I King | Romulus, triumphand here with victorie abone myne p. 23.
 Inemyis, offeris now þir solempne spuleȝeis & armour to þi
 25 honoure and loving, And dedicatis here ane tempill to þe, in þe samyn boundis quhilkis I haue latelie compasit in my mynde, To þat fyne þat all my posterite and kingis eftir me succeeding, in exampill and Imitacioun of me, sall offer perpetualie in þis tempill þe riche spuleȝeis of kingis and dukis
 30 vincust be þame in bataill.” This was þe begynnyng of þe first tempill þat was dedicate in Rome. sa plesit þe goddis þat nouther was the behecht of Romulus, þe first⁷ beginnare of þis tempill, in vane, be quhilkis his pos*terite was thrillit (21). to offer⁸ in It þe spuleȝeis of þare vincust Inemyis; Nor zit

¹ scarmusching.³ prence.⁵ army, *A.*⁷ frist.² ton.⁴ schawar.⁶ saidis spulȝeis.⁸ offare.

was þe renoun þareof oure commoun or Vulgare, Howbeit his vote succedit to þe pepill; as he desirit, ffor amang sa mony þeris and batellis following (sa seildin¹ was þe glore of þat honoure) twa spulȝeis of vincust pepill eftir Romulus alanelie war offerit in þe said tempill. (XI) quhill sic thingis was done 5
 be romanis, þe antempnatis rasit þare army in maist werelie ordinance, and made ane suddane Incursioun in þe romane landis, specialy in sic partis quhare maist desertis and wildernes occurrit. Aganis quham was send haistelie out of Rome ane legioun of feirȝ pepill, and opprest þame with small difficulte, 10
 quhare þai war cassin but array at þare spuleȝe, and tuke þare toun. Than Hirsilia, þe spous of Romulus, at þe reueist of þir revist ladyis, past to hir said husband (þan reiosing with doubill² victoryis abone his Inemyis), and prayit him to perdoun & forȝeif þare parentis, and ressaue þame within his ciete; ffor 15
 be concorde his pepill mycht sone Incresȝ in grete pussance. Thir desiris war plesandlie grantit. Romulus eftir þis victorie displayit his baner aganis þe Crustumanis, quhilkis on þe samyn maner war Invading þe Romane landis; And becauȝ þare curage was dei[e]ckit be recent discomfitoure fallin to þare freyndis 20

p. 24. afore rehersit, ³þai war the | sonar vincust. quhen thir thre pepill war dantit in þis maner,³ Romulus send new colonyis out of rome to Inhabit the townis of thir vincust pepil. Mony men war fund at þis tyme in rome quhilkis gaif þare names in writt, and war content to be transportit to þe townis of Crustumanis for þe grete fertilite of þare landis. Than mony of þe parentis and freyndis of þir revist virginis left þare native landis and townis, and come to remane & duell in Rome. 25

¹ seyndill.

² duble.

³—³ om.

How þe sabynis Invadit þe romanis with grete (22).
 slichtis, and how þai tuke the toure of Capitoll,
 & slew Tarpea, the dochter of spureus Tarpeyus
 capitane þareof. Off þe scharpe weris con-
 5 tinewyng betuix Romanis & Sabinis, & how þai
 war aggredit finalie be Interventioun of sabyne
 wemen.
 Ca. v°.

The last bataill þat Romulus had aganis his nyȝtbouris,
 for revessing of þir virginis afore rehersit, was aganis þe
 10 Sabinis, quihilk batall was in sa fer mare cruell þan ony of
 þe batellis precedent, þat It was nocht led be avarice and
 haterent, bot with sic Ingyne and craft of chevelrie, þat þai
 denuncit na were to romanis quhil þai war cummyn with
 arrayit bataill in þare landis. Attoure, þai supportit þare
 15 prudence be subtell & tressonabil slichtis, In þis maner.
 Spureus tarpeyus was capitane of þe Capitoll, quhais dochter
 tarpea¹ was corruppit be Tacius king of Sabinis with ane
 sovme of gold to ressaue ane buschment of Sabinis armit in
 þare best awise within þe said toure of Capitoll. This
 20 tarpea happynnyt be aventure to pas furth of þe toure² fore-
 said in ane solemayne day, to bring wattir to ane sacrifice,
 And in þe menetyme þe Sabinis (as scho promittit) gat
 entreß in þe said toure, and slew hir cruelly to hir rewarde, p. 25.
 that þis castell suld appere tane erare be violence þan ony
 25 tressoun; Or ellis to gif ane notabil exemplill in tymes cum-
 yng þat nowthir faith band nor promiss³ suld be observeate
 to ane tratoure. Vtheris allegis þat þe Sabinis had goldin
 brochis of grete wecht apoun þare left arme, with mony
 30 goldin ringis sett with precius stanis, and promittit to gif to
 þis madin Tarpea all þe riches on þare left armes, gif scho
 wald rander to þame þe castell; And quhen þai war ressauit
 in þe samyn, to fulfil þare promiss³ þai kest at hir al þare

¹ torpea, A.

² toure of capitoll.

³ promess.

targis quhilkis þai bure on þare left armes, and smorit hir
 (23). þarewith. Vtheris allegis þat quhen * scho promittit to rander
 to þame þe said toun,¹ Scho desirit be hir condicioun to
 haue nocht bot þare targis, to þat purpois þat þai mycht
 haue bene þe more facill pray to romanis, And becaus þai 5
 fand hir fraudefull þai slew hir be hir awne tressoun. (XII)
 All wayis þe sabynis kepit þe toure of capitoll, And on þe
 nixt day the Oist of romanis stude arrayit betuix mont palen-
 tyne and mont Capitolyne; and na sonare war þir sabinis
 cummyn with arrayit batall to þe planis, bot alsone war þe 10
 romanis arrayit on þe hill fornence þame, rageand in maist
 haterent be desire to recouer þare toure fra handis of sabinis.
 Baith þe princis² of þare armyis war richt desirus to haue
 bataill. Metius Cursius was gouernoure of þe sabinis, and
 hostius hostilius gouernoure of romanis. This hostilius be 15
 feirþ curage of³ singulare manhede debatit þe romane armye
 in ane maist doutsum & dangerus place, and was finalie
 slane; throw quhais slauchter þe romanis began to fle & war
 drevin with continuall chace, quhil þai come to þe anciant
 portis of þe palice. Romulus, drevin abak on þis maner be 20
 preis of discomfist and fleand pepill, rasit vp his armoure to
 p. 26. þe hevin, & said; "O Iupiter,⁴ þow | knawis how I, be augurie
 and divinacioun of þi foulis, began here in mont palantyne
 the first foundament of Rome. The Sabinis has tane my
 castell be tressoun, And Intendis (quhen þai haue conquest 25
 þis vale) to procede forthir on ws in oure maist Inwart
 boundis. Bot, O þow Iupiter, the fader of goddis and men,
 repreß þe furye of our Inemyis, and remove þis shameful
 terroure of fleing fra my pepill. And here I avow to dedi-
 cate ane tempill to þe, Iupiter Stator, to remane in memorie 30
 to oure posterite þat my citee was sauffit⁵ be þi helpe."
 quhen he had said thir wourdis (as his prayeris had bene
 weil herde with Iupiter) he cryit with schil voce, "O
 Romanis, þe maist hie, maist riche and pussant Iupiter com-
 mandis ȝow to resist ȝoure Inemyis, and to renewe batall." 35

¹ toure.² prencis.³ and.⁴ Iubiter.⁵ sauffit.

Incontinent all þe army of romanis stude but ony fleing, as þai had bene commandit be sum hevinlie voce, And Romulus went haistelie to þe formest bront¹ of the army to bring þame to new arraye. In þe menetyme, metius cursius, quhilk 5 had² latelie Ischit * fra þe capitoll, eftir þat he had³ drevin (24). and put þe romanis ane⁴ grete space abak, come cryand nocht fer fra þe portis of þe palice: "Now we haue vincust þe fals and tressonabil lugearis, and ourethrawin oure effemynate Inemyis. now may oure febil⁵ Invasouris vnderstand, 10 how brade defference is betuix fechting *with* forcy campions and revissing of febill⁵ virginis." quhil metius was pransand throw þe feild with þir and siclike gloriis wourdis, Romulus come on him haistelie with ane knott of feirþ knichtis. This metius facth⁶ þis tyme in ane plane & evin place, throw 15 quhilk þir feirþ knichtis þan being *with* Romulus mycht Inavid him þe bettir on euery side, And þarefore he was put þe more haistelie to flicht. On quham the ro[manis followit in grete hatrent, and tuke sic curage be audicite and hortatioun of romulus þat þai put mony in þe sabynis to discomfitour. 20 Metius, abasit be noyþ of þe romane hoist fast following on his bak, wes brocht out of þe feild on ane astonist⁷ horþ to ane marres. The residew of sabynis, traistint þair prince slane, gaif bakkis, bot metius be haisty cuming of freindis to his support wes sauffit; & nochtwithstanding þis victorie, þe 25 sabynis & romanis invadit þpir with new battall in þe vaill afore rehersit⁸ betuix mont capitolyne and mont palentyne, bot þe romanis apperit to haue þe avantage. (XIII) Incontinent all the sabyne ladyis (quhais revising wes þe onlie occasioun | of þis weris) come in dolorus array, soupit in 30 sorrow, with þair hare fallin oure þair eyne, and but ony feir of deith ruschit in betuix baith þe armyis, nochtwithstanding þe arrowis and dartis⁹ fleand in maner of haill on euery side; & be preiþ of þair thortwart cuming devidit & put sindry þe armit¹⁰ oistis, severing þair husbandis fra þair faderis, &

Boynndlie
MS., p.
26.

Boynndlie
MS., p.
27.

¹ brount.

³ was, *A.*

⁵ fabill.

⁷ astorist, *MS.*

⁹ daritis, *MS.*

² wes.

⁴ a.

⁶ faucht.

⁸ rechersit, *MS.*

¹⁰ arrowit, *MS.*

prayit þaim (sen þai wer alliat be mariage & commixtioun of blude)¹ . . and slauchter, for þai wer faderis & maichis, sonis & nevois. "gif ȝe be penitent & forthinkis þe affinite new contrakkit amang ȝow" (said þir sabynis) "turne all ȝour Ire & Indignatioun on ws. we ar þe onlie cauȝt of ȝour battall. we are þe onlie occasioun of þis lamentabill slauchter & woundis continewing betuix ȝow, our husbandis & faderis. It wer better to ws to de now heir amang ȝour handis þan to leif wedois, or be desolate of athir of ȝow." þis wncouth sic[ht] movit noct̄ allanerlie þe commonis bot als þe nobillis of bait̄ þe armes with sa petuus commiseratioun, þat bait̄ þe hostis wer strikin² dvm, but ony noyȝ or quhispering ester following. þan þe capitanis of athir side began to treit concord, & noct̄ allanerlie maid gud peace, bot als maid ane ciete of two, that is to say, bait̄ þe sabynis and romanis sall leif in tymes cuming in rome vndir ane empire and kingdome. be þis concord þe ciete of rome wes dowblit bait̄ in power and pepill; þit þe romanis, to mak þaim sum part different fra þe sabynis, namit þaim self quiritis, þat is to say, beraris of dartis. in remenbrence of þe battall, þe marreȝ (quhare metius cursius eschapit with his horȝ, eschewing þe fure of romanis) wes callit þe loch of Cursius.

How Romulus diuidit his realme in courtis and centuris; how tacius king of sabynis wes slane be laurentinis³ for denying of Iustice; how romulus be craft of chevelry discomfist þe fyddennatis, & wan þair toun fidena be suddand Irruptionioun.

Ca. vj.

Boyndlie MS., p. 28. | Estir this sorowfull battall followit haistelie maist plesand concord, throw quhilk þe sabyne ladyis wer mair tenderlie

¹ No break in MS.

² stirkin, MS.

³ laurentius, MS.

tretit with þair husbandis and parentis þan afore, and specialie be romulus. sone *eftir* romulus dividit his pepill in sindry courtis & tribus, & namit Ilk court with þe surname¹ of ane of þir sabyne ladyis, specialie of sic wemen as 5 wer of maist nobill lynage and blud; and ȝit it is [nocht] schawin of quhat surname¹ þir ladyis war quhilkis gaif names to þair courtis, nor ȝit schawin gif þair wes mair nowmer of þame þan thretty, or gif þai wer chosyn for þe reuerence of þair age or dignite, or gif þai wer chosin allanerlie be cavell 10 to gif names to þe said thretty courtis. þe samyn tyme wes ordanit þe centuryes of horsmen in rome. þe] first centurie p. 27. of þir horßmen war namyt Ramnenses fra Romulus; The secund Ticienses fra tacius; and þe thrid war namyt luceres, of quhilk þe cauß and resoun is vncertane. The kingdome 15 of rome stude mony þeris estir nocht onelie commoun to romanis and sabinis, bot als stude vndir þe sikkir pece & concorde of two kingis, þat is to say the king of romanis and þe king of sabynis. (XIV) It happynt þat *wit*in schort tyme estir, certane freyndis and kynnymen of king Tacius 20 hurte and straik cruelly þe legatis of laurentinis, and quhen þe laurentinis complenit to Tacius of þir² Iniuris done to þir oratouris & legatis in violacioun of þe law of pepill, The said Tacius, blyndit *wit* favoure and reueist³ of * his freindis (25). denyit Iustice to þe laurentinis; throw quhilk he gaif occa- 25 sioun to þir laurentinis to Inavid him with þe samyn punycioun þat his freyndis Iustlie deseruit. Schort dayis following king Tacius past to lavyne to haue maid ane solempne sacrifice in þe⁴ honoure of his goddis, quhare he be suddane effray devisit for þe nanys was slane. It is said 30 þat Romulus was nocht sa commovit (as þe cryme requirit) at þis slauchter, owtir becaus the empire of kingdomes is nocht sociabil nor pacient of fallowschip, Or ellis he thocht king Tacius for þe repulß of Iustice deseruit weil his deith. In quhatsumeuir way It was, treuth Is þat Romulus persewit 35 nocht þe slaaris of Tacius with displeßer;⁵ ȝit þat þe

¹ surance, *MS.*² hie.³ request.⁴ his, *A.*⁵ displesir.

slaunchter of tacius, & þe offence maid to þir legatis, mycht
 be purgit be dew sacrifice, he renewit pece betuix lavyne &
 Rome, quhilk mony ȝeris eftir continewit, howbeit the samyn
 was nocht traistit. Eftir þis followit ane vthir batall be nere
 nychtbouris almaist within þe portis of rome. The fydenatis, 5
 seand þe romanis Increß beside þame with oure grete domin-
 ioun & richeß, thoc̄t na thing sa gude as to Invaid þame
 afore þai come to sic felicite as haistelie apperit to þame,
 p. 28. and send ane army of ferß & rank weremen | with haisty
 Incursioun in þe romane landis; and be þe samyn waistit 10
 and heryit all þe boundis of romanis betuix fidena and
 Rome. And becaus þe Rive of tyber severit þame fra þe
 romane landis on þare richt handis, þai turnit þame on þare
 wrang¹ handis, and ran with feirß Incursiouns throw þe
 samyn, to þe huge terroure and spuleye of þe pepill þareof. 15
 The noyis² & rumoure of þir Incursiouns was brocht haistelie
 to rome. Romulus seing þis outrage mycht suffir na delatioun
 (sen It was sa nere approcheand to þe wallis and portis of
 þe town) Rasit his army and sat doun with his tentis within
 j^m paß to fidena. and first he left be craft of chevelrie ane 20
 buschment of weremen to kepe þe saidis tentis. he went
 fordwart with þe residew of his armye, and in þe mene tyme
 he hid ane vthir buschment of his weremen, in ane myrk
 and obscure place amang þe scroggis of thik rammell of þe
 wod approcheand, þat þai mycht ly in wate to Invaid þare 25
 (26). Inemyis quhen þai saw occasioun. *Sic thingis done with
 maist prudence, Romulus went fordwart with þe remanent
 army, baith on fute & horß, and come with sic fere and
 mynassing to þe portis of fidena, þat he gaif occasioun to þe
 cieteȝanis þareof to Ische out of þe toun. Nochtþeles, þe 30
 cumpany of horßmen þat come with romulus was Impedi-
 ment, þat he mycht nocht dissimill his fleing sa weil as he
 desirit. At last quhen Romulus apperit doutsum in his
 mynde quhidder he wald fie or persevere in obstinate bar-
 gane,³ he happynnyt to paß sum part bakwart with his 35

¹ warn.

² noyß.

³ bergen.

astonist cumpany of horßmen, and in þe mene tyme þe
 cietežanis Ischit all atanis out of þare portis, and followit
 with grete furie on þe romanis, quhil þai war drevin to þe
 samyn place quhare þe buschement was laid in wate, hid
 5 amang þe rammell as said Is. Incontinent þe buschment |
 foresaide come thortoure þare gate to gif þame batall And in p. 29.
 þe sam¹ tyme þe buschement of romanis, quhilkis war left
 with þe tentis and palȝouns,² began to mustour and display
 þare banaris, Throw quhilk þe fidenatis war sa astonist, þat or
 10 romulus & his folkis mycht turn þare facis [fra þair fleing] al
 þe fidenatis war fleand with maist diligence to þe toun: bot
 þit þai mycht nocth deliver þame self fra þe danger of þare
 Inemyis, for Romulus followit sa fast with ythand slauchter on
 þare bakkis, þat he come with suddane Irruptioun within þe
 15 tovn or þe citežanis þareof mycht clois þe portis.

* How þe Veanis war discomfist, & tuke þareſtir (27).
 j^o³ þeris pece with romanis; Of þe deith &
 louing of romulus; how Iulius proculius mesit
 þe Indignacioun of þe commounis anentis⁴ þe
 20 faderis & senatouris of rome, And how euery
 ane of þe said faderis rang þare courſ about.

Ca. vij.

(XV) The Veanis, provokit to hie displeſer⁵ for þe harmes
 and grete infeliciteis latelie fallin to þe fidenatis, þare tendir
 freyndis and nychtbouris, (for baith þe Veanis & fidenatis war
 25 discendent of the lynnage of þe Etruschis) come with terribil
 and suddane Incursioun in þe romane landis, Invading þe samyn
 mare be rubbery þan ony ordoure of chevelrie, becaus þai
 thocht þe romanis war Invasouris of þare nychtbouris but ony

¹ meyne. ² palȝonis. ³ ane hundredth. ⁴ fornence. ⁵ displesere.

ressoun or richt of armes. And sa þir Veanis, but ony stenting of palȝouns in the campis, and noct abiding þe cuming of þare Inemyis, Returnyt *with* ane huge pray of men and gudis to þare toun of Veos. On þe tothir side Romulus come with ane haisty armye (out of þe toun) and becaus he fand noct his 5 Inemyis afore him in þe campis, he determit to seik þame with extreme Ieperdy¹ and chance of armes; Syne past oure tyber. The Veanis, aduertist of his ordinance afore he war campit or cummyn to þare toun, Ischit out of all partis, *with* purpois to debate þare actioun and mater erare be chance 10

p. 30. of batell þan to be Inclusit, havand na | esperance of debate bot onlie in þe mvnicioune of þare wallis. Romulus ȝit havand na supporte, bot alanerly of þe agit and maist exercit campions of Rome, put þame to flicht and persewit þame estir þis discomfitoure, quhil þai war ressett within the portis and wallis of 15 þare toun. And becaus þare toun was strang, als weill be wallis (28). as situacion þareof, he persewit þe samyn na *forther. Syne in his returnyng in ² rome, he waistit and spuleȝet all the landis of Veanis, mare to revenge the haitrent of his mynde þan ony desire of pray. The Veanis, brokin na les with þir harmes 20 þan greter³ affliction had fallin⁴ to þame, send þare oratouris to rome desiring pece for ane hundredth ȝeris. Romulus, to repreß þare Insolence in tymes cuming, confiskit⁵ ane large parte of þare landis, & gaif þame pece for ane hundredth ȝeris. Thir war þe nobill and Illustir dedis of Romulus during his 25 empire baith in were & pece, Off quhilkis þare may na thingis be found vnsemand to his divyne lynnage nor to his Immortalite estir deith. Was noct his curage gevin to recovir his realme, and to restore his gudeschir Munitor to his kyndelie heretage? Was noct his mynde gevin to found and big ane 30 nobill ciete, & to stabil the samyn alþ wele in pece as were? ffor certane þis town was⁶ garnist with sic pussance be him þat It rang in sikkir pece fourty ȝeris ester his deith; howbeit he was mare pleasant and gracious to þe commounis þan to þe

¹ Ieoperdy.

² to.

³ gretare.

⁴ succedit.

⁵ confiscate.

⁶ war, *A.*; wes, *B.*

nobilis of þe towne, And abone all vtheris he was maist acceptabill and belouit¹ with his weremen. He had daly² four hundreth men of armes to þe defence of his body, als weill in tyme of were as pece. (XVI) Romulus, eftir þir and mony vthir his Immortale dedis, Come to the pule of Caprea to make ane orisoun | to þe faderis, and to haue sene quhat p. 31. nowmer of pepill was þan present in his new toun; quhen suddanlie raiſ ane horribill tempest with huge flambis³ and noysis of thunder, and made this nobil prince sa Invisibill 10 with thik schoure of wete and myst, that he was haistelie revist out of sicht & nevir efter sene in to þis erde. The pepill was astonist be þis vncouth affray;⁴ At last quhen þare dredour was in sum parte mesit, and þe day turnit to maist serenite, Thay fand the king absent; and howbeit þai gaif 15 credence to the faderis (quhilkis stude nerrest him for þe tyme) saying that he was Revist to þe hevin be ane tempestuous⁵ cloude, þit þai war strikkin with sic dredoure of desolacioun for wanting of þare nobill prince, þat þai stude with grete silence certane houris eftir but ony motion or noysis; 20 quhil at last ane certane of þame began to adore þe said Romulus as ane god & *son of ane god. And Incontinent (29). all þe remanent pepil salust him as king and fader of þe romane ciete, Besekand him to stand sa propitiant, þat þai his posterite and lynage mycht regnne in gude felicite and pece. 25 Sum men sais quietlie þat Romulus was revin sindri be þe faderis in þis tempestuos⁶ hour. This opinioun is obscure, bot þe first be present dredoure⁶ of þe pepill and vncouth aventure falling to þe said Romulus Is mare authorist, And be counsell of ane prudent man namyt proculus It gat þe 30 mare creditt. ffor þis proculus, seand þe pepill full of maist drery sollicitude for the lufe⁷ and affeccioun þat þai⁸ had to Romulus, And richt commovit with extreme haterent againis the faderis for þe suspiciooun of his deith, past to þe said pepill with maist grauite and said In þis maner, "Undirstand,

¹ luffit.² daylie.³ flammis.⁴ effray.⁵ tempestious.⁶ dreiddoure.⁷ luffe.⁸ he, MSS.

maist prudent faderis and pepill, þat Romulus þe fader of this nobill ciete, sliding haistelie from þe hevin met me arely¹ on p. 32. þis morow. at last, seand me astonist throw | fere of his divyne maieste, and humelie praying him þat It mycht be lefull to me to contempil and behald him, 'paß' (said he) 'and schaw 5 to romanis, The goddis will þat Rome my ciete be þe hede of þe wold. Command² þame to hant and lere chevelry, þat þare posterite may persevere and continewe in þe samyn be þare Imitacioun, For na pussance in erde may resist þe romane weris.' and als sone as he had said þir wourdis, he evanist 10 hie out of my sicht." It is na litill wounder quhat haisty credence and faith was gevin to þe wourdis of þis man, for þe grete desire þat baith the small pepill and army had towart þe said Romulus was suddanlie mesit, fra þai belevit him deificate in þis wise. (XVII) quhil sic thingis war done, þe 15 faderis began to contend amang þame self be avarice for desire of þe crovne, and ȝit þir contencious raiß nocht fra euery ane of þame elike; for þare was bot few persouns havand ony prerogative to be preferrit to vthir amang sa new pepill. The contencious war onelie betuix þe twa ordouris, that is to 20 say, betuix þe Sabynis and þe romanis. þai (quhilkis war cumyn of þe Sabynis) desirit ane king to be create of þare blude, þat þai suld nocht tyne þare possessioun to regnne with equale (30). *empire with romanis; for sen þe deith of Tatius þare last king þare was nocht ane king chosin of þare lynage. On þe 25 tothir side, þe agit Romanis mycht nocht suffer ane king of vncouth blude to regnne abone þame. Thus was þe communite³ baith of sabynis and romanis dividit in sindri opinious, how beit þai war all concordant⁴ to haue ane king; for þai knewe nocht as ȝit quhat hevinlie swetenes⁵ was in liberte. The 30 faderis began to haue grete fere & dredoure in þare myndis, traisting sum extern and vncouth violence of diuerß cieteis liand p. 33. þareabout, quhilkis | war boldin with grete haterent agains þame, to rise haistelie and baith Invaid þare toun þan desolate but ane hede and þare army but ane capitane atanis. Thus þai 35

¹ airlie. ² commandand, *A.* ³ coite. ⁴ concordand. ⁵ sueitnes.

war all concluding vnder ane mynde to haue ane king, bot
 þit na man wald dedenȝe to gif consent to ane vthir, And
 þarefore þe faderis (quhilk war ane hundredh in nowmer)
 devidit þame self in ten decuris, Ilk decure contenyng ten
 5 men in nowmer, And þir ten decuris to haue the equale
 regiment and moderacioun of public empire, In sic maner
 þat ane of Ilkane¹ decure sal begyn first and regnne as king
 his courþ² about, with the samyn³ diademe, rob riall, orna-
 mentis and axis as Romulus bure in his tyme. And þe empire
 10 of þis king alanelie to endure⁴ bot five dayis, and quhen þe⁵
 five dayis war outrvn,⁶ the nixt of þare decurie⁷ sal succee-
 and sa ay furth in ordoure. This gouernance continewit ane
 15 þere estir þe deith of romulus, and was callit the Interregne,
 That is to say, þe vacance betuix the deith of ane king to þe
 electioun of ane vthir.

How Numa pompilius was chosin for his singulare (31)
 Vertew to be king of Romanis ; Of his sindri
 religiouns brocht amang the Romanis, to preserve
 þame fra sleuth and ydilnes ; how he stabillit his
 20 empire in gude pece with his nychtbouris, and of
 his loving and deith. Ca. viij.

The romanis beand gouernit in þis maner began to murmur,⁸
 saying þai war thirlit to more servitude þan afore, ane hundredh
 kingis rignand⁹ abone þame quhare þai suld haue bot ane ;
 25 and þarefore apperit þai wald suffir nane in tymes cuming to
 regnne abone þame bot ane king, and þis king to be create
 be þare onelie electioun. The faderis, herand þame mouit
 in¹⁰ sic purpoþ, thocht best to offer þe thing plesandlie to
 þe pepill, quhilk þai beleuit to tyne, & made con|corde with p. 34.

¹ Ilk. ³ same. ⁵ þir. ⁷ þat decure. ⁹ rignand.
² curþ. ⁴ indure. ⁶ outroun. ⁸ murmour. ¹⁰ to.

þame in this wise. The electioun of romane kingis shall be
gevin to þe pepill, so þat þe faderis haue als mekill power
remanand with þame self in his election as þai gaif. ffor þai
concludit, quham þe pepill made king suld be king gif þe
faderis war doaris þareof, þat Is to say, þe electioun of þe 5
king made be þe pepill suld be of nane effect bot gif þe
faderis him ratifyit and confermyt. This consuetude is ob-
serve to thir dayis; Quhen ony officis or digniteis ar desirit
on þe commyciall¹ dayis, The suffragis and votis of þe pepill
ar vncertane and of na effect quhil þe faderis afferme þe samyn 10
be þare auctorite. Sic thingis done, þe senaturis, quhilkis war
cled with dignite ryall for þe tyme, made ane orisoun afore
þe pepill (and said) "That honoure, heill & felicite may
succeede to ȝow, O romanis, create ane king, for þat is plesand
to þe faderis; & gif ȝe create ony man þat is wourthy to 15

regnne eftir Romulus, þe faderis will assist to ȝow and con-
ferme him." Thir offeris of þe faderis war plesand to þe
small pepill, and to þat fyne þat þai suld nocht appere vn-
(32). thankfull nor vincust be *þare humanite, Thay be gude avise-
ment comandit þe senaturis to decerne him to regnne quham 20
þai thocht maist expedient. (XVIII) The Iustice and relligioun
of nvma pomplilius was of singulare renovne in þir dayis. This
maist resolute & prudent man duelt in ane place callit þe
curis of Sabinis, & had, sa fer as ony creature mycht haue in
to þai dayis, full cognossance baith of divyne & humane lawis. 25
sindri belevit þat pithagoras was preceptour & auctor² of his
doctrine, for þai couth³ nocht ymagin þat ony vþir man mycht
haue sic⁴ erudicion in þai dayis. Bot þare opinoun⁵ Is
vane, ffor It was clerelie knawin þat pithagoras was mare þan
j^o⁶ ȝeris eftir þe empire of Nvma, þat is to say in þe tyme 30
of Servius tullius, & held ane scule of ȝoung children⁷ in þe
remote & last boundis of Italie, beside þe landis of metapont,
heraclea, & crotona. Attour, howbeit the said pithagoras had
p. 35. bene equale of age with Nvma, | quhat fame suld haue drawin

¹ commyciall.

² actor (!).

³ culd.

⁴ sec.

⁵ apocioun (!).

⁶ ane hundreth.

⁷ childeyne.

him out of sa remote and fer cuntre to haue cummyn amang
 þe sabynis? be quhat langage mycht he haue drawin sa mony
 ȝoung childerne¹ to desire of letteris? be quhat way or supple
 mycht ane² man haue travellit throw sa mony vncouth pepill,
 5 different fra vthir in maneris and langage? Be thir ressouns
 I can nocht afferme þat Numa was lerned³ ony maner of
 way be pithagoras, bot erare þat Numa of his awne Ingine
 temperate his liffe in Vertewe, and nocht alanelry was instruckit
 10 in strange and vncouth science, bot als in þe tetrik and
 soroufull science Vsit amang þe sabynis, Of quhilkis na kynde
 of science was mare corruppit in þis erde. The romanis, herand
 þe name of Numa pompilius rehersit afore þame, howbeit It
 apperit that all þare riches suld cum in the Sabynis handis
 gif he war king, ȝit becaus þare was nane amang þe pepill nor
 15 faderis nor citeȝanis of þe toun þat mycht prefer þame self or
 ony vthir of þare opinioun to þe said Numa, þai condiscendit
 to mak him king. Attius nauius devinoure (becaus romulus
 succedit to þe crovne of Romanis be Augurie & divinacioun
 20 of foulis) consellit Numa to explore þe myndis of þe goddis
 towart him in þe samyn maner. Sone estir Numa was brocht
 in þe toure of capitoll be þe divinour, quhilk to mak him þe
 more honorabil was maid perpetuall and public preist of sic
 honouris in tymes cummyng. And estir that Numa was brocht
 25 in þe said toure, he was sett doun be þis preist * on ane (33).
 stane fornens⁴ þe south. than þis divinoure sat doun beside
 him on his left hand with his hede coverit, havand in his
 richt hand ane crukit club but ony knott, quhilk in þai dayis
 30 was callit Lituus, Than quhen he had made his orisoun to
 þe goddis, castand his sicht to þe toun and feildis þare
 about, he dividit and cumpasit in his mynde all þe regiouns
 fra þe est to þe west, and assignit the gude & happy signis
 to þe south and þe evil signis to the north, And þan tuke
 35 ane signne or meith in his mynde als fer as his ene mycht
 suffice to behald. | Thir cerymonis beand done, this preist p. 36.
 transportit or ellis changit þe crukit staff to his left hand,

¹ childrene.² a.³ lernit.⁴ fornence.

And laid his richt hand on Numais hede, saying on this wise, "O fader Iupiter, gif It be lefull this Numa (quahais hede I twich¹ now) to regnne abone the romanis, declare þe samyn be sum evident and clere signis within þe boundis quhilkis I haue made and now compasit² in my mynde." Eftir 5 þis the preist [schew] be certane devote wourdis quhare þir signis suld be quhilkis he desirit to be schawin. And als sone as þe signis apperit, Numa was brocht doun fra þe tempill and declarit king. (XIX) Numa, succeding to þe crowne of Romanis in this maner, Set him halely be prudent 10 industrie (Sen his new ciete was onelie foundit be force and rigoure of armes) to strenth the samyn in tymes cummyng be lawis, relligioun, and gude maneris. And becaus he saw þe myndis of his pepill (sa lang as þai war hantit in rage and fury of weris) mycht nocht be softit nor temperat, Tharefore, 15 to draw þame fra exercicioun and vse of chevelrie, he biggit þe tempil of Ianus at þe fute of mont Argelet, to signify the tyme of were and pece; þat is to say, quhen þis tempill stude opin, þe ciete suld þan mak þame reddy for batell, and quhen It was closit, to signify al nyghtbouris liand þame about war 20 mesit and pecifyt but ony haterent to þe romanis. This tempil eftir the tyme of Numa was neuer closit bot twyis.³ The first was efter þe end of þe first punyk batall, quhen Titus ma[n]lius was consul. the tothir is happynnyt be favoure of goddis in oure dayis, þat we mycht se þe samyn closit eftir 25 þe actiak batall, quhen Cesar Augustus emprioure brocht al

(34). seyis and landis vnder maist ferme tranquillite & peace. * And þoche Numa, this civil and Illustar prince, closit þe portis of the tempill, and was confederate in societe and freyndschip with all his nyghtbouris, ȝit þat his pepill (quhilk afore levit 30 chaist throw fere of Inemyis and ordoure militare) suld nocht p. 37. | haue occasioun to lust and Insolence be ociosite & sleuth, quhen euery trubill and fere of extern⁴ and vncouth Inemyis war sett aside, he thocht maist proffittabil to Induce þe rude & sempill pepill in þai dayis to relligioun and dredoure of 35

¹ tuiche.

² new cumpasit.

³ twiȝ.

⁴ extreme, A.

goddis. And becaus nowthir þe veneracioun of relligioun nor
 5 ȝit þe dredoure of goddis mycht synk nor be Imprintit ony
 wayis in þe hartis of his pepill but sum new Invencioun of
 vncouth mirakill,¹ or but sic thingis (quhilkis war abone þe
 comoun and naturall operacioun of man) he feneȝeit² þat he
 had familiare cumpany on þe nyght with þe goddes Egeria,
 and be hir avise he wald institute certane divine sacrifice
³ quhilkis suld be maist acceptabil to þe goddis, and wald
 found and lymyt diuerþ preistis to bere speciall charge and
 10 cure of þir sacrifices.⁴ ȝit afore þe Institucioun of þir sacrificis
 he set him to ordoure þe ȝere; And first he dividit þe ȝere in
 xij monethis be courþ of þe mone. And becaus þe mone
 completis hir courþ euery moneth in leſ þan xxx dayis,
 Tharefore Inlakit xi⁵ dayis and vj houris to complete þe hail
 15 ȝere and courþ of þe son⁶ in þe zodiak. Nochtþeles be his
 singulare wisdome he collekit all þir od dayis togiddir and
 Interponit þame with monethis Intercalaris, Ilk xxiiij ȝeris
 anys, þat þe son⁶ come to þe samyn dayis, houris, mynutis,
 greis, and signis at þe ȝeris end as It began. Attoure, Numa
 20 schewe in his Calendar⁶ sic dayis as wer happy and sic dayis
 as war unhappy, be superstitiouн þat certane dayis mycht occur
 in quhilkis the pepill mycht gett þare erandis happily sped,⁷
 And vtheris sa mailhouris þat na felicite mycht follow be þare
 operacioun. (XX) Sic thingis done, he gaif his besines to
 25 Institute preistis to relligioun of goddis; And þoȝt he institute
 mony haly sacrifices at þis tyme, ȝit he institute þe sacrifice
 þat perþtenit to þe flamyn diall⁸ with maist soleme cerymonis. p. 38.
 And þoȝt mony persouns in his werely ciete apperit erare
 like to þe maneris of Romulus þan Numa, and reddy to
 30 chance of batall, ȝit þat þe sacrifice and soleme cerymonis
 institute be kingis suld nocth dekey⁹ nor failȝe, * he foundit (35).
 ane preist, vthir ways namyt ane flamyn, to remane with
 continuall residence in þe sacrifice of Iupiter; and to mak
 him in mare reuerence to þe pepill he cled him with riche &

¹ mirakle.³ om.⁵ sone.⁷ speid.⁹ decay.² fenȝeit.⁴ al þir od (*from below*).⁶ Kalender.⁸ diale.

riall abilȝementis,¹ þat he was wourthy to sett² in þe sadill curall.³ Attoure, he ekit vthir⁴ twa flamynis, þat ane dedicate to mars and þis vthir⁴ to Romulus quirinus, þe god and fader of romanis. He chesit als certane virginis to be profest to Vesta, goddes of chaistite.⁵ This ordoȝt of preisthede was 5 first begvn⁶ in þe ciete of Alba, nocht vncouth to þe pepill of albane nor to þare begynnaris. Attoure, to mak þir virginis þe mare contemplative with devote and continual sacrifice in þare templis, he assignit to þame certane ȝerelie rentis to be payit to þame of the commoun purþ, And causit þame for 10 þare gude life, virginite, and devote maneris to be haldin in grete veneracioun amang þe pepill. Attoure, he dedicate xij preistis namyt Salis to þe honoure of mars gradiuus, and gaif⁷ to þame abulȝementis payntit in maner of cote armouris, Com- 15 manding⁸ þame to bere abone þare cote armouris certane targis of braþ namyt Ancilia, that is to say, þe hevinlie armoure; and als commandit þat þir preistis sall pas throw þe stretis of þe toun singand melodius sangis with solemne dansing and leping. Sic thingis done, he create ane grete bischop namyt marcius, þe son of marcus, ane of þe faderis of Rome; and 20 gaif him þe keping of þe bukis In quhilkis war contenit þe cerymonis and ordoring of all þir foresaidis sacrificis, That is p. 39. to say, In quhat | tempillis, In quhat dayis, and with quhat kynde of sacrifice þare goddis suld be honorit; schawing⁹ als quhare the money¹⁰ suld be tane to sustene thir preistis and 25 divyne seruice. All þe remanent chargis, baith public and private, he submittit to þe discrecioun and wisdome of þare bischop, And commandit this bischop to be chosin of sic preeminence and wisdome, þat he mycht support þe pepill be his consultacioun quhen ony doutsum mater occurrit; and to 30 provide sic ways þat nowþir þe religious maneris quhilkis war Inducit be him suld¹¹ be troublit be negligence, nor ȝit new superstitioun brocht in abone þe samyn. And nocht alanelie

¹ abulȝementis.⁴ om.⁷ gafe.¹⁰ mony.² sit.⁵ goddis of chesite.⁸ commandand.¹¹ sud.³ curill.⁶ begoun.⁹ schewing.

sall þis bischop lere þe pepil to do þir and sic like divine seruice, bot sall lere þame als how all funerall obsequies sall be done, to meis and pecify þe offence of saulys towart þar goddis. And als þis bischop sall schaw to the pepill *for (36).

5 quhat causis þe thounder and vncouth meruellis ar send doun¹ in the erde, þat þe pepill þarethrow may accept þe gude werdis following be þe samyn, and eschew þe evill. And to draw the consatis of thingis to cum fra þe myndis of goddis, he dedicate ane templ in mont Aventyne to Iupiter

10 Eliseus, to explore the mynde of þe said Iupiter be augurie and divinacioun of foulis. (XXI) Thus war the haill pepil drawin fra cruelte and violence of armes to sum morall exercicioun, throw quhilk þare continuall exercitioun of divine seruice (be quhilkis þe favoure of goddis apperit to þame sa

15 supportabill and helpie in all thare besines) fillit all þare myndis with sic religioun & piete, þat faith and swering gouernit þe ciete be onelie dredoure of the lawis and puny- cioun following þarapoun. And quhen the cietejanis of þis new ciete had cassin þame to counterfet² and follow þe maneris

20 of þis maist haly prince, All þe pepill liand about þame, quhilkis before belevit þis ciete rising in þe myndis of þame noct to seik pece of al pepill but onely to Invaid þare nychtbouris with þe continuall armeis,³ war brocht to sic reuerence and dred- doure of þe goddis, þat þai thocht nathing mare vñlesum þan to

25 troubil sa haly & religious pepill, perseverant (as apperit) in continual veneracioun of þe goddis. In þis ciete was ane wod, and throw þe myndis of It ran ane burne with continuall streme of wattir, quhilk descendit⁴ fra ane myrk and obscure fountane⁵ within ane den. And becaus Numa frequentit oft

30 tymes in þis wod, solitare and but ony cumpany, to haue commonyng with Egera þe goddes afore namyt, he dedicate þis wode and fontane to þe musis, to signify that þe secrete counsel of þe goddis was haldin in þe samyn place with Egera his spos & wyfe. And þocht he consecrate þis wod

35 to þe musis, ȝit he commandit þat þe sacrifice þareof suld be

p. 40.

¹ done.² counterfute.³ armyes.⁴ desendit.⁵ fontane.

made alanelry to þe goddes faith; and to do þis sacrifice he ordanit twa preistis to be caryit¹ in ane chariot² maid in maner of ane pend abone þare hede, and þare handis to be cled oure all partis except þe poynt of þare fingeris, be quhilkis þai suld do þare sacrifice, To signifie þat howbeit 5 faith be hid and bot ony evident demonstracions, ȝit It suld be defendit. he commandit als þat ane sate suld be dedicate to þe goddes faith on þe richt side of þis wod. Attoure, he (37). dedicate mony vthir sacrificis with templis and placis con*venient quhare þe samyn suld be done, quhilkis are callit be þe bischoppis Argeos. ȝit amang all his memoriall werkis, ane thing was maist apprisit, þat in all þe dayis and ȝeris of his empire he was sett na les to defend pece þan to defend his realme. Thus we haue sene þe liue³ & maneris of twa kingis, Ilkane of sindri governance; That ane ekit his realme and 15 commounweill be force and rigoure of armes, and þis vthir wisdome and pece; þat ane rang xxxvij ȝeris, & þis vthir xliij ȝeris abone þe romanis.⁴

p. 41. How tullus hostilius was made king | of romanis; of þe occasioun of weris betuix þe romanis and 20 Albanis; how þe albanis estir þe deith of þare king Cayus Civilius chesit metius sufficius to be dictatour, and of þe commonyng and contract made betuix him and tullius. Ca. ix.

(XXII) Be deith of Numa the croun returnit as afore to þe 25 Inter-Regnne. Efter þis the pepill chesit tullius hostilius to be king. he was nevo to þe samyn hostilius þat led þe batall sa vailȝeantlie in þe law vnder mont Capotoll

¹ careit.

² cheriot.

³ life.

⁴ A later hand has added, Than the ciete was strengthned and skilled baith in the arts of pece & weir. (not in B.)

againis þe sabinis, & quhen þe pepill had chesit him king the faderis confermit him, as It was accustumyt.¹ This prince was nocht alanelrie repugnant² to þe religious maneris of Numa his antecessoure, bot was als of mare feirþ curage þan romulus.

5 Attouore, his flurisant ȝouth, his mychty strenth of body, the glore of his vailȝeant antecessouris, enforcit him to wirk sum notabil and marciall vassalege. This nobil prince, beleving his pepill to Increß dull and vnweildy be lang eiß and sleuth, serchit occasiou mony wayis to Invaid his nychtbouris with batall. It fel be

10 aventure þat sindri landwart pepill vnder romane senȝeory tuke pray and gudis out of Albane landis, and siclike sindri * landwart (38.) pepil vnder þe empire of Albanis tuke pray and gudis out of þe romane landis. In this tyme was regnand³ abone þe Albanis Cayus Ciuilius. throw taking of þir prayis and spulȝeis foresaidis,

15 Legatis war send on athir side vnder ane tyme desiring redreß of all displeseris. Tullus gaif sic chargis to his legatis, þat þai suld attempt na thing by his command, and þarefore gaif þame power to desire nocht bot redreß, and to returne with haisty ansuere; And becaus he knew þe albanis wald deny redreß in þat sort, he

20 thocht þe samyn mycht be sufficient motive to Invaid þame with batall. The legatis of albanis did þare message with mare sleuth þan diligence, | for in þe samyn⁴ tyme (quhen þai war makand p. 42. solemne feist and basket with Tullus in his maist magnificence) The legatis of Tullus desirit þe first redreß, and becaus þe king

25 of Albanis denyit þe samyn, Thay denuȝcit were and assignit þe xxx day nixt following to Invaid him with batall. Tullus (as sone as þir legatis war returnit and schawinȝ þare doingis) com mandit þir legatis of Albanis to propone þare message, and to schaw to quhat fyne þai war cummyn. Thir legatis, na thing

30 aduertist of all maters done be þe legatis of Tullus, began be lang proceß to excuse þame, saying It was contrare þare will to schaw ony thing displesand to tullus; Nochtþeles þai war thirllit to seruitude, and behuffit to execute þare credit. Schortlie þai schew þame cummyn to desire redreß of þe gudis tane be

35 romanis, and gif the samyn war nocht done to gif vp trewis.

¹ accustomitt.² repugnand.³ rignand.⁴ same.

To þir wourdis answerit Tullus: "schaw to þoure king þat þe king of romanis takkis þe goddis in witnes, and prayis þame to turne all þe harmes & slaughts, þat is to follow¹ be þir weris, on þat pepill þat first denyit redrefß, or first send hame athir legatis with repulß." (XXIII) Als sone as thir legatis war returnit to 5 þe albanis with þis ansuere, Ilk ane of þir pepill began to mak provisioun in the maist riche and substancius maner þat þai mycht to Invaid vthir, quharethrow þare batal apperit noct vnlke to ane civil batall betuix faderis and sonnys. Baith þir pepill war troianis, for lavyne was cummyn fra troy and Alba fra 10 lavyne, and all þe romanis discending of the lynage and blude of albanis. Nochtþeles, þe aventure þat estir followit made þe end of þis batall þe leß miserabill, þat It was noct fochtin be (39). vniuersal meting of baith þe * armyis; for at last baith þir pepill war brocht vnder ane communite to leif in Rome, And þe ciete 15 p. 43. [of] Alba equate (as ȝe sal estir here) to þe ground. | The Albanis come first with grete violence in þe Romane landis, and sat doun campit with þare tentis within V^m paß to Rome; Syne beltit þare armye with ane strang fowsye on euery side, quhilk was callit certane ȝeris estir "civilius fowsye," quhil at last þe memorye 20 þareof perist be roust of ȝeris. quhen þe albanis war liand on þis maner in þare garnist campe, deceisit þare king Civilius, and þan þai create Mecius² sufficius to be dictator. Tullus be deith of Civilius become more feirß than afore, and traistit fermelie sic favoure of goddis apperand to him be þis werde (sen þe hede of 25 his Inemyis was sa haistelie tane away) þat he mycht Iustlie tak punycioun of all þe Albane pepill for þe batall movit be þame in ane wrangwus³ actioun. In þat samyn nycht he past by þe camp of albanis, and enterit with haisty & terribil Incursioun in þare landis; quhilk thing movit sufficius to departe fra his garnist 30 fowsyis,⁴ and to cum fordwart with all his armye als ner as he mycht, to Invaid þe romanis. Nochtþeles he send ane legate afore to Tullus, desiring to commoun with him, afore þe batallis Ionit, of certane hie materis (gif It war his pleser) Na les plesand and proffittabil to romanis þan to Albanis. Tullus 35

¹ fallow.² Metius.³ wrangwus.⁴ fouseyis.

refusit noct̄t þis commonyng, howbeit he brocht his army arrayit in his best awise,¹ þat he suld noct̄t be frustrate gif þir desiris of sufficius war vane & but effect. On the tothir side, the albanis come fordwart arrayit fornens þe army of romanis. Thir armyis 5 standing arrayit in þis wise,² baith þe princes convenit in the myddis of þame, And sufficius prince of Albanis spak first in this maner. "I here say þat Ciuilius oure last king was ane grete occasioun of þis batall now³ appering betuix þir two pepill, becaus þe Iniuris done to his liegis war noct̄t redressit as he 10 desirit. | I dout noct̄t bot þow Tullus Is occasioun of thir weris p. 44 be þe samyn ressoun ; ȝit gif It be leful to me erare to schaw þe verite þan to schaw ony dissimilit or eloquent wourdis, I say na thing has Inducit þir twa⁴ pepill, alliat togiddir be proximite of blude and rowmes, to Invaid vthir with batell, bot alanelie 15 avarice and desire of senȝorie. And quhiddir þis batall be Iust*lie or Iniustlie begvn⁵ I wil noct̄t Interprete at þis tyme ; (40). lat him decerne þe samyn þat first denuncit batall. The Albanis has create me to be þare gouernoure ; Ane thing þarefore is with quhilk I wald haue the ripelie avisit. behald first with quhat 20 richeſt, grete dominioun, and pussance, the hethruschis lyis circulit about ws baith on euyer side. Attoure þow knawis, in sa fer⁶ as þi pepill ar mare approcheand⁷ to þe Wolschis þan we ar, In sa fer⁶ mare dangere apperis to thy pepill than to ouris. Thay ar mekil pussand⁸ be land, and mekil mare be þe seyis. 25 Remember, als sone as we be thoundrand preiſ of trumpett Ionys togiddir, baith þe pepill afore rehersit (eftir þat we ar brokin with athir slauchter) sal stand arrayit in oure sicht, reddy to destroy baith þe vincust and victorius partie with þare fresch ordinance. Tharefore gif þe goddis favouris ws, and gif we be 30 noct̄t content to leif in sikkir⁹ liberte, bot wil sett oure empire and seruite apoun sum doutsum chance, lat ws mak sic way þat It may be plesandlie discussit quhilk of þir two pepill sall haue perpetuall senȝeory abone vthir, but ony grete slauchter or effusioun of blude." Thir desiris war noct̄t displesand to Tullus,

¹ avyse.² new.³ begoun.⁷ approchant.⁹ sicker.² vyiſſ.⁴ tway.⁶ far.⁸ pussant.

howbeit Mecius sufficius was at þis tyme more ferþ þan he was, baith in curage and hope of victorie. At last, quhen þai had socht on all sidis how þis mater mycht be dressit, ane resonabill way was found (to quhilk fortoun gaif sufficient occasioun) to

p. 45. | discuss þis pley ; (XXIV) ffor in Ilkane of þir armyis war thre 5
brethir, nocht vnlike to vtheris in ȝeris and strenth. þai quhilkis war in þe romane army war namyt horacianis, And thir vthir quhilkis war in þe Albane cumpany namyt curacianis. Thare Is nane vthir opinioun þat is authorist amang oure anciant faderis mare Illustir and nobill þan Is þis opinioun ; and þocht þe said 10
historie be notabil ȝit [in] It is sum errore, nocht knawing quhilk of þir twa pepill war callit Horacianis ¹ and quhilk Curacianis. Ilk opinioun has sufficient auctoriteis¹ ; Nochtþeles, I find monyest auctoriteis saying þe romane brethir war horacianis, and þarefore I applaude to þare opinioun. The twa princes 15
afore namyt tretis with þir sex brethir to fecht aganis vthir with scharpe & grundin swerdis to þe deith, for defence of þare naciounis and pepill, with sic condicioun þat þe empire & liberte (41). sall stand perpetually² with þe samyn pepill quhare * victorie war presentlie fallin.³ Thir sex brethir refusit nocht þir condiciouns, & sone estir þai war aggreit baith of day and place for batell. ȝit afore þe batall ane band was maid betuix romanis and Albanis vnder þir ferme condiciouns : Of quhilkis pepil þe cieteȝanis war victorius, þat samyn pepill sall regnne with perpetual empire abone þat vthir but ony estir rebellioun. Mony vthir 20
bandis war roborate betuix þe two pepill with vthir condiciouns, howbeit þe samyn war made all to þe samyn effect. We find all thingis done in þis wise as we haue schewin, ffor of ony vthir mare anciant band of confederacioun is na memorie. In þe mene tyme the feciall demandit king Tullus on þis maner: 30
“Commandis þow me to fenþ⁴ ane band with þe fader patrat of Albane pepill.” And becaus þe king commandit him to pas to execucioun þareof, “deliuer to me,” said þe ffeciall, “The herbe namyt verbene.” Than said þe king “ressaue It clene and I p. 46. purifijt.” Incontinent the feciall past to þe tour of capitoll, and 35

^{1—1} om.² perpetuall.³ falling.⁴ fence.

pullit vp þe said herbe ; Syne demandit þe king, saying : " makis
 þow me messinger Ryall of þe queritis and romane pepill, &
 ratifijs all thingis done be me, my vessell,¹ & collegis.² The
 king said, " I consent and dois It, sa³ It be nocht to fraude of me
 5 or romane pepill." This fezial had to name marcus Valerius,
 and he maid Spurius fusius fader patrat, and twichit baith his
 hede and his hare with þe herbe verbene. The fader patrat
 was ordanit to strenth & corroborat bandis and contractis with
 10 maist solempne faith, & did þe samyn with mony devote cery-
 monis & coniuracions, quhilkis for prolixite ar nocht necessare to
 reherß at þis tyme ; and quhen he had repetit þe samyn estir þe
 15 ritis and customes þareof he said in þis wise : " here me, O
 Iupiter ; here me, O fader patrat of Albane pepill ; and here me,
 O þow albane pepill, þat all and sindri þai artikillis⁴ first and
 20 last rehersit concerningy oure promyß⁵ and band be observe,
 but ony dissate or fraude estir following, be romanis, als richtuislie
 as þai ar here Ingravin in þir tabillis or walx.⁶ And gif þe romanis
 failȝe first be þare public counsell and fraudfull slichtis, Than, O
 25 Iupiter, strike þame þe samyn day with na leß cruelte þan I sall
 strik þis pork ; and þe mare þow art vailȝeant and pussant, strike
 *þame ay þe mare cruelle." And incontinent fra þe fezial had (42).
 said þir wourdis, he slew þe pork with ane hevy stane. Attoure
 þe albanis hallowit þare fretis & terribill coniuracions for obser-
 uacioun of þir poyntis afore repetit, be avise of þare dictatour and
 vthir preistis, on þe samyn maner.

¹ veschell.

² collegis.

³ sat.

⁴ articulis.

⁵ promes.

⁶ waux.

p. 47. How the thre curacianis faucht aganis the thre horacianis ; and how two of the horacianis war slane ; And how | the thrid horaciane slew all the thre curacianis, and eftir slew his sister, and was adiugit to þe deith, and how he eschapit. 5
Ca. x.

(XXV) The forme of aith maist faithfully corroborate in maner afore rehersit betuix þe two pepill, Thir sex brethir as was conuenit tuke þare armoure and wapynns. Than Ilk side began to exhorte þare cietejanis and campiouns to schaw þare 10 manhede & vassalege, saying þare goddis, þare landis, þare liberte, & euery vthir thingis pertenyng to þame baith at hame and of field, dependit on þe chance of þare batall, And beheld¹ þare fechting þat day. Thir brethir, feirþ and ful of curage, rasit to extreme Ieoperdie of armes be hortacioun of 15 þare native & kyndelie nacioun, come pertlie to þe campe betuix baith þe Oistis, qu^hilkis stude campit about þame on euery side, and richt pensive in þare myndis; for þo^ht þai war exonerate of all present dangere, þai war ȝit ful of grete sollicitude and thocht, for þare empire was sett on þe fortoun 20 and vertewe of þir few campiouns. baith þe pepil, ereckit sum tyme in esperance of victorie, and sum tyme suspendit betuix hope and drede, beheld þis vnthankful sicht. At last quhen þe signe be blast of trumpet was given to Ione, Thir sex brethir, inflamyt² with sprete and curage of baith þe oistis, 25 ruschit with maist penetrive and awful wapynns like þe bront of twa armyis togiddir; ffor nowthir þis nor þat side regardit (43). þare * propir damage³ or slauchtir, bot alanelie tuke sicht to þe public empire, to þe public liberte, and public seruitude following be þe chance of þare batall, knawing⁴ weill sic forton 30 suld stand perpetualie to þare pepill as þai wan þat day. als sone as þare bricht armoure be feirþ concursioun resoundit in þe

¹ beheld.

² inflawmit.

³ damage.

⁴ knawin.

are, and þare schynand swerdis begouth to glance, Incontinent
ane huge trymling¹ Invadit all þe pepill þat beheld² þis batall.
And becauß nouthir þis nor þat oist saw (as ȝit) ony signe of
victorie appere, baith þare voce was rauk³ and þare sprete
5 solist and dull. quhen þir brethir war fechſtand togiddir hand p. 48.
for hand, Nocht alanelie apperit þe ythand mocoun of þare
bodyis, and weilding of þare doutsum and dangerus suerdis
and dartis, bot als þare rude and wide⁴ woundis, springand
with rede stremes of blude, apperit to the sicht of þe⁵ pepill.
10 In þe mene tyme, twa of þe romane brethir woundit and slane
fell down Ilkane abone vthir, All þe thre Albane brethir beand
for þe tyme woundit cruelly and hurte. þe fall and slauchter
of þir twa Romane brethir maid þe Albanis to reiose with
vehement noyis⁶ and clamoure; ȝit þe romane legions war
15 nocht halelie destitute of curage, howbeit þai war pensive in
þare myndis, havand (as þan) na esperance bot in þe thrid
broder namit horiciane, quhilk was inclusit amang the thre
albane brethir namyt Curacianis. This horiciane happynnyt
(as þan) to be haill, but ony stres or hurt of body, and was
20 of sic strenth þat (howbeit he mycht nocht be equale partie to
fecht aganis all þe thre curacianis at anis) ȝit he mycht haue
fouchtin aganis þame all Ilk ane estir vthir; And þarefore to
skail þame in sindry partis he began to fle, traistinct Ilkane of

¹ termeling.² behald.³ raule.⁴ vyde.⁵ Here (on p. 49) the third scribe in the Boyndlie MS.
begins his work, as follows:—

Pepill. In þe mene tyme twa of þe Romane breþer wondit . . . cruelle
& hurt. þe fall & slauchter of þir twa romane breþer maid þe albanis
to reiose with vehement noyis & clamour; ȝit þe Romane legyonis
var nocht halyle destytute of curage, howbeit þai var pensye in
þair myndis, havand as þan na esperance bot in þe thrid brþer
Namyt horryciane, quhilk ves Inclusit amang þe thre albane breþer
Namit Curatianis. This horatiane happinnyt as þan to be haill, but
ony stres or hurt of body, and was of . . . strenth þat howbeit he
mycht nocht be equalie party to fecht aganis all þe thre curacianis
at anis, ȝit he mycht haue fouchtin aganis þame all Ilkane estir vthir;
& þairfoir to skaill þaim in syndry partis he began to fle, traistinct Ilkane of þaim
be þis way ay to follow on him, as þe hurt or vondis

þame be þis way ay to follow on him, as þe hurt or woundis of þare bodyis mycht suffer for þe tyme. Now was þe horaciane fled fra þe place quhare he faucht afore, and lukand behind him saw all þir thre curacianis following on him als fast as þai mycht, Ilkane severat ane large space fra vthir, and ane of 5 þame nocht fer fra him. Incontinent he returnit with grete force on þis nerrest curaciane. quhil þe albanis war cryand with schil noyis on þe remanent curacianis to support þare brothir, This horaciane had slane his fallow and enterand with new

(44) victorie * on þe secund curaciane. Than þe oist of Romanis 10 began to help þare campioun with sic clamoure as effrait pepill has, quhen ony gude fortoun fallis abone þare esperance. This forcy campioun maid him with grete diligence to end p. 49. þis bataill afore þe thrid brothir (quhilk was nocht fer distant) mycht cum to his supporte; and finalie slew þe secund brothir. 15 Now was nocht bot man for man on athir side with equale chance of batall, howbeit þai war nouthir equale in strenth of body nor esperance of victorie; for þis ane, deliuuer and but ony wond of body, havand douibil victorie of Inemyis, come more feirslie to fecht in the thrid bataill þat he had sa recent 20 victorie. That vthir, ouresett with bleding of his woundis and

of þair bodyis mycht suffer for þe tyme. Now was þe horaciane fled fra þe place quhair he faucht asfor, & lukand behind him saw all thir thre curatianis following on him als fast as þai mycht, Ilkane siverit fra vþer ane large space, & ane of þaim nocht fer fra him. Incontynent he turnit with grit force on þir nerrest curatianis. quhilk þe albanis war cryand with schill woce on þe remanent curatianis to support þair breþer, þis horaciane had slane his fallow & enterand with . . . victory on þe secound curaciane. þan þe oist of romanis began to help þair campyoun with sic clamour as affreit pepill hes, quhen ony gud fortoun fallis abone þair esperance. þis forcy campyoun maid him with grit delygence to end þis batell asfor þe þrid brujir, quhilk was nocht fer distant, mycht cum to his suppoirt; & synalie slew þe secound brujer. now was nocht bot man for man on aþer syd with equalie chance of batell, howbeit þai war noþer equalie in strenth of body nor esperance of wictorie; for þis ane, delyuer and But ony wond of body, havand doubill victory of enymeis, come moir feirslie to fecht in the thrid batell þat he did sa Resent victory.

fast rink to haue supportit his brother, and nere discomfist for þare slaunchter afore his ene, enterit in þe batell aganis his victorius Inemye, and maid but smal debait. This horaciane reiosing in his mynde said, "I haue send twa brether to hell,
 5 and I sal send þe thrid (quhilk is occasioun of *oure* debate) þe samyn gate, To þat fyne þat þe romanis in tymes cummyng may regnne with perpetual Impire abone þe albanis." And Incontinent he straik this thrid brothir (quhilk mycht skarslie bere vp his wapynns) in þe throppil, and spuleȝete him baith
 10 of his life and armoure attanis. The romanis, reiosing of þis gude fortoun, resauit horaciane þare campioun with þe more tryumphe and glaidnes, þat þare commoun weil was anys sa
 nere approcheand to vter rewyne. Than baith þe oistis (howbeit þai war in diuers^ß myndis) went to þe beryng of þare
 15 cieteȝanis; ffor þat ane has ekit þare commoun weil be Impire, & þis vthir thirlit to seruitude of þat vthir pepil. The sepulturis remanis in þat samyn places quhare þai wer slane. The two horacianis war beryit togiddir in ane place
 20 noct^t fer fra Alba. The thre curacianis war beryit beside Rome in sindri placis as þai fell. (XXVI) The batell endit in þis maner, Mecius sufficius, dictatour of albanis, demandit king Tullus afore þe seuering¹ of þare armyis, quhat chargis he wald desire of þe saidis albanis, be ressoun of þe band afore rehersit. Than tullus commandit him to hald the p. 50.
 25 Albanis in continual exercicioun of chevelrie, þat he mycht

That vþer, ourset *with* bleding of his vondis and fast reink to haue supportit his bruþer, and neir discomfist for þair slaunchter afoir his Ene, enterit in þe batell aganis his wictoryous enmy, and maid bot small debait. This horatiane Reiosing in his mynd said, 'I haue send twa breþer to hell, & I shall send þe thrid, quhilk is occasioun of oure debait, þe samyn gait, To þat fyne þat þe romanis in tymis cuming may regnne with perpetuall empyre abone þe albanis.' and Incontynent he straik þis thrid bruþer, quhilk mycht skairslie beir vp his wappynnis, in þe thropill, & spulȝete him baith of his lyf & armour attanis.

¹ syvering.

(45). haue * supporte þareof gif he had ony weris aganis þe Veanis. Sone estir, baith þe armyis siverit and returnit hame; amang quham horaciane, þe Invincibil campioun afore rehersit, was returnyng to Rome with þe thre spuleȝeis of curacianis, and afore his entreß in þe toun met him his sister horacia, ane 5 virgine of grete bewtie quhilk was handfast and promittit in mariage to ane of þir thre curacianis. Als sone as scho saw hir husbandis cloik¹ (quhilk scho had² wovin afore), liand with vtheris spuleȝeis on hir brutheris schulderis, scho raif hir hare and with sorowfull countenance and teris lamentit þe deith of 10 hir husband. horaciane, þis feirß campioun, was movit in sa grete haterent for þe lamentation of his sister within his tryumphe of victorie and public glaidnes, þat he pullit out his swerd; and quhen he had spokin maist Iniurius wourdis to his sister, he peirsit hir throw þe body with his swerd, and 15 said, "pas now³ with þi Inopertune lufe to þi husband, sen þow has na sicht to þi cuntry nor ȝit to þi brethir quyk or dede; & I pray þe goddis þat Ilk creature þat deploris þe deith of Innemyis to rome be slane in þe samyn maner." This wikkit and outrageous deid was sar aggeregit bayt⁴ afore 20 þe faderis⁴ and pepill of Rome, howbeit his recent and honorabil meritis sum parte excusit þe offence þareof; Nochtþeles he was brocht haistelie In Iugment⁵ afore þe king. þan king tullus (þat he suld nocht be auctor⁶ of sa trist and vnthankful Iugement aganis þis nobill man) callit þe pepill afore him, and 25 said, "I create here twa men to be Iugis in þis mater, þat þai may gif þe sentence of perduellion on horaciane estir þe tenoure⁷ of þe lawis." This law of perduellioun was of maist horribil cryme, and for þat cauȝt quhat euer he was þat was

p. 51. guilty þareof was ay adiugit to þe deith; for þe two Iugis 30 (to quham þe cauȝt was committit) behufit to pronounce þe sentence of perduellioun. gif þis horaciane happynnyt be sentence of þir twa Iugis to be convickit, he sall appele to þe pepil, and þan behuffis þir twa Iugis to follow him for his

¹ clok.² has, A.³ þow.⁴ faderis.⁵ Iugement.⁶ auctor.⁷ tennoȝt.

cryme afore þe pepill. And gif þis Iugis frivole his appellacioun and convict him, Than sall his hede be coverit, his body skurgit, * owthir vtouth or Inwith þe pomerie, and eftir all (46). hingit on ane vnhappy tre. Thir twa men, create Iugis¹ be 5 þis law, seing þat þai mycht na wayis absolȝe þis horacioun as Innocent of þe cryme foresaid, condampnit him to þe deith. Than said ane of þe Iugis,¹ “I gif þe sentence of perduellioun on þe, horacioun. Cum hiddir,² þow burreo,³ and bynd þis horaciounes handis.” In þe mene tyme þe burreo come with 10 þe corde, and faldit þe samyn about his handis. Than said horacioun, be authorite of king Tullus Interpretoure of þir lawis, “I appeill⁴.” And þus was his appellacioun devoluit afore þe pepill. The common pepill war movit to grete miseracioun in þare Iugement, specially be pietuous⁵ lamentacioun of þe auld man horacius, fader to þis horacioun þat slew his sister; ffor he allegit þat his dochter⁶ was Iustlie slane for hir demeritis,⁷ vthirwayis he suld haue punyst his son be þe law paternale In maist cruell maner þat mycht be devisit. Attoure þis agit man besocht⁸ þe pepill to suffir him 15 nocht to be nakit and destitute of all his barnis, quhilk was þe samyn morrow sa proudly reiosing with þe swetenes þareof. And in þe menetyme he embrasit his son, and began to schaw the spuleȝeis of þe thre Curacioun brethir, hingand in þe samyn place quhilk Is ȝit callit þe horacioun pillaris. “O 20 Romanis” (said he) “haue ȝe sa feirȝ & Innative cruelte in ȝoure hartis, þat ȝe may se him bound vnder þe gallouȝ⁹ with grete torment & punyciou, quhom ȝe saw laitlie decorit & triumphand with hie victorie of ȝoȝt Inemyis. I beleif þe 25 albanis, his vnmerciful fais, mycht nocht behald sa terribil p. 52.

25 sicht and cruelte done to¹⁰ him. Pas, þow burreo,¹¹ and bynd þai handis quhilkis latelie, quhen þai war armit, conquest sa hie empire to romane pepill. Pas, þow burreo, and covir þe hede of þat campiou quhilk is þe deliuerare of þis ciete fra

¹ Iugeis.⁴ appell.⁷ demeryteis.¹⁰ on.² hether.⁵ petewis.⁸ besouȝt.¹¹ bureo.³ bureo.⁶ douchter.⁹ gallowis.

thirldome¹; hing vp his body in ane vñchancy tre; Skurge him now within þe pomerie amang þe horaciane pillaris & spuleȝeis conquest be him of Inemyis; or ellis skurge him vtouth² þe pomerie amang þe sepulturis of curacianis. ȝe can haue him to na maner of placis³ within ȝoure senȝeorie, bot his grete 5
 (47). meritis and glore of * victorie sall ay deliuer him fra sic schamefull and vile punyciou." The pepill myȝt nowthir suffir pacientlie the teris of þe fader nor ȝit his curage (quhilk was of sic excellenȝt constance in euery dangere) to peris; And þarefore assoleȝeit him fra þe deith, mare for admiracion 10 and loving of vertew⁴ þan ony Iust merit of þe cauȝt. And ȝit þat þe said offence and slauchter sa manifestlie committit myȝt be purgit be sum sacrifice & satisfaccioun, It was com- mandit be þe pepil þat the fader sal purge the son be ane parte of þe commoun and public money of þe toun. In þe 15 mene tyme þe fader purgit his son with certane sacrificis namyt piaculis, quhilk remanit in vse mony ȝeris [efter] with þe lynage of horacianis, for purgacioun of siclike offensis gif ony occurrit. The fader, to purge þe sone, dang ane staik in þe erde thortoure þe gate, nocht fer fra þe samyn places⁵ 20 quhare his sone suld haue bene Iustifijt; And quhen he suld haue coverit his hede, as þe dome requirit, he set him doun vnder þe said staik, to signifie þat he was vnder ȝoik of subieccioun. this stayk is reparit all tymes quhen It failȝeis, and callit to oȝre dayis þe staik of þe sister. This virgine 25 horacia was buryit in þe samyn place⁵ quhare scho was slane
 p. 53. be hir | bruthir, in ane sepulture of quernell⁶ stanis.

¹ thrildome.

² outof.

³ place.

wertu.

⁴ plaisir.

quarnell.

How mecius dictator of Albanis causit the Veanis (48).

and fidenatis to Invade þe romanis be promyß¹
of his supporte; Of þe grete prudence and crafty
industrie of king Tullus aganis his Inemyis; how
5 þe Veanis and fidenatis war discomfist, & mecius
dictator drawin sindri for his demeritis.²

Ca. xi.

(XXVII) The pece continewit noct lang betuix þe Albanis
and romanis; ffor þe Albane pepill, be þare Invy & haterent
10 (becaus þare public liberte was committit on þe chance of sa
few knichtis), corruppit sa þe Ingyne of mecius þare dictator,
þat quhen he saw his prudent devise succede nocth with sic
felicite as he belevit, he kest³ him to recounsell⁴ him agane
to the favoure of his pepill be wikkit and tressonabill wayis. And
15 as he afore in tyme of were made pece,⁵ sa now in tyme of
pece⁵ he kest³ him to fynd occasioun of were. This mecius,
seing the pepill of his ciete of mare curage þan strenth, per-
suadit sundri pepill liand about him on euery side to Invaid
þe romanis with opin weris, and reservit sic tressoun to his
20 pepill (Becaus þai war confederate⁶ with romanis) þat his
pepill vnder schaddow of þis alliance mycht mare eselie Invade
the romanis quhen þai saw occasioun. The fidenatis, quhilkis
war afore ane Colonye of romanis & confederate with the
Veanis þare nyghtbouris vnder ane opinion,⁷ made þame
25 haistely for batall aganis þe romanis, be condition & promyß
of þe Albanis to concur to þare supporte. Als sone as Tullus
was aduertist þat þe fidenatis be opin rebellioun had denuncit
were, he rasit⁸ ane strang army of romanis, togiddir with
mecius & þe Albanis, quhilkis he belevit to haue stand surelie
30 at his opinoun aganis his Inemyis. And quhen he was cumin
oure þe river of Anyen, he campit his army on þe brayis &

¹ to (!) promeis. ³ keist.

⁵ pax.

⁷ appinȝoun.

² demeryteis.

⁴ recounsaill.

⁶ confidart.

⁸ raissit.

p. 54. bordouris | þairof; And betuix þe place¹ quhare he was campit and the toune of fidena, the Veanis with all þare army was (49). cumin * oure tyber. Thir Veanis, campit in þis place¹ afore rehersit, had þe sade river of tyber on þare richt wyng, and sa the fidenatis on thare left wyng (quhare þai war campit) had 5 þe montanis. Tullus þan come fordwart with his army [of romanis] aganis þe Veanis, and arrayit þe Albanis with mecius þare dictator, to have fochtin aganis þe fidenatis. Nochtþeles Mecius þe governour of Albanis was als nakit of manhede and curage as he was of faith, ffor he was sa fals and febil þat he 10 durst nother remane with þe romanis nor ȝit durst pertly² pas fra þame, And þarefore fled with slaw passage to þe montanis; and quhen he saw him selfe ane lairge space severit fra baith þe armyis, he gart display his ansenȝe³ on hicht. And becaus he was flowand in his mynde & vncertane to quhat 15 parte he wald assist, he began to array his batallis to cutt & drive our þe tyme, ffor his purpois was (quhare euer þe victorie Inclynit) to concur with al his armye to þe samyn parte. The romanis, quhilkis stude nerrest him for þe tyme, had first grete admiracion quhat þis mecius Intendit, quhen 20 þai saw þare sidis nakit of þare fallowis. In þe mene tyme ane knyȝt come to tullus on ane speedy hors, & schew how þe Albanis war fled. Tullus astonist be þis effray avowit xij⁴ preistis (quhilkis war namyt Salis) to be perpetualy dedicate⁵ to mars god of batall; And attoure avowit⁶ to big twa tempillis 25 in þe honour of twa goddis namyt palnes & dredoure, And in þe mene tyme he reprevit disputuusly⁷ þis knyȝt þat schew þir [ty]thingis. Syne with schil voce (þat his Inemyis myȝt here) he commandit his pepill to return with grete curage in batell aganis þare Inemyis, Saying þai aucht nocht to be astonist, for 30 þe Albanis war nocht past to þe montanis bot alane lie be his avise, And war commandit be him to pas about þe fidenatis & to Invade þare sidis quhare þai war maist nakit. And in- p. 55. continent | he commandit all his horsmen to erect and bere vp

¹ plaisir.² peirtlie.³ ansynȝe.⁴ wowitz twelf.⁵ didycate.⁶ wowitz[it].⁷ dispitewislie.

þare speris and dartis in þare handis, quhilkis doingis war sa
 crafty þat þe samyn hid þe fleing of Albanis fra sicht of his
 fute men. Attoure, þe horßmen of romanis (quhilkis saw clerelie
 þe fleing of þe saidis Albanis) belevit euery thing to be as
 5 þai herd tullus say, And saft¹ sa cruelly þat þe fidenatis þare
 Inemyis with huge dredoure war astonist; for mony of þame
 vnderstude *the latyne² young as colonys of romanis, And (50).
 belevit (as þai herd þe king say) þat þe Albanis suld cum
 haistelie on þare sidis quhare þai war maist nakit of pepill.
 10 And þarefore dredand (quhen þe albanis war discendit fra þe
 montanis) to be inclusit on euery side fra þare toun of fidena,
 þai gaif bakkis. On quhom tullus followit with grete furie, &
 brocht þame to vtir discomfitoure, And Incontinent with recent
 victorie come more feirslie on þe veanis, quhilkis war abasit³
 15 and brokin be discomfitoure of þare marrowis, throw quhilk
 þai mycht noct sustene þe dynt of romanis. And þoþt þe
 river of tyber was Impediment to þame to fle abak, ȝit þai
 wer constrenit to haue þare vtir reskourß to þe samyn. And
 quhen þai wer cummyn to þe said Rivere, ane parte þareof
 20 schamefully nakit þame self of þare wapynnys, and throw fere
 of þare Inemyis ran as blynd and rammyst pepill in þe wattir.
 Vtheris, vncertane quhiddir⁴ þai suld fle or fecht, abaid sa
 lang on þe Rivere side, quhil þai war oppresit⁵ and slane be
 romanis. Treuth is, afore þai dayis na batall of romanis was
 25 sarare on þare Inemyis þan was þis last new rehersit.⁶
 (XXVIII) Mecius dictator, seing þis gloriis victorie inclynand
 to Romanis, discendit haistelie fra þe montanis, As he wald
 haue made haisty support to Romanis be his army; and schew
 to king Tullus þat he was hertlie⁷ reiosit of þe victory fallin
 30 to him. On þe tothir side tullus, dissimiland⁸ his mynde,
 resauit Mecius with benyng & | tendir contenance; And þat p. 56.
 Ilk thing mycht be done with more felicite he commandit
 mecius to conione all his folkis togiddir with romanis, ffor
 the nixt morow he wald mak ane sacrifice lustrale, als sone

¹ faucht.

² lating.

³ abaisit.

⁴ quhidar.

⁵ opprest.

⁶ now reheirssit.

⁷ hairtly.

⁸ dissimblane.

as licht apperit. On þe nixt morow, quhen euery thingis war
reddy for þe sacrifice, he commandit baith þe pepill to compere¹
to his conciououn; and quhen þe seriandis had with þare noyiſ
and hohas warnit in speciall þe albanis to here þe kingis
concioun, Mony of þame war sa movit be desire of novellis 5
and to here þe king of romanis mak his conciououn, þat þai
thristit in on euery side, and made þame self nerrest to the
king. Incontinent ane romane legioun, devisit² be crafty
Industry of king Tullus, stude armit *with* wapynnys on euery
side about þir Albanis; for þe charge was gevin sa straitlie³ 10
(51). * to þe centuriouns⁴ þat þai behufit to execute þe sammyн but
ony dilacioun.⁵ Than Tullus said in þis maner: "O romanis,
gif euer afore þis houre succedit ony felicite in batall, for þe
quihilk ȝe aucht first to gif þe loving and glore þareof to
Inmortale goddis, And secundlie to ȝoure onelie manhede and 15
curage, The samyn apperit in þe last batall recentlie strekkin⁶
be ws aganis oure cruel Inemyis. ffor in þis last batall we
faucht nocht alanelie *with* oure Inemyis, bot als *with* maist
tressonabil slicht and falset of oure nyȝtbouris⁷ & freyndis,
& in sa fer oure batall was þe mare dangerus. herefore, þat 20
na fals nor vane opinioun dissauie ȝow, ȝe sall vndirstand þat
þe Albanis left my array and fled to þe montanis but ony
command of me, ffor sic tressonabill fleing come neuer be my
Industry. And howbeit I dissimillit, schewing⁸ sic thingis
done be my counsale, ȝit þe samyn was done to þat fyne þat 25
baith ȝoure curage suld nocht be drawin fra batall, quhen ȝe
knewe nocht þe fleing of ȝoure freyndis fra ȝoure supporte,
And þat ȝoure Inemyis mycht haue extreme fere & dredoure
p. 57. in þare myndis, | herand þe albanis (as I schew) to cum
haistely on þare sidis. Attoure the albanis ar nocht accusit 30
be me for þis tressoun sa manifestlie⁹ committit in perdicoun
of my pepil, ffor þai did nocht bot followit (as ȝe wald haue
done) þare capitane. gif I wald haue drawin ȝow to ony

¹ conceir.⁴ sentoryonis.⁷ nebouris.² devysit.⁵ delatioun.⁸ schawing.³ craftely.⁶ strykin.⁹ manefeistlie.

place, þe wald sone haue obtemperat and obeyit my chargis. Mecius is nocht onely þe fals and tressonabil dissaver of me and ȝow in to oure Iorney,¹ Bot is als þe hale dissaver of þis soroufful and maist dangerus batal latelie strikkin. he is þe 5 onelie brekare of alliance and confederacioun betuix þe romanis and Albanis. Attoure, vthir tratouris sal attempt siclike besines, gif I punyß² him nocht sa Iustlie þat he may be ane notabill exemplil³ to all pepill to do sic treson⁴ in tymes cummyng." The centuriouns, armyt in þare best awise, stude about mecius 10 on euery side, & tullus spak furth þe remanent of his orisoun on þis maner as he began afore. "That gude chance, felicite, and welth may succede als wele to ȝow Romanis and Albanis as to me, It is now my determit⁵ purpois to transport all þe Albane pepill to rome, And to gif nocht onelie þe ciete of Rome 15 to þare * Inhabitacioun, bot als to decore the 'nobillis and (52). principall men þareof with auctorite amang oure faderis and senaturis, to þat fyne þat baith þir pepill sall be in tymes cuming allanerlie ane ciete and ane commoun weil; ffor as sum tyme þe empire of Albanis was dividit in two pepill, sa 20 now be þe samyn maner baith þir pepill sall returne agane vnder ane empire and body." The albanis, inclusit but armoure on þis wise within þe garnist oist of romanis, was pensive and drawin in sindri desire and myndis. Nochtþeles Ilkman had sic dredoure þat þai kepit silence but ony wourdis. Than 25 said king Tullus in þis wise. "Gif þow, mecius sufficius, dictatour of Albanis, mycht ony maner of way haue leirned to obserue thy faith and promiſ, I suld erare haue correckit þi maneris, reservand þi liffe, þan to haue put þe to deith. Bot now sen þi Ingyne & falset | ar Incurabil, þow sall lere p. 58.

30 all pepill be þi notabil punycioun to obserue þe band of faith and promiſ quhilkis ar violate be þe; and as þow was euer doubill and variant⁶ in þi werkis, & be þe samyn drew þe veanis and fidenatis in displeser of Romanis, sa sall now þi body be drawin in diuerß partis. Incontinent he gart twa

¹ Iurny.² pvnis.³ mortall (!) exampill.⁴ tressoun.⁵ deteirmyt.⁶ waryant.

cheriotis¹ be brocht afore him, and band þis Mecius speldit betuix þe twa cheriottis,¹ and quhen þe horþ was chasit in sindri partis, Ilk cheriott² rest and dysmembrit³ sa mekil of him as was bund to þe cheriot.⁴ All þe pepill drew away þare ene fra þis schamefull sicht. This was þe first and last 5 cruell pvnicioun þat euer þe romanis tuke on þare transgressoris, but ony exempl or consideracioun of humane lawis; for þe romanis may haue all vthir tymes þat glore, þat na pepill was sa graciis and soft in pvnissing of þare transgressoris or subdittis as þai wer.

10

(53). how the ciete of Alba was distroyit, & all þe pepill þareof transportit to rome; how grete nowmer of sabynis war discomfist and slane be romanis; Of vncouth meruellis; of þe sacrifice Nouemdial and of þe deith of Tullus. Ca. xij. 15

(XXIX) Quhill sic thingis war done be tullus, ane large nowmer of horsmen war send to þe ciete of Alba to transport þe pepill þareof to rome. And estir þame war send certane legiouns of futenen to euerit and cast doun þe foresaid ciete to þe ground. fra⁵ thir legiouns war enterit within þe portis⁶ of 20 Alba, þar was nocht sic dyn and dredoure amang þe Albanis as vsis to be amang captiue pepill, quhen noyiþ and clamoure of armit men rynnys in maist fury distroying euery thing be fire and swerde, þare ciete tane be men of armes, þare portis brokin, thare wallis deieckit be force of rammys⁷ to the grund, and 25 finalie all þare castellis and strenthis tane be force. Bot erare was amang þe albanis ane sorowfull and drery silence, quhilk p. 59. wit sic stil | sadnes depressit all þare myndis and curage, þat all þare wisdome decayit in þat extreme aduersite, And throw þare

¹ cheryotis.² cheryete.³ demembrit.⁴ cheryote.⁵ ffor, A.⁶ partis, A.⁷ Ramis.

dredoure forȝett quhat þai suld leif behind þame, or quhat þai suld turȝ with þame. And þan began euery ane of þame to demand vthir, gif þai suld stand in þare dur¹ threschaldis, or gif þai suld pas as vagaboundis² and vncertane pepill throw þare 5 howsis³ & tak þare leif, as neuer to se þe samyn agane. At last, fra þe noysiȝ of horȝmen began to rise, commanding þe albanis to Ische out of þe ciete, þan was herd þe huge rummylling⁴ and sound of brokin housȝ⁵ & wallis in all partis þareof. Than raiȝ 10 þe dust of powder⁶ fra diuerȝ partis of þe ciete, & ourecoverit þe samyn with maist vile & terribil cloud. Incontinent Ilk persoun tuke þe thing þat he mycht bere, and left his natuie goddis and housȝ⁶ quhare he was bred and nurist. * The albanis, departing (54), on þis wise in grete cumpanyis to pas to Rome, fillit þe gatis sa full of pepill þat skarslie mycht ane of þame pas beside ane vthir. 15 Than the pietuoȝ⁷ sicht and commiseracioun of Ilkane of þame to ane vthir maid þame to fall in lamentabil & continuall teris; mony miserabil cryis war herd, specially⁸ of wemen; for quhen þai war passand by þare tempillis, quhilkis war þan occupyit, or ellis segeit be men of armes, Apperit þat þai left behynd þame 20 þare goddis (as presoneris) In þare Inemyis handis. Als sone as þe Albanis war halely Ischit out of þis ciete, The romanis kest⁹ doun all þe public and private houȝ⁵ of þis ciete, and equate þe wallis þareof to þe ground. Thus was þe ciete of Alba (quhilk stude iiiij^e¹⁰ ȝeris in grete magnificence and policy¹¹) broȝt be 25 ane¹² houris lauboure to vtir eversioun, and na thing sauffit in It sauf onelie the houȝ⁵ and tempillis of þe goddis; for it was commandit to desist þarefra be generall¹³ edict and proclama-cioun of tullus. (XXX) Rome began þus Ilk day to rise¹⁴ mare and mare in policy¹¹ and richeȝ be rewyne of Alba, and þe pepill 30 þareof augmentit | with doubil nowmer; And for þe samyn cauȝ¹⁵ p. 60. king Tullus sett out his ciete with mare boundis & tuke in mont Celius. And to mak þe pepill to resorte with mare frequent

¹ durre.² wagamoundis.³ houȝ.⁴ rummeling.⁵ housis.⁶ & pulder.⁷ petewis.⁸ spetiall.⁹ keist.¹⁰ four hunder.¹¹ polecy.¹² a.¹³ gem Ryall (!).¹⁴ ryȝ.

habitacioun on þe said montane, he biggit his palice riall on þe said montane, quhare he duelt þe residew of his dayis. Eftir þis he chesit¹ out þe princes and maist nobill men of Alba, as Iulianis,² Seruilianis, quintianis, geganianis, Curacianis, and chelianis; and made þame faderis and Senaturis of his ciete, þat 5 [þe] commoun weill suld rise als weill be sic besynes as be vtheris. And in þe honoure of þir senaturis, quhilkis war now ekit be his auctorite, he maid ane counsellhouſ in maner of ane tempill, quhare thir Senatouris suld dreſ all materis concernyng³ the public weill in tymes cummyn.⁴ This houſ Is callit ȝit to 10 oure dayis hostiliane. And þat sum thing be cummyn of þir new pepill mycht be ekit to þe strenth & Roboracioun of all religiouſ and ordoure afore divisit, he chesit out ten turmys of horſmen, Ilk turme contenyng xxx^{ti} men in nowmer, and supportit þe auld legiouſ of Romanis be þe said nowmer, and wrate new nowmer 15 (55). in þe samyn gyse. *Tullus, confiding in þis new strenth of pepill brocht to his ciete, denuncit were to the sabinis, quhilkis war ane pepill in þai dayis maist pussant in erde, nixt þe Etruschis, baith in men riches and armoure. Sone eftir, baith þir pepil Invadit vthir with Iniuris, and þoche þe reddreſ⁵ þareoſ 20 was askit, ȝit nane was made on athir side. Tullus complenit⁶ þat his merchandis war offtymes tane and spuleȝete be sabinis, doing þare erandis beside þe tempill of þe goddes namyt feronia. On þe tothir side, þe Sabinis complanit þat þare rebellis and transgressouris fled to Asile, the refuge of rome, and war þare 25 Intertenit⁷ but ony reclame or punyciouſ eftir following. This was þe occasioun of weris betuix þe romanis and sabinis. The p. 61. sabinis, remembring wele | ane large parte of þare pepill brocht be tacius to rome, And als how þe romanis be transportacioun of Albanis war doublit in new power of pepill, Sett þare 30 besines to conqueſ support of all vthir pepill baith strangearis & nychtbouris aganis þe romanis. The land of Ethruria was liand nere þe saidis sabinis, bot þe Veanis war nerrer and mare approcheand to þame. All wayis þe sabinis persuadit mony of þe

¹ cheissit.

² Julyens.

³ conservyng (!).

⁴ cumyng.

⁵ redres.

⁶ complanit.

⁷ enterit (!).

said pepill with small lauboure to assist to þare opinioun, throw
 roust and auld¹ haterent of weris (quhilkis þai bure with boldin
 hartis aganis þe romanis); and mony of þir pepill vagabound and
 ouresett with pouerte tuke wagis of þe sabynis. ² Nochtþeles þir
 5 foresaid pepil wald nocht send opinlie supporte to þe sabynis,²
 for þe faith and band of trewis (as It was condicioneate afore be
 romulus) was Inviolately obseruit be þe Veanis; and howbeit þe
 faith of vthir vile and Indigent pepill was brokin, It was þe leſſ
 10 admiracioun. quhen þe romanis & sabinis war makand þare
 provisioun with maist diligence (quhilk of þame suld Inavid vthir
 sonest with batell) Tullus rasit³ haistelie his army & come first
 in þe sabyne landis. followit ane richt sare and terribill bargane⁴
 beside ane place callit þe malicius & vnhappy wod, quhare þe
 15 romanis, ekit be huge nowmer of futemen & horsemen cumin (as
 said is) to þare ciete, war richt pussant and strang abone þare
 Inemyis. Incontinent, be haisty Irrupcioun of þe horſmen, all
 þe array & ordoure of Sabynis was sa brokin, þat þai mycht
 nowþir fecht nor fle but Innomerabill⁵ slauchter following on
 20 þame. (XXXI) * quhen þe sabinis war dantit in þis maner, and (56).
 maist tryumphē apperand to Tullus & þe commoun weill of his
 realme and pepill, It was schawin to him and þe faderis, þat It
 ranyt stanis continually in mont Albane; & becaus þir tithingis |
 mycht skarsly be trowit, sindri persounis war send furth to p. 62.
 25 explore gif þe samyn was trewe; In quhais sicht þe stanis fell
 als ythandlie out of þe lift as dois þe round hailstanis, quhen þai
 ar drevin be violence of wyndis in þe erde. Attoure, apperit
 to þir persounis send furth in þis behalf⁶ þat þai herd huge
 vocis amang þe hie woddis of þe said montane, commanding þe
 30 Albanis to mak sacrifice to þare goddis on þe manere as þare
 eldaris and faderis did afore; ffor þe Albanis forȝett all þe
 sacrifice of þare native goddis als sone as þai war departit fra
 þare native toun & cuntry, and had owþir ressauit þe sacrifice
 of romane goddis, or ellis war sa commouit aganis fortoun for
 euersioun of þare ciete, þat þai leſt þe seruice of þare goddis

¹ hald.² ~~—~~ om.³ raissit.⁴ bergane.⁵ Innomerabill.⁶ behaf.

vndone. The Romanis (becaus þir vncouth prodigies¹ apperit) Institute² ane new sacrifice, callit in þai dais þe sacrifice nouendiall. The ressoun quhy³ þai Institute⁴ þis sacrifice was oþthir throw þis celestiall and heuinlie voce þat was herd in mont albane (for þat opinioun is haldin), or ellis þai Institute⁴ þis sacrifice be command of þe divinouris namyt Auruspices. This sacrifice was haldin in sic solemnite, þat ay (quhen ony prodigios or vncouth wounder apperit)⁵ þe feries war þar estir nyne dayis.⁶ Nocht lang estir, ane terribil pestilence rang abone þe romanis, And ȝit þis marciall & maist werelie prince mycht nocht suffir his pepill to rest or dull in sleuth; bot throw his active life sustenit þame in continual exercioun⁷ of cheuelry;⁸ ffor he traistit þat his pepill suld haue bettir heill in þare bodyis quhen þai war travellit in þare werelie campis þan quhen þai war solpit⁹ at hame in sleuth and Idilnes; quhil at last he was trublit¹⁰ with vncouth & difficil infirmite, throw þe quhilk his feirß & |

p. 63. mychty curage was sa brokin, That quhare he held afore na thing sa degrading to Imperial dignite as to leif in religious and contemplative life, he become suddenly alterit and thrall to euery supersticion grete and small; And finalie began to subdew his pepill to sic devote maneris þat þai belevit halely (57). þare realme to returne to þe samyn estate and gover*nance as It was afore in þe tyme of Numa pompilius, And als traistit na succourß nor medicyne to cum to þare infirme and wery bodyis, without sum pece⁹ war grantit be commiseracioun of þe goddis to perdoun þare tressonable and wikkit offenß. It is said finalie þat þis nobil prince was reding þe commentaris of Numa pom-pilius, and be aventure fand certain occult & soleme sacrifice in þe saidis commentaris, maid in þe honour of Iupiter Eliseus. And becaus he nowthir began nor ȝit endit þe said sacrifice with sic Reuerence and divyne cerymonis as war expedient, he tynt nocht alanelie his lauboure, but ony thankis or meritis of þe

¹ prodigiis.

² Iustie (!).

³ for quhilk.

⁴ Justice (!).

⁵—⁸ þe feryis war com-

mandit Nyne dayis

þair efter.

⁶ exertioun.

⁷ cheuile.

⁸ sopit.

⁹ peax.

goddis, bot was als strikkin *with* thunder¹ and flambis² within þe tempill (quhare he made þe sacrifice) to nocth, becaus he did nocth his divyne ³seruice as he suld haue done. Tullus rang xxxij *þeris* In grete glore abone þe romanis.

5 How Ancus marcius was made king of romanis ; how þe latynis contrare þare band of confederacioun Invadit þe romanis ; Of þare proude ansuere made to romanis desiring redres of þir Iniuris, and of þe forme and maner to denunce were. Ca. xij.

10 (XXXII) Tullus beand deceissit⁴ in þis maner, the kingdome of Romanis was devoluit (as þe vse was fra þe begynnyng) to þe faderis ; and sone estir þai chesit ane regent to governe þe ciete quhill þe pepill war degestlie resoluit, quha suld be king. quhen þis regent had made his comites (as was accustumyt⁵), þe pepill 15 chesit Ancus marcius to be king, and þe faderis confermit him. This Ancus was nepote to Numa pompilius, gottin on his dochter. Als sone as he began | to regnne, he considerit in his p. 64 memorie the renovne and glore of his *gudeschir*, and how þe empire of þis last king tullus was gouernit in maist felicite 20 allwayis, sauf onelie þe rite and cerymonis of divine religioun was neclectit,⁶ or ellis nocth * done in dew maner as þai war (58). institute ; and for þis cauß he thocht na besines sa gude as to mak þe divyne sacrifice to þe goddis, of⁷ þe samyn gise as þai war institute be Numa. And þat sic thingis mycht be done mare 25 eselie be þe pepill, he commandit þe grete bischop to publice and schaw furth þe bukis of Numa his *gudeschir*; In quhilkis war contenit þe procesß and maner of euery religioun be him devisit ; And the samyn to be drawin out of his bukis to be

¹ thonder. ³ *Second scribe in B.* ⁴ deceissit. ⁶ neclekit.
² flammys. ⁵ *resumes here (p. 65).* ⁷ accustomit. ⁷ on.

Inserit in public tabillis, quhare all þe pepill mycht behald þe samyn. Ancus, throw thir and siclike doingis, was traistit be his cietejanis richt desirus¹ of pece, And be sindry cieteis approcheand to his empire, to cum to þe maneris and religious Institucioun of Numa his gudeschir. for þir causis þe latynis 5 (quhilkis war confederate afore with romanis In tyme of tullus) began to erect þare curage, and be suddane Incursioun tuke ane² large pray of gudis out of þe romane landis; And quhen þe romanis had send þare legatis desiring redres of þir Iniuris, Thay answerit with proude wourdis, saying, þai held þe king of 10 Romanis for ane slaw and effemynate prince, and belevit nocht bot he suld pas his dayis but ony glore of armes amang templis and altaris of goddis. Ancus had Ingyne indifferent³ baith to were & peace, havand in remembrance baith þe religious life of Numa & þe marciall empire of Romulus; And howbeit he 15 consyderit þat pece was maist necessare to þe empire of Numa his gudeschir, becaus þe said Numa had as þan mony serþ and þoung pepill, ȝit he thocht he mycht nocht obtene pece sa lichtlie as Numa did, quhilk⁴ purchest pece but Iniure of nyghtbouris liand about him for þe tyme. At last, seing his pacience mokit 20 and contempnit⁵ be þe latyns, he thocht best (as þe sessoun⁶ occurrit) erare to follow þe maneris of tullus þan Numa. here-
p. 65. fore as Numa in tyme | of peace made mony religious ritis, sa he thocht in þe tyme of were to be author of marciall cerymonis; And nocht alanelie to lere þe pepill how batellis suld be led 25 aganis þare Inemyis, Bot als be quhat orどour and werely proces þare batellis sal be denuncit. And first he declarit þe maneris and custume,⁷ how redres suld be desirit of al Iniuris. This rite of chevelry and repeticioun of gudis began first be ane (59). anciant pepil namyt equicoli, quhilk re*manis now with þe 30 preistis namyt facialis. The legate, als sone as he is cum in to þe marchis and vtir boundis of þat pepil (quhare he desiris redres), sal first covir his hede with certane thredis maid of woll, & say in þis maner: "here me, O Iupiter; here me,

¹ desyris.² a.³ indifferent.⁴ quhilkis, A.⁵ cont[e]mnit.⁶ seson.⁷ custome.

O ȝe Induellaris and Inhabitantis of þis land to quhilk I am direckit." In þe mene tyme he namys þe land. "here me, O ȝe resoun and Iustice, for I am public messinger of Romane pepill. I come here as legate, send baith meiklie¹ and 5 Iustlie. Tharefore gif faith and credence² to my wordis." Thir wourdis beand said, he desiris redres of sic Iniuris as war to him committit, and takis Iupiter in witnes, saying þir wourdis: "gif I desire þir men or þir gudis Iniustlie or wikkilie to be randerit to romane pepil or to me, Than, O Iupiter, suffir me neuer to 10 returne hame in my cuntry with my life or my hele." Thir wordis beand said, The legate³ shall enter within þe cuntry⁴ to quhilk⁴ he Is direckit, and shall repeate þe wordis⁵ afore rehersit to þe first man þat he metis, owthir be þe gate or in þe entres of þe toun; and siclike sal repeate þir wourdis⁶ with changeing of 15 vthir letill⁶ cerymonis quhen he Interis⁷ in þe courte or merket⁸ within þe said toun. And gif þe men and gudis quhilkis he desiris be noct⁹ randerit⁹ and restorit agane within xxx¹⁰ dais (ffor þat nowmer was ay accustumyt for þe more solemnity), þan shall he denunce batall in þis maner: "here me, O Iupiter; here 20 me, O Iuno; here me, O quyryne; and here me, O celestiall terrestriall & Infernale goddis; I tak ȝow in witnes þat þe pepill" (quhilk he namys for þe tyme) "be Iniust, quhilk wil noct mak satisfaccioun nor redreß for þe offendis¹⁰ done, according to richt. And protestis here þarefore quhen we ar | returnit in p. 66. 25 oure cuntry, þat we may prudentlie avise with oure nobillis how and be quhat maner we may best recovir þai gudis quhilkis richtwisly pertenis to ws." Als sone as þis legate is returnit to rome, and takis avisement of þe senatouris quhat thingis ar to be done, Than sal þe king tak consultacioun of þe said Senate 30 and faderis; And be his wourdis [sall] schaw for quhat occasioun, for quhat accioun and debate, þe fader patrat of þe quirites and romane pepill has denuncit were to þe fader patrat of prisk latynis and to all þe latyne pepill. And shall expreß quhat þir gudis or Iniuris war quhilkis suld haue bene re*storit (60).

¹ mekle.² creditt.³ legatis, both.⁴—⁴ quhair.⁵—⁵ om.⁶ litill.⁷ entres.⁸ marcat.⁹ randrit.¹⁰ offendis.

or reparit be þe latynis to romanis, and how þe samyn ar on na maner of way done. And quhen þe king has said þir wourdis, þan sall he say to þe fader or senatouris of quhilkis he first askis counsale: "O fader, quhat thinkis thow to be done in þis mater?" þan sal þe senatoure or fader þat is demandit be þe 5 king say in þis wise: "I decerne and Iugis all þir gudis or Iniuris afore rehersit to be recouerit with Iust & lauchfull batall. I consent hereto,¹ and decernis þe samyn to be done." Quhen þis senatoure has gevin this sentence in þis maner, þan sal þe remanent faderis & senaturis be demandit in þe samyn wise, 10 Ilkane in ordoure estir vthir; And quhen þe maist parte & nowmer of senatouris war foundin of þe samyn votis as þe first has schewin, and þe batall declarit Iust be generall consent of all þe ordoure of senatouris, Than It is accustumyt² þat þe faciall sall paſſ to þe out marchis of þe pepill quhilk Is to be Invadit be 15 þis batall, and bere in hand ane lance³ or ane darte, with þe poynþ of þe samyn brynt and scharpe, Or ellis hedit with Irne; And in presence of thre young children⁴ say þir wourdis: "Becaus þe prisk latyne pepill, Or ellis þe prisk latyne men, has⁵ faleȝit⁶ or done Iniuris aganis þe quirites & romane pepil, 20 Tharefore þe said quirites & romane pepil has commandit batal to be denunciȝt agains þe prisk latyne pepill, Or ellis þe quiritis p. 67. and senate of Rome | has consentit decretit and adiugit batall to be led aganis þe prisk latyne pepill. And for þir causis and ressouns⁷ I, þe preist faciall, with avise of romane pepill, makis 25 and denunciȝs batall to þe prisk latyne pepill and to þe prisk latyne men." And als sone as he had said þir wourdis he flang⁸ his lance or darte within þe landis of latyne pepill; And be this and siclike maner of way þe redreß was desirit fra þe latynis, and batall denunciȝt to thame. The samen maner of denunciacioun 30 of weris and desire of redreß was obseruate mony ȝeris estir be þe posterite of romanis.

¹ þairto.

² accustomit.

³ lence.

⁴ childeſne.

⁵ hale, *A.*; hes, *B.*

⁶ failȝeit.

⁷ resonis.

⁸ slang.

5

How Ancus wan sindri townis of Sabynis, and (61).
 transportit þe pepil þareof to rome; how latumo
 the riche citeȝane of terquyne come with his wiffe
 and gudis in rome and was namyt terquyne; Of
 þe vncouth mervel þat apperit in his viage¹ and
 how he was [left] tutoure testamentare to² ancus
 sonnys.

Ca. xiiij.

(XXXIII) Ester þat king Ancus had committit þe charge of
 all dyvynne and religious ritis to þe flamynis and vthir preistis of
 his realme, he rasit his oist and be preis of armes tuke ane riche
 and strang ciete of latynis namyt politore; Syne be exemplil and
 Imitacioun of vthir prudent kingis his antecessouris (quhilkis ekit
 þe romane empire be ressaving of þare vincust Inemyis within þe
 toun of Rome) ³ he transportit all þe pepill of politore to þe said
 toun.³ And becaus he persauit þat þe auld romanis had biggit
 sa mony houſſ ⁴ rising in grete nowmer about þe palice ryall, þat
 þai mycht noct haue sufficient and pleasand lugeing within þe
 toun; Attoure þe Sabynis and latynis be fouth and multitude of
 pepill had fillit all rowmes with þare houſſ ⁵ beside þe toure of
 capitoll & mont Celius; ffor þis causis Ancus dilatit ⁶ his ciete to
 mont Aventyne, þat his new pepill þe cieteȝanis of politore mycht
 Inhabit þe samyn. And to caus þe said mont Aventyne to be
 ekit with more frequent nowmer of pepill, he ekit to it new
 cieteȝanis of þe townes namyt | tellenes and ficana, eftir þat þe p. 68.
 samyn was subdewit to his empire. [and] eftir þis he returnit
 with his recent and victorius army to þe said toun [of] politore,
 becaus þe latynis began to garnis ⁷ þe samyn with new municioun
 and pepill, eftir þat It was left be him in his last Iournay,⁸ and
 finalie brocht þe samyn to vter euersioun, The wallis and houſſ ⁹
 þareof equate to þe ground, to þat fyne þat it suld noct be in

¹ wayage.² of.³—⁹ om.⁴ housis.⁵ houſſ.⁶ delataſte.⁷ granis.⁸ Iornay.⁹ housis.

tymes cummyng ane generall resset¹ to his Inemyis. At last þis marciall & maist werely prince transportit all his ordinance & (62). army to medulla, ane strang toun of latynis, quhare * It was fochtin lang tyme with variant & doutsum victorie ; ffor þe foresaid toun was strang be municions and weil garnist with men of 5 armes. And becaus þe romane campis stude opinlie afore þe said toun, followit frequent skarmussing² betuix þe romanis and latynis. At last Ancus come with þe hale power of his army aganis þe latynis, and put þame to vtir discomfitoure ; Syne returnit with³ huge pray of men & gudis to rome. Throw þis 10 victorie mony thousandis of latyne pepill war transportit fra þare native ciete to rome, to quhais habitacioun war gevin certane mansiouns beside the tempil of þe goddes murthea, to þat syne þat mont⁴ aentyne suld be coziunyt to þe palace. Attoure, mont⁵ Ianikle⁶ was ekit and drawin at þis tyme within þe 15 boundis of þis toun, Nocht for þat cauß þat the pepill had penurite of rowmes to þare habitacioun within þe toun, bot to þat syne þat þe said montane suld nocht be ane mvnicoun to ressait of Inemyis sum vthir tymes agane þe toun. It was þarefore found expedient þat þe said mont Ianikil⁵ sall nocht onelie 20 be drawin within þe wallis of þe ciete, bot als for commodite of passage, þat ane brig mycht be more esely drawin oure tiber fra þe said mont Ianikil⁵ to þe toun. This was þe first brig þat evir was made oure tiber, and was callit sublicius, þat is to say, ane brig of tre. Sic thingis done, king Ancus inclusit his toun in⁶ 25 p. 69. euery parte with ane fowsy,⁷ quhilk | was callit quiritium in þai dayis. This fowsy⁷ was þe mare strang defence to þe toun, þat It was drawin on plane ground on euery side. quhen Ancus had ekit his empire with sic south of pepill, began to rise⁸ Ilk day⁹ occult slauchteris and cruelteis in his ciete be confusit⁹ defference 30 of gude and evil werkis ; And þarefore to repreß sic Iniquiteis, ane presoun was edifyit in myddis of þe toun beside þe merket.¹⁰ thus was þe ciete of Rome nocht onelie dilatit with mare ampill boundis þan afore during þe empire of þis prince, bot als war

¹ resait.

²⁻³ om.

⁵ Ianicle.

⁷ fousey.

⁹⁻¹⁰ om.

² scarmuschung.

⁴ Ianicule.

⁶ on.

⁸ ris.

¹⁰ marcat.

ekit to þe senȝorie þareof mony vthir landis and prouincis liand about þe samyn. þe grete wod¹ [of] Mesea was tane fra þe empire of Veanis, throw quhilk þe empire of Romanis was dilatit with ampil boundis to þe seyis. he biggit als In þe mouth of 5 tyber þe ciete callit hostia, And mony Salynis² war edifyt³ about þe samyn. * And becaus his marciall dedis succedit with⁴ thir (63) and siclike feliciteis, he reparit þe tempil of Iupiter feretrius with mare ampil rowmes & magnificeunce þan afore. (XXXIV) quhill king Ancus was regnand thus in⁴ Rome, latumo, ane man of 10 Industry and grete richeß, left þe ciete of Tarquyne and come to rome, be esperance alanelrie & desire of honouris. This latumo had na hope to conques honouris or richeß in þe ciete of tarquyne, becaus he was cummyn of vncouth and strange blude, for he was son to Daramathus citeȝane of þe toun of corinthy, 15 quhilk was banist fra þe samyn be sediciooun and duelt with his wiffe in þe ciete of terquyne; On quham he had two sonnys, þat ane namyt latumo and þis vthir Aruns. latumo levit behind his fader, and was hale heretoure to his faderis heretage and gudis. Aruns deceissit⁵ afore his fader, and left his wife grete with 20 childe; and sone efir þe deith of Aruns deceissit daramathus his fader, quhilk havand⁶ na cognissance⁷ þat his sonnys wife was with chylde, left nane of his gudis be his testament to his nepote afore his deith. ⁸ This childe, quhilk was borne efir his | gude- p. 70. schirris deceiße and succeding to⁸ na portion of his gudis, was 25 namyt for his Indigence and pouerte Egerius. On the tothir side, þe grete riches þat latumo gat be his faderis deith rasit his mynde with gude curage. At last throw his gudelie behavingis and fame of his richeß, he maryit ane lady borne of Illuster & gentil lynage and blude, namyt Tanaquill. This woman was of 30 sa hie sprete, þat scho mycht nocht suffir hir husband to be estymeit⁹ with leß honouris þan efferit to his estate; and þarefore seing þe hethruschis (quhilkis war cietaȝanis of þe said

¹ god (!).² sabynis (!).³ edifyt.⁴ in to.⁵ deceissit.⁶ avand (!).⁷ cognossance.⁸ And succed-

ing to wes borne

eftir his gudeschir-

ris deith þis child

quhilk (!).

estemitet.

toun of terquyne) Vylepend **hir** husband becaus he was ane
 strangeare¹ and cummyn of vncouth blude, scho mycht nocht
 suffir þare vnykndeneß, bot sett aside all lufe and kyndenes [and
 fervent cherite] þat scho bure to **hir** natvie cuntre; And to bring
hir husband to more renoun and honouris, determit² to change **5**
hir habitacioun out of terquyne, And to leif þe residew of **hir**³
 dayis in Rome; ffor rome apperit moist ganand to vertwus⁴ &
 vailjeand campiouns, becaus þe samyn was ful of vncouth and
 new pepill, and every vertew sa apprisit in þe samyn þat ane
 man mycht cum þarethrow haistelie to hie nobilit and honouris, **10**

(64). was king of romanis. Siclike Numa pompilius was * brocht fra
 Cures his habitacioun, and maid king of romanis. And Ancus
 Marcius (quhais moder was ane Sabyne), Nocht vnlike to þe
 maneris of Numa, was þan regnand in rome. Thir and siclike **15**
 ressouns & desire of honouris persuadit lichtlie latumo (howbeit
 he and his moder war borne in þe ciete of terquyne) to leif þe
 samyn and to pas to rome. At last þis latumo and his wiffe
 Tanaquill war passand in ane chariot,⁵ with þar gudis tursit⁶ with

p. 71. þame in þare viage,⁷ and nere aplprocheand to mont Ianicle, **20**
 quhare suddanelie betid him ane vncouth aventure; ffor ane
 erne⁸ descendit suddenly out of þe are and tuke his hat⁹ of his
 hed, and with displayit wingis flew abone þe cheriot, berand þe
 hat in to hir clukis with grete noyiß and clamoure; syne returnit
 (as scho had bene with¹⁰ celestiall purviance send¹¹) & put þe hat **25**
 softlie on his hede agane; syne evanist without ony vthir dis-
 pleßer. It is said þat Tanaquill, richt expert in divynacioun
 of vncouth prodiges¹² (as vthir pepill of hethruschis ar) acceppit
 þis myrakil with grete Ioy, and embrasit **hir** husband, command-
 ing him to beleif gude fortoun appering; for þis wounder apperit **30**
 be þe Erne,⁸ þe foule of maist honoure, And descending fra þe
 maist sonsy parte of [þe] hevin, on þe left hand, and messinger
 to Iupiter þe god of maist renoun and prowes; & þe wounder

¹ strangeir.

⁴ verteweſ.

⁷ vayage.

¹⁰ send be.

² determit.

⁵ cheriot.

⁸ herne.

¹¹ om.

³ his, *A.*

⁶ turſt.

⁹ hair (!).

¹² prodiges.

done to þe hiest¹ parte of his body, þat is to say, þe hede; Syne rasing þe ornament þat was thareon hie in þe air, and reponyng² It with³ pleſſer, In signne þat he suld haue divyne and hie honoure with favoure of þe pepill. ffinaly⁴ latumo & his wiffe, 5 with þir and sic interpretaciouns of þis mirakil, enterit in rome and bocht ane houſ and lugeing in þe samyn; And was callit be þe pepill tarquynus priscus, becaus he was cūmmyn fra þe ancant ciete of tarquyne; And throw his wisdome and riches he was haldin in reuerence and grete veneracioun amang þe 10 Romanis. Attoure, he supportit the gude werde and fortoun (quhilk was prenostenate to him) be his gude behavingis⁴ and benyng speche, and conquest be his liberalite and bankettis sa mony tendir freyndis within þe ciete of Rome, þat the fame and renovne of his governance and vertew was brocht in þe kingis⁵ 15 palice; and finalie made him sa familiar to þe king þat he was * put baith on his private and public counsell, And did all (65). chargis quhilkis wer committit to him with grete prudence, baith in tyme of were and pece. And last of all (becaus he was found of sa hie experience in euery materis) he was left be þe king 20 tutoure testamentare to his barnis. (XXXV) Ancus rang xxiiij ȝeris abone þe romanis, equale baith in were & peace to ony his antecessouris in glore & crafty policy.

¹ hieast.

² roponyng.

³—⁴ favour of þe pepill fynalie haue devyne and hie honoure with pleſſer in signe þat he suld (!).

⁴ havingis.

p. 72. How priscus tarquinus was made king of romanis ;
 how he ekit þe sate of senaturis with ane hundredth
 faderis ; how þe Sabynis and romanis faucht aganis
 vtheris with vncertane victorie ; how þe divinoure
 cuttit ane quhitstane with ane rasoure ; how the 5
 Sabynis war sindri tymes discomfist and constrainit
 to gif collatia þare principale ciete to þe empire of
 Rome. Ca. xv.

Now war the sonnes of King Ancus nere þare perfectioun and
 lauchfull age, And for þat cauſ Tarquinus priscus lauborit þe 10
 mare ardentlie to mak þe Comites for creacioun of þe king.
 And quhen þe houre and day þareof was cummyn, he send þe
 sonnes of Ancus be crafty Industry to þe huntis. This tarquyne
 was þe first þat socht þe crowne of Romanis be ambicioun. It
 is said he made ane crafty and plesand orisoun to Induce the 15
 myndis of small pepill to his purpoiſ, saying he socht nocht ane
 new and vncouth thing or vnerd afore in rome ; And þarefore
 na Indignacioun nor ȝit wounding suld follow amang the pepil,
 Sen he was nocht the first, bot alanelie the thrid, strangeare þat
 desirit þe croun of Romanis. ¹ Tacius was nocht onelie ane 20
 strangeare and of vncouth blude, bot als Inemye to romanis ;¹
 And ȝit he was made þare king. Secundly, Numa havand na
 cognossance of Rome nor romane pepill was chosin but ony his
 solistacioun,² and maid king. And now thridlie þe said terquyne
 (66). (als sone as he had liberte and * power of him self) was cummyn 25
 with his wiffe and all his gudis to duell in Rome, and has
 spendit mare³ of his prudent age, þat is to say, sic age as was
 ganand for civil offices, in rome þan he had spendit in þe auld
 ciete of tarquyne, quhare he was bred and borne ; and now be
 lang⁴ accustum has perfitelie lernit all þe romane lawis⁴ with 30
 þare cerymonis and Institucions baith in were & pece vnder

^{1—1} om.² sollicitatioun.³ mair, B. ; made, A.^{4—4} om.

ane gude maister Ancus, ane prince of na litill estimacioun ; and has gevin his hale Ingine and besynes *nocht* onelie to obey the said prince | with faith amyte and *observance*, with all vthir p. 73. dewiteis possibill, bot als to *þe* *þe* pepill in þat samyn 5 maner. The romanis herand him reherß the *thingis* (quhilkis þai knew of verite) chesit him king with all þare consentis ; ȝit *noȝtwithstanding* mony his excellent vertwis the samyn ambi- cioun þat he had in sercheing *þe* crowne followit him during his 10 empire. This tarquyne, havand na les remembrance to stabil his empire *with* sikkir fermance þan to augment *þe* commoun weill, ekit *þe* seit¹ *with* ane hundredth senatouris, quhilkis war callit *þe* faderis of small pepill. This was done but dout be *þe* king to cauȝt thir faderis (sen þai war ekit to *þe* ordour of sena- touris be his Industrie) to stand his freyndis in tymes cummyn. 15 The first weris þat he made was aganis *þe* latynis, and sone estir he tuke be forcy violence ane toun vnder þare senȝorie namyt Apiola ; Syne returnit to rome with mare riche pray of men and gudis þan was presumyt, and þarefore he institute and made 20 plaisir with more magnificence riches and pompe þan ony his antecessouris did afore. he was *þe* first king þat assignit grete boundis within Rome to be playing places, quhilk placis war namyt Circus. Thir playing placis war dividit with sic ordinance amang *þe* faderis, horsmen, and vtheris nobillis of rome, þat 25 euery ane of þame estir þare estate had þare sete¹ edifyt for contemplacioun of þir playis. Thir seittis war namyt fori, and war rasit on certane stakis xij fute of hicht fra *þe* erde, þat thir foresaidis nobillis mycht *þe* more esely behald & vesy *þe* playis quhen þai occurrit. Thir playis war sa Ioyus² and sa full of 30 euery plesour, þat sindri valeȝeant³ campiouns and horsmen, specially of Ethruria, come to vesy *þe* samyn quhen þai occurrit. Thir sportis and Ioyus merynes continewit ȝerelie amang * *þe* (67). romanis, and war callit sum tyme the romane playis and sum tymes *þe* grete playis. Attoure, sindri placis liand fornens *þe* 35 obscure and private persounis, to be | edifyt be þame with p. 74.

¹ sait.² Ioyis.³ wailȝeant.⁴ marcat.

tavernis and galeryis¹ to sauf þame fra somer schouris or fra fervent hetis of þe son. (XXXVI) Tarquyne, gevand his Ingyne to eik þe commoun weill with þir and siclike policyis,² began to big ane wall of stane about his toun, and in þe mene tyme was Impeschit be þe weris of Sabynis ; quhilk mater was sa suddanely 5 attemtate,³ þat þe Sabynis war cummyn oure þe ryver of anieyn afore þe romanis mycht be reddy to resist þare Incursioun, throw quhilk the romanis war astonist with grete dredoure. Nockþeles þai met þe Sabynis, and faucht aganis þame, first with vncertane 10 victorie and huge slauchter on all sydis. At last quhen baith þir armyis war returnit to þare campis, and dressand þame with maist properant diligence to Invaide vthir with new bataill, king terquyne considerit and saw perfitelie the power of horsmen decay maist in his armye ; And for þat cauß he tuke purpois to eik new centuries to þai centuries quhilkis war devisit afore be 15 Romulus, namyt Ramnenses tacienses and luceres, þat þe doing þareof mycht remane in perpetuall memorie of his renovne and fame. In the menetyme Actius Nabius, þe maist excellent divinoure þat was in þai dayis, allegit (becaus Romulus did al his notabill actis be augurie and divinacioun of foulis) þat na 20 thing suld be changeit⁴ nor alterit but Iugement of þe foulis. Tarquyne tuke ane hie Indignacioun in his mynde þat þis divinoure Impeschit⁵ him of honorabill purpois, And þarefore in derision of his science and divinacioun said to him in þis maner : "Schaw me now be divinacioun of þi foulis, gif þe thing⁶ 25 be possibill to be þat I think now in to my mynde." And quhen þe said Actius Navius had fund⁷ be experience and augurie of þe foulis þat þe samyn thing (quhilk þe king thocht) was possibill and mycht sikkirlie⁸ be done, Than said terquyne : "I thockt in my mynde þat þow suld cut þat quhitstane in þi hand with ane 30 rasoure. Tharefore tak þat quhitstane, and do now the thing þat p. 75. þi foulis sa manifestlie schawis." It is said þat þis divinour cuttit haistelie the stane with his rasoure but ony obstakill. (68). The ymage of actius Navius was sett with hede courerit, *risand

¹ galreis.² polecijs.³ attemptate.⁴ chengit.⁵ empeschit.⁶ think.⁷ found.⁸ sickerlie.

on certane stagis towart þe left hand of þe counsel houſ, in þe samyn parte of generall convencioun quhare It was done, and þe quhitstane houng vp on þe samyn maner to be ane memoriall of sa vncouth and prodigious wounder to oure posterite. throw 5 þis wounderful mervell sic honoure and reuerence was gevin to auguris and to preistis and divinouris þareof, þat nathing was done mony þeris estir concernyng grete materis oþthir in tyme of were or pece but consultacioun of soulis. Attoure þe counsalis of pepil, þe rasing of armyis, and all hie chargis suld be scalit & 10 repute of na effect, without þe soulis had schawin ane notabill pronosticacioun for þe sickir felicite þareeftir following. And ȝit terquyne made na alteracioun nor change concernyng þe centuris of horsmen; howbeit he ekit þe samyn ordoure *with* mare nowmer, on sic maner þat j^m and iij^c horsmen war dividit amang 15 thre centuries. Thus war þe last centuries (quhilkis war now ekit) coniunit to þe first, but ony change or defference of name; And ȝit becaus þe nowmer þareof was doublit þe pepill callit þame þe new sex centuries. (XXXVII) king terquyne (estir þat his army was ekit *with* þis ordinance and new power) faucht þe 20 secund tyme aganis þe Sabynis; And howbeit þe romane army was more strang and pussant þan afore be þis new power of centuries, ȝit to support þe samyn was fundin¹ ane subtil slicht and craft of cheuelrie to distroy þare Inemyis. certane persouns war send out of þe romane Oist to þe rivere of Aniene, quhilkis 25 fand ane huge nowmer of treis liand on þe brais þareof; and quhen þir persouns had bound thir treis togiddir on þare maner, þai harlit þe samyn in þe streme of þe foresaid ryvere & kendillit ane huge fire abone þame. Thir treis finalie cummyn doun the ryvere of aniene war inflammyt cruelly be þe violent wyndis, and 30 styntit never quhil þai come rageand in maist terribil blesis throw þe toun of Sabynis to þe pillaris of þe brig; and becaus þe stoupis | and pillaris þareof war all of tre, they war haistelie brynt and resoluit in powder; ffor þe wyndis war grete, and maid þe fire sa bald þat It mycht never be slokynnnyt. This slicht and 35 crafty devise was na litill discomfitor to þe Oist of Sabynis,

¹ found.

quhilkis with haisty Irrupcioun war Ischit out of þe toun ; ffor
 estir þat þai war discomfist, þai mycht nocht fle as þai did afore
 oure þe ryvere, throw quhilk Incredibil nowmer of þame (quhen
 (69). þai had eschapit þare Inemyis) *perist in þe said rivere. mony
 of þare wapynnys and targis come fletand doun þe ryvere of 5
 tyber, and made þis huge victorie patent to þe pepill of rome
 afore ony sikkir tithingis come fra þare Oist to schaw þe maner
 þareof. The souerane glore of victorie succeding be þis batell
 was gevin to þe horsmen, ffor þai war arrayit in two wyngis,¹
 baith on þe richt and left hand forneñs þe sabynis. ffor quhen 10
 þai saw þe band of þare futemen clerelie discomfist, þai come sa
 fast to þare supporte on euery side, þat þai nocht alanelie dang
 and sloppit þe Sabynis legiouns, bot als put þame to flicht. The
 sabynis, discomfist on þis wise, fled with few nowmer to þe
 montanis ; for þe maist parte of þame (as said Is) was drevin be 15
 þe horsmen in þe flude, quhare þai perist. king tarquyne, think-
 and na thing sa gude as to follow feirslie on þir sabynis, quhil
 þai war astonist be þis effray & troubill, send all þe pray and
 spulezeis gottin be þis victorie with þe presoneris to rome. And
 becaus he votit to consecrate þe harnes² and armoure of his 20
 Inemyis to þe god vulcane, he collectit³ þe samyn togiddir and
 made ane sacrifice þareof estir his promys.⁴ Sone estir he rasit
 his baner, and with suddand Irrupcioun enterit in þe Sabyne
 landis ; And nochtwithstanding þat þe Sabynis faucht vnhappely
 in þis last battall, and had na esperance of bettir fortoun to 25
 follow, þit (becaus þai had na⁵ sufficient laser⁶ to tak avisement)
 þai come aganis þe romanis with ane haisty skarmusch. nocht-
 þeles þai war vincust as afore, & estir þat þai war brocht to
 extreme desolacioun, þai send þare legis to king tarquyne
 p. 77. desiring | pece, quhilk was grantit to þame vndir thir con- 30
 diciouns : (XXXVIII) That þare principall ciete, namyt collacia,
 with all þe landis liand to þe senzeorie þareof, sal be tane fra þare
 dominiou, and ekit to þe perpetual dominiou of rome. To
 kepe þis ciete was send Egerius, quhilk was brother⁷ to terquyne,

¹ weyngis.

² armes.

³ collekkit.

⁴ promes.

⁵ nocht.

⁶ lasare.

⁷ bruþer.

as afore Is rehersit, with ane garisoun and band of soudiouris.¹ The maner how þe collatynis war randerit to tarquyne followis. first war send certane oratouris fra þe collatynis, quhom king terquyne demandit in þis wise: “Ar ȝe send (as oratouris) be þe collatynis to rander baith ȝow and þame to be empire of Rome?” “We ar,” said þe oratouris. Than king terquyne said: “ar þe collatynis vnder þare awne power, but ony servitude of vthir pepill?” “þai ar,” said þe oratouris. “Wil ȝe rander ȝow and * þe collatynis with þare ciete, þare landis, þare marchis, ⁽⁷⁰⁾ watteris, tempillis & gudis, with al vthir dewiteis pertenyng ony maner of way to þame owthir² be law of god or man?” “We rander all,” said þe oratouris. “and I ressaue all,” said king terquyne.

How tarquyne dantit þe latynis, & gaif þare landis and cieteis to þe empire of rome; Of his magnifificent werkis; Of þe vncouth fire þat apperit on seruius tullus hede, and of þe interpretacioun þareof be tanaquill; how þe sonnys of Ancus war banist for þe slaunchter of terquyne; And how seruius tullus be slicht of tanaquil was made king of romanis.

Ca. xvi.

The batall of Sabynis endit in maner afore rehersit, king terquyne returnit with grete tryumphe & glore of victorie to rome, And sone esfir he rasit his army with fresch³ ordinance aganis þe latynis; and becaus he culd nocth persuade þame to . 25 gif him batall, he tuke be sindri incursiouns mony of all þare cieteis & landis, sic as war namyt cornikill, auld fuculnea,⁴ cameria,⁵ Crustumerie, ameriola, medulla,⁶ Nomentum. all thir

¹ soudiouris.²—³ pertenyng ony maner of way to þam oþervthir dewitis, wat-
teris, templis and
guddis with all (1).
³ fersche.⁴ fuculnea, *A.*⁵ chawmeria, *A.*⁶ medillia.

townis war owtir tane fra þe prisk ¹ latynis, Or ellis fra sic pepill as war ² rebellit aganis romanis and applauding to þe p. 78. opinioun of latynis. quhen tarquyne ³ | had dantit the latynis In þis maner, he began to do werkis of policy ⁴ in Rome, with mare coist ⁵ & magnificence than euer he did ony werkis of 5 chevelrie afore; and to þat fyne þat his pepill suld be in na les quiet but sedicioun within þe tyme of pece than þai war afore during þe tyme of were, he began to belt his ciete with ane strang wall of stane on euery side; for he had as ȝit nocht sufficientlie garnist þe samyn, becaus he was Impeschit (as said Is) 10 be þe weris of sabinis. sic thingis done, he drewe mony Closettis, ⁶ Condittis, & synkis fra þe hicht ⁷ of þe toun to þe merkett and vthir law partis þareof, to purge þe samyn of all corruptioun and filth; for on þe plane and evin ground mycht na (71). discensis ⁸ be maid for purgacioun thareof. And *quhen he had 15 done thir thingis with grete magnificence, he began to compes the foundment of ane tempill beside þe capitoll with large boundis; for he was votit in þis vthir bataill led be him aganis the Sabynis to dedicate ane new tempill to Iupiter. (XXXIX) The samyn tyme within the kingis palice happynnyt ⁹ ane 20 vncouth wounder: ane childe namyt Seruius Tullius was slepand, & in sicht of all þe pepill his hede apperit (as It war blesand) in ane ¹⁰ rede low. throw clamoure & dyn of pepill gaddering on all sidis to se þis wounder the king comperit, And quhen ane of his seruitouris had brocht wattir ¹¹ to slokkin þe fire 25 þat apperit on Seruius hede, The quene maid Impediment & wald nocht suffir him to slokin þe fire. At last quhen þe noyiſ was mesit, scho Inhibit þat þis child war trublit quhill he war awalkynnyt of ¹² his awne will; & als sone as he was walkynnyt þe low evanist. Incontinent Tanaquill tuke hir husband in ane 30 secrete chawmer, ¹³ and said: "Consideris þow þis childe, quhilk we haue nurist with sa vile habit? This childe sall nocht fail to

¹ *Third hand in B. resumes here (p. 81).*

² now.

³ terquiniss.

⁴ polesy.

⁵ cost.

⁶ closaittis.

⁷ heicht.

⁸ desentis.

⁹ hapnit.

¹⁰ a.

¹¹ vatis.

¹² vakiwnit on.

¹³ chalmer.

be ane grete releif and helpe to ws, quhen we ar trublit *with* doutsum chance or ony aduersite; herefore lat ws nuris¹ baith privatelie and opinlie the mater of sa grete honoure appering." It is said þai tuke þis childe estir þis and held him in þe place of 5 þare awne barnis, and maid him to | be nurist with sic vertew p. 79. and moral doctryne as wald raiß his sprete to attempt grete materis. It come al wayis (as þe goddis ordanit) this childe grewe *with* sa hie Ingyn and princely maneris, That quhen king terquyne had socht² in sindri partis quhare ony Illuster and 10 excellent persoun mycht be wourthy³ to haue his dochter in mariage, Thare was nane fund sa wourthy to be his maich as þe said Seruius, And sa þe king gaif him finalie his dochter in mariage. ffor quhatusmeuir cauß sa grete honoure was gevin⁴ to him, I can *nocht* beleif þat he was borne on ane servand or 15 was evir thirlit to ony seruice; ffor I am erare of þare opiniouen þat haldis quhen þe tovne of Cornikill was tane be romanis, The king of þe said toun namyt Servius tullius was slane; And amang mony sindri spulȝeis and presoneris tane in þe said toun the kingis wiffe namyt Corniculana was captive, and saiffit 20 (becaus scho was with childe) and send to rome. Tanaquil, herand⁵ þat scho was of þe lynage riall, wald nocht suffir hir to remane in seruitude amang þe remanent presoneris, bot held her *within* þe⁶ palice *quhil sho was deliuer of ane childe, quhilk (72). was namyt estir his fader Seruius Tullius; And þocht he was 25 nurist in þe said palice in familiarite of þe quene, ȝit becaus his moder was presoner be chance of fortoun, hir cuntre captive, and him self cummyn in his Inemyis handis, The pepill held him as borne of ane servand. (XL) This seruius (estir þat terquyne had 30 roung⁷ xxxvij ȝeris) was nocht onelie haldin in grete honoure & reuerence with king terquyne, bot als was haldin on þe samyn maner *with* all pepill and faderis of þe ciete. In þe mene tyme þe two sonnys of Ancus had na litill Indignacioun in þare myndis, þat þai war nocht allanerlie eieckit fra þare ryall and kyndelie heretage be dissate of þare curatoure, bot als war gretumlie

¹ nurice.³ vorthe.⁵ hering.⁷ rong.² soucht.⁴ giffin.⁶ hir.

displesit þat ane¹ man nowthir of Italiane nor romane lynage,
 bot of maist vnknawin blude, suld regnne² abone þame. ȝit
 was þare Indignacioun ekit with þe more haterent, þat þai knew
 weill þat þe croun wald nocth returne to þame estir þe deith of
 p. 8o. terquyne, Bot wald pas vnder | seruitude; ffor It apperit richt 5
 vnwourthy þat ane servand, borne of ane seruand, suld possede
 sa recentlie³ within þe space of ane hundreth ȝeris þe kingdome
 & ciete þat Romulus, þe god of romanis and gottin be ane god,
 had reiosit afore, sa lang as he levit in þis erde. Attoure, thir 10
 sonnys of Ancus thocht It was ane¹ hie dishonour to þare hous 10
 (quhil ane of þame war on liffe) þat þe kingdome of romanis
 suld nocth alanelie be patent to vncouth and strange blude, bot
 als to servandis. And for þir resouns þai concludit to repreß þis
 maist schamefull displeasur be þe swerde. And ȝit þe haterent 15
 proceeding be þis Iniure movit þame erare to execute þare Indig- 15
 nacioun on terquyne than on seruius; for terquyne (gif he
 eschapit) wald be throw his singulare wisdome þe mare active
 pvnisare of þare attemptatis þan ony private man; And þocht 20
 þai slew seruius, ȝit king terquyne suld fynd haistelie ane¹ new
 maich, and mak him heretoure to þe croun; And for þir resouns 20
 þai thocht na thing sa sikkir⁴ as to sla the king. To execute þir
 cruel attemptatis war chosin two hirdis of grete ferocite, quhilkis
 war accustomyt to mak plaisir and generall sportis for solace of þe 25
 pepill, and vsit to fecht mare with landwert staffis and axis þan
 ony marciall wappynnys⁵ of armour in þare gammyn.⁶ Thir two 25
 hirdis, armit on þis maner, come to þe porch afore þe kingis
 palice, And in maner of ane haisty bargane with schil noyis and
 (73). cry *drew all þe kingis apparatouris⁷ and gard to behald þare
 fechting. At last, quhen baith þir hirdis had callit fast apoun þe
 king, þare noyis and clamour come finalie to þe kingis eris, throw 30
 quhilk þai war baith brocht to his presence; And Incontinent
 Ilkane of þame began to cry and chide aganis vthir. þan þe
 servandis commandit þame to leif þare crying, And in þe mene
 tyme ane of þame begouth⁸ to schaw ane sportsum fabil. At

¹ a. ³ rychtuysslie (!) ⁵ mertiall wapnis. ⁷ apperetoris.
² rigne. ⁴ siker. ⁶ gamyn. ⁸ began.

last quhen þe king was behaldin¹ þis man maist ernistfull,² þat vthir lymmare³ rasit his ax and straik þe king on⁴ þe hede,⁵ & for ferþnes to | fle left þe ax stikkand in þe kingis hede;⁶ and p. 81. Incontinent þai gat baith out at þe dur. (XLI) Als sone as þir apparatouris⁶ (quhilkis war standand⁷ by) had tane vp the king swownand⁸ in þe dede-thraw, þe servandis followit sa feirslie on þir lymmaris, quhil þai war baith apprehendit. grete confluence of pepill ruschit haistely to þe palice, desiring to here þe cauſ of þis effray; And in þe mene tyme tanaquil gart cloiſ þe ȝettis of 10 þe palice, and quhen scho had Ischit þe chalmer of al persouns þat na man suld Iuge quhiddir he wald⁹ leif or de, Scho went with maist diligence to gaddir sic herbis as scho knew proffittabill to cure woundis, as sum esperance had bene ȝit of his liffe. At last, seing [þat] hir husband was dede, scho began to sail on 15 ane¹⁰ vthir burde, and callit servius hir gude-son haistelie afore hir; And eftir scho had schewin hir husband liand cauld and dede afore him, scho tuke þe said seruius be þe hand, and prayit him to suffer nowthir þe deith of his gude-fader to be vnpunyst, nor ȝit to suffir his gude-moder to leif in derisioun of Inemyis; 20 & said: "O son, gif þow be now ane¹⁰ man, the kingdome and croun of romanis Is thyne, ffor þe sonnys of Ancus (quhilkis has subornate þir lymmaris to sla þe king) may na wayis succede þareto. Now raiſ þi curage, & follow þe goddis as þi gouernouris, quhilkis has schawis¹¹ þat þi hede, sum tyme schynand 25 with divine bemys, suld cum to maist dignite & honouris afore þi deith. lat þir hevinlie & prodigius flammes raiſ now þi curage. Now is þe tyme to be awalkynnyt¹¹ fra þi slepe, for we (quhilkis war of mare vncouth and strange blude þan þow ar) has roung lang tyme in rome. And þarefore regarde nocth of quhat lynage 30 and blude þow art born, Bot consider quhat presentlie þow art; * And gif þi witt dekeyis¹² be this suddane effray, þan follow my (74). Ingyne and counsale." At last tanaquill, becauſ scho mycht nocth sustene þe noyiſ and clamoure of þe pepill desiring to

¹ behaldand.⁴ in.⁷ standing.¹⁰ a.² eirnislie.⁵⁻⁶ om.⁸ swonand.¹¹ avalknit.³ lymar.⁶ apparatoris.⁹ suld.¹² decaye.

here quhiddir þe king was levand or dede, past to ane hie wyndo
 p. 82. of þe palice fornens þe new | gate (ffor the king duelt beside the
 templ of Iupiter stator) and commandit the pepil to be of gude
 conforte, ffor þocht þe king was hurt be suddand aventure, þit
 þe wound was nocht Ingravin depe & now latelie vesyt and 5
 dicht, throw quhilk þe king was returnit to him self with gude
 rest; traistint þarethow all thingis to fall with sic felicite, þat þe
 king sall be sene within few dayis on þe samyn maner & estate¹
 as he was afore; and þarefore desirit þame, quhil he war con-
 valescit, to obtempir² þe command and chargis of Seruius his gude-
 son; ffor he suld execute all besynes pertenyng to þe king with
 gude Iustice. Sone eftir, Seruius come furth amang þe faderis
 clothit with þe Rob riall, and þe servandis of armes passand afore
 him, and sat doun pertly in þe sate ryall, gevand Iugement now of
 thir now of þai materis; and sum tyme schew him self as king to 15
 tak consultacion of vther greter materis. And howbeit tarquyne
 was deceissit, þit he causit his deith be hid certane dais, quhill
 he mycht vnder his name stabill þe kingdome of romanis to him
 with mare sikkir fermance. At last raiß ane lamentacioun with
 grete murnyng and teris in þe palice, throw quhilk apperit clerely 20
 þat tarquyne was deceissit. And in þe mene tyme Seruius was
 sa garnist be sindri buschementis of his freyndis and gude-willaris,
 þat he was þe first king þat rang abone þe romanis be consent of
 þe faderis without [ony] election of þe pepill. The sonnys of
 Ancus, herand (as þe quene shew) þat þe king was levand, and 25
 þe hirdis quhilkis war Instruckit to his slauchter apprehendit, and
 als seruius cumin to gret honoure & richeß, þai become disparit
 of ony releve,³ And to saif þare livis⁴ fled in strange and
 vncouth landis, namyt Pomesia and suessa, quhare þare eldit⁵ in
 miserye.⁶ 30

¹ astait.

² atempir.

³ beleve, *A.*

⁴ lyfis.

⁵ endit.

⁶ mysserre.

how king seruius maryit his dochteris¹ with þe sonnys (75).

of terquyne, and diȝvidit his pepill in sindri classis p. 83.
and centuris, and institute þe sacrifice lustrale ; how
he dilatit þe toun of rome with grete boundis, And
inclusit þe samyn with wallis and fowseis.

5

Ca. xvij.

(XLII) Quhill the sonnys of Ancus war banist in þis wise,
king Seruius began als wele with public as private counsale to
mak him self strang be affluence of riches. Attoure, þat þe
10 sonnys of tarquyne his gude-fader suld nocht haue sic Invy &
haterent aganis him for þe croun of romanis, as þe sonnys of
Ancus had aganis tarquyne, he maryit his two dochteris¹ on² þe
two sonnys of terquyne, namyt lucius terquyne and aruncius
terquyne ; ȝit he could nocht brek be witt and engyne³ of man
15 þe necessite and violence of fortoun ; ffor þe Invy & Impacience
of kingdome armyt thir persouns, quhilkis war alliate⁴ togiddir
with familiare and domestik tendirnes, to Invaid vthir with maist
tressonabill slaunchter and troubil. It happynnyt weill for þe
sikkir quiet and tranquillite of þe tyme present, þat Seruius was
20 constrenit to raiȝ ane army aganis the Veanis and Ethruschis, for
þe trevis war outrvn. In þis batall apperit weil þe singulare
vertew and gude fortoun of seruius, ffor be þe sammyn he gat
ane gloriis victorie of his Inemyis. At last, knawing⁵ sum
danger apperand to him, owthir be Inuie of þe pepill or þe
25 faderis, he returnit to rome and tuke purpos to mak ane maist
excellent werk of lang peace, to þat fyne That as Numa pom-
pilius was þe first authoure⁶ of all divyne religioun and lawis
within rome, sa suld he be authoure⁷ and begynnare of all
defference and divisoun of estatis within⁸ þe samyn estir þare
30 faculteis, that þe posterite and pepill estir following mycht vnder-
stand, be generall renoun and fame, in quhat sorte, In quhat

¹ douchteris.³ Ingyn.⁵ knawyn.⁷ autore.² apos.⁴ alyait.⁶ author.⁸ with, A.; wt, B.

digniteis and greis of fortoun, Ilk state was different fra vtheris.

(76). And for þis cauß he Insti*tute the cens¹, ane thing richt
 p. 84. proffittabil in tymes cummyn for þe empire of rome, That | the
 public chargis baith in tyme of were and pece² suld nocht be
 done be euyer man elike as afore, bot alanelie be þare faculteis 5
 and gudis. Than Seruius dividit his pepill in Classies³ and
 centuries,⁴ and discrivit þis ordoure be cens⁵, ane richt honorabill
 thing baith in tyme of were and pece. (XLIII) The first clæs
 was made of sic persouns as had ane hundred thousand brasin
 pennyis or mare of þare awne gudis, and of þir persouns he 10
 gaderit & made Lxxx centuries, Of quhilke þare was xl
 centuries of ȝoung and als mony of agit men, al participant
 togiddir with þis foresaid nowmer of gudis and riches. Thir
 agit men war ordanit to remane at hame ay reddy to defend
 the toun, And þir ȝoung men war ordanit to be reddy to paß in 15
 werefare⁵ aganis þare Inemyis. Thir centuries war commandit to
 bere wapynnys⁶ and armoure, sic as hewmontis, targis, butis
 and habirionis,⁷ al made of braß for defence of þare bodyis.
 Thare wapynnys⁸ to Invaid þare Inemyis war ordanit to be
 lancis, dartis, and swerdis; And to thir centuries of ȝoung men 20
 war ekit vthir twa centuries of smythis, nocht to bere armoure
 & wapynnys, bot alanelry to turß þe Munycioun & Ingynis of
 chevelry⁹ with þe centuries afore rehersit. The secund clæs was
 gaderit of sic persouns as had Lxxv^m pennyis in poiß, And of
 þir pepill ȝoung & auld¹⁰ war found xx^d centuries, and war com- 25
 mandit to bere þe samyn armoure & wapynnys as þe first classe
 bure, Except¹¹ þai bure buklaris in stede of targis, but ony habir-
 Johns.¹² The thrid classe was made of sic pepill ȝoung and auld
 as had fifty thowsand pennyis, with þe samyn¹³ array as þe secund
 classe had, but ony defference, Sauffing þai mycht nocht were 30
 butis. The fourt classe was maid of sic pepill as had xxv^m¹⁴ 14
 pennyis, And of þis classe¹⁵ was made als xx^d centuries; þare

¹ sens.

² pax.

³ classyis.

⁴ senturyis.

⁵ veirfair.

⁶ vapinys.

⁷ haberionys.

⁸ vappis.

⁹ chevillrie.

¹⁰ ald.

¹¹ excep.

¹² haberionis.

¹³ sam.

¹⁴ xxv thousand.

¹⁵ clauſ.

armoure was changeit, and þarefore þai mycht | bere na wapynns p. 85.
 bot dartis and speris. The fiste classe¹ was made of sic pepill
 as had xj^m pennys, & of þame was found xxx centuries quhilkis
 war commandit to bere sloungis² and casting stanis; And with
 5 þis last classe past þe cryaris, seriandis, & trumpettis,³ bugil-
 blawaris and menstrualis, and war devidit in thre centuries. All
 þe remanent pepil, quhilkis mycht nocht for þare pouerte be
 nowmerit amang þe statis afore rehersit, war callit þe last classe;
 and of *þame war found bot ane centurie, quhilkis for þare (77).
 10 pouerte war exonerate of all chargis of batall. The army of
 futemen ordourit and dividit with digniteis & estatis in maner
 afore rehersit, king Seruius tuke purpois to ordoure þe estate of
 horsmen, and made finaly xij centuries þareof, chosin of þe maist
 nobil and wourthiest persouns of his toun. [attoure] he made vþir
 15 sex centuries, and ekit þame to þe thre centuries quhilkis war
 devisit & institute⁴ afore be romulus, to remane vnder þe samyn
 names as þai war devinit be auguris; and to by horß to þir
 centuries was gevin x^m brasin pennys⁵ of þe commoun purß,
 and to nuris þe horß war gevin riche wedois, sic as mycht spend
 20 ij^m pennys⁶ of þerely Importance and rentis. All þir chargis
 afore rehersit war surelie translatit fra vexacioun & troubill of
 pure pepil to þe estate of riche and maist potent men; And
 þarefore quhare maist charge war gevin or sustenit for þe com-
 moun proffitt, þare maist honoure and dignite followit. Thus
 25 was nocht þe maner obseruate be þe remanent⁷ kingis twiching
 þe gouernance of þe empire as was obseruate be romulus; ffor þe
 suffrage was gevin be euery man elike in þe samyn gre and in þe
 samynⁿ faculte as he said. howbeit þare was sum defference of
 greis, ȝit It was ordourit⁸ in sic maner, þat Ilk man suld haue his
 30 awne voce & suffrage, and þe grete chargis to remane with þe
 principall and wourthiest men of þe toun. Of þis ordoure of
 horsmen war maist principal Lxxx, quhais wisdomes war first
 consultit quhen ony materis occurrit concernyng owþir public or

¹ clauß.⁴ Instite (!).⁷ Romanis (!).² sloungis.⁵ x thousand brassin penneis.⁸ ordanit.³ trumpatis.⁶ twa thousand penneis.

private chargis of pepill. And gif þir Lxxx horsmen war noct
 concurrand vnder ane mynde and wisdome to þe decision of sic
 p. 86. materis, þan was þe classe of þe first centurie of þe futemen to be
 consultit. And gif ony variance¹ (as seildin² happynnyt) was
 found in this first classe þan was þe secund Classe callit. All 5
 wayis na mater occurrit of sic difficulte, bot It was sufficientlie
 opynnyt & discussit³ afore it come to þe consultacioun of þe
 lawest Classe. Attoure, na persoun suld be movit with admiracioun,
 howbeit þis ordoure þat is in oure dayis be noct
 respondent to þe sovme of centuries made be seruius; becaus 10
 sen syne has bene made xxxv tribus,⁴ &⁵ þe nowmer þareof doublit
 with centuries of ȝoung and agit pepill: ffor as I beleif þe toun of
 rome was dividit be regiouns and montanis in sindri partis, and
 (78). euyer ane of þir partis war callit tribis, be *thirllage of tribute
 þat þai aucht to pay to þe king; ffor the tribute was equaly rasit 15
 on euyer persoun estir þe proporcione of his gudis and faculteis.
 Attoure, þir tribus⁴ pertenit na thing to þe distribucioun and
 nowmer of centuries. (XLIV) At last, quhen seruius had discrivid
 þe cens⁶ & taxacioun of euyer man estir his faculteis, with sic
 properant diligence as he mycht, he commandit vnder maist 20
 traist punycioun þat all þe cieteȝanis and pepil of rome, als weill
 horsmen as futemen, suld compere arelie on þe nixt morrow in
 þe place of generall convencioun, namyt campus marcius, arrayit
 in þe samyn centuries and ordinance as he afore devisit. And
 quhen þai war all assemblit togiddir in þis maner, he purgit 25
 þame be ane sacrifice namyt lustrale, maid in reuerence of þe
 goddis with schepe, swyne and bullis. This sacrifice made be
 seruius at þis tyme was namyt lustrale, becaus he ȝeid about
 þame and nowmerit euyer centurie and ordoure be þame self;
 ffor at þis tyme war fundin⁶ in gude nowmer within þe wallis of 30
 Rome Lxxx^m men. Attoure, It is said be fabius Pictor þe maist
 anciant historiane,⁷ þat þis nowmer was alanelry of sic men as
 bure wapynns⁸ and armouȝt. And þat þis nowmer mycht haue

¹ waryance, *B.* ;

vacance, *A.*

² seindill.

³ desensit (!).

⁴ tribis.

⁵ of, *A.*

⁶ found.

⁷ antient historiane.

⁸ vapnis.

þe bettir lugeing *within* Rome, king Servius dilatit þe boundis þareof, and tuke in twa montanis namyt quirinall and mont Viminall, throw quhilk þe wallis war schot out *with* mare magnificent boundis þan afore. And nocth alanelrie ekit he þir 5 montanis foresaid *within* rome, bot als ekit | the mont Esquillies p. 87. on þe samyn maner, and biggit his principall habitacioun on þis last montane, to mak þe samyn of mare renoun and honoure in tymes cuming. Estir þis he beltit the ciete with wallis, fousseis & trynscheis in all partis. Attoure, he gart leif wide boundis 10 baith outwith and Inwith þe wallis, callit pomerie. Sum men, havand na sicht bot allanerlie to þe latyne resoun of þis worde pomerie, belevit It callit postmeneum,¹ þat is to say þe boundis behind þe toun; bot þir men ar dissauit, for pomerie is callit ane certane boundis passand round about ony toun nixt þe wallis 15 þareof; quhilkis boundis war consecrate be þe Ethruschis with certane marchis be auguryis and divinacioun of foulis,² quhen þai tuk purpois to begyn ony tovne, *with* sic ordinance þat nowthir þe saidis placis liand Inwith þe toun suld be edifyit nor biggit * *with* ony houſſ, Nor ȝit the boundis liand vtowth³ þe toun telit (79). 20 or brokin to ony produccioun of cornes. Thir boundis, quhilkis lay in þis maner Inwith or outwith⁴ ony toun, war callit pomerie but ony vthir ressoun. Attoure, quhen ony toun was dilatit with mare ampill boundis þan It had afore, The pomerie was dilatit and consecrate in the samyn maner.

¹ *read* -merium.² fullis.³ outouth.⁴ outwt.

Of the tempill of diane made be seruius, and of þe
fatal kow; how seruius delt landis amang þe pepil,
and conquest þare benevolence; how tullia þe feirþ
slew hir husband to get lucius terquyne in mariage;
how scho persuadit him to sla hir fader, and how 5
scho rade on ane chariot¹ oure his body.

Ca. xvij.

(XLV) In to thir dayis was ane anciant and Illuster tempill,
biggit in² þe honoure of Dyane þe goddes in þe ciete of
Ephesie; quhilk tempill, as þe fame was in þai dais, was biggit 10
with generall consent of þe pepill of Asia. It happynnyt³ þat
seruius was loving gretumly⁴ þe said pepill, becaus þai be
generall avise⁵ beildit þe said tempill to þe honoure of þare
goddis. At last, quhen he had repetit oft tymes þe magnificence
p. 88. þareof amang sindri princis & nobilis of þe latyns, | with quhilkis 15
he was be prudent Industry makand maist ferme alliance and
concorde for þe tyme, he brocht þe latynis to sic purpois, þat
þai wer fullely accordit to big ane tempil with þe romanis in þe
honoure of þe foresaid dyane; ffor baith þir pepill with ane mynde
confessit þat rome was hede of þe warld, ffor quhilk þai haue 20
osttymes Invadit vthir. And howbeit þe desire and conques⁶ of
romane Impire⁶ apperit at þis tyme nocht possibill to succede
to þe latynis, becaus þai war brokin & oft tymes vnhappely
discomfist be þe said romanis, þit followit sic ane aventure to
ane⁷ preist of Sabynis, þat he belevit privatelie⁸ to conques⁶ þe 25
empire of Romanis. An husband man amang þe Sabynis had
ane kow, quhais incredibil bewte & magnitude was to þe grete
(80). admiracioun of þe pepill. *The horns of þis kow war affixt
mony ȝeris estir in þe porchis afore þe tempill of Diane for
ane vncouth and prodigius mirakill. The divinouris had ane 30
prophecy, þat quhatsumeir cieteȝane offerit þis kow to Dyane,

¹ cherioit.

² to.

³ hapisit.

⁴ grittumlie.

⁵ awiȝ.

⁶ Empyre.

⁷ a.

⁸ prevatlie.

his pepill and naciooun suld haue þe monarchy and perpetuall
 empire of þe warld. This prophecy and divinacioun come
 finalie to þe eris of ane Sabyne, quhilk was bischop of þe said
 tempill for þe tyme. þe Sabyne bischop (als sone as ane
 5 solempne and convenient day apperit for þe foresaid sacrifice)
 brocht þis said kow¹ to rome, and sett hir afore þe altare to
 haue made ane sacrifice þareof to Dyane. In the mene tyme þe
 bischop of Rome happynyt to cum be aventure in þe tempill,
 and seing þis kow (as þe fame afore had schewin) of sa huge
 10 quantite, come haistely to his mynde þe prophecy concernyng þe
 Immolacioun and sacrifice of þis fatall kow;¹ And to fruster þe
 sabyne bischop þareof he said: "quhy Intendis þow to offir ane
 prophane and pollute sacrifice to Diane, Considering þow suld
 first haue purgit þi self In þe quyk stremes of ane rynnand
 15 wattir?² pas þarefore to tyber, quhilk rynnys in ane law vaill,³
 and purge þi⁴ self." The sabyne | bischop, movit with vane p. 89.
 religioun, and þat þe sacrifice suld haue bene þe mare digne and
 acceptabill gif all thingis war done with maist ordoure in dew
 circumstance, And als þat þe werdis suld follow *with* mare
 20 fermance, he left the kow afore þe altar and discendit haistelie
 to purge him in þe river of tyber. In þe mene tyme þe romane
 bischop offerit þe kow to diane, quhilk thing was mervellus
 plesand and thankfull baith to þe king and pepill of rome.
 (XLVI) And þoche seruius had possessioun of þe crovn of
 25 Romanis be lang vse, ȝit becaus It come to his eris þat ȝoung
 terquyne murmurit him, Saying he vsurpit þe crovn but ony
 consent or avise of þe pepill, he sett his Industry to stabill
 his empire *with* mare fermance. and þarefore, to recovir þare
 benevolence and favoure, he delt amang þame equaly certane
 30 landis quhilkis war conquest afore be his weris. And quhen he
 was surelie aduertist of þare kyndenes, he demandit þame in
 þare convencioun gif þai desirit or wald command him to be
 king. be þis way he was declarit king *with* ma suffrage & votis
 of pepill þan ony vthir king had afore. And ȝit þis prudent
 35 Industrie of servius na thing mynist þe esperance þat ȝoung

¹ cow.² water.³ wale.⁴ pine.

(81). terquyne had to þe croun, bot erare gaif him mare *ardent
 Impulsioun to persew þe samyn þan afore; ffor he traistit,
 becaus þe landis afore rehersit war dividit be servius amang þe
 pepill but consultacioun of þe faderis, to fynd sufficient mater to
 bring him þarefore in haterent and displeseris of þe saidis faderis, 5
 quharethrow he mycht haue þe bettir occasioun to obtene his
 purpoiþ in þe courte. Attoure þis, ȝoung terquyne, namyt vthir-
 wayis lucius terquyne, was ane man of feirþ and birnyng spreit,
 and had ane¹ wiffe at hame quhilk held him in grete troubil and
 vnquiet. It come fynalie þat þe palice riall of rome was made 10
 ane notabill exempill of maist terribil and tragik cruelte, how beit
 þat þe samyn succedit² to þe grete commodite of romane pepill,
 þat throw þe haterent and vnsufferabil tyranny of kingis baith
 p. 90. þe commoun liberte mycht be more ripelie recouerit, | And þe
 empire gottin be sic cruelte suld be hyndmest empire abone þe 15
 romanis. And quhiddir this lucius terquyne was son or nevo
 to priscus terquyne, small Is defference,³ And ȝit I fynd ma
 authouris saying þat he was his son. allwayis he had ane
 brother, eldare of ȝeris þan he was, namyt Aruns terquyne, and
 with þir two brethir (as afore is rehersit) was maryit two dochteris 20
 of Seruius tullus, richt discrepant in þare condicouns & maneris.
 Peraventure þis was done be purviance of þe goddis, þat two
 feirþ & violent Inginis suld nocht be conionit togiddir in
 mariage; Or ellis I beleif It was þe chance of fortoun, þat þe
 empire of Seruius mycht endure þe langare, and þat þe maneris 25
 and condicounis of romane pepill mycht be þe mare notably
 reformat. ȝoung tullia, ane cruell and feirþ woman, was maryit
 on Aruns terquyne, ane meik and Innocent persoun. On þe
 tothir side, tullia þe eldest, ane meik and Innocent woman, was
 marijt on lucius terquyne ane¹ cruell & furius man. ȝoung feirþ 30
 tullia was euery day in mare anguiþ and sorow, becaus scho saw
 hir husband, Aruns terquyne, nocht gevin to maist audacite and
 auarice to attempt⁴ grete chargis. And þarefore scho gaif hir
 hert and hale affeccioun to lucius terquyne, saying he was ane
 man discending of lynage and blude ryall; and had hir sister 35

¹ a.² susceid (!).³ difference.⁴ attemp.

in constempcion, becaus scho had gottin ane¹ man to hir husband of mare effeminate sleuth þan ony woman. We se (as oft occurris) elike cumpanyis drawis to vthir, for ane¹ evill dede is ay ganand for ane vthir; ȝit þe begynnyng of al trubill risis² fra 5 ane woman. * This feirþ Tullia was oft tymes³ accustumyt to (82). haue secrete langage with þis said lucius terquyne, hir sisteris husband, and sparit nochþ to say to him maist Iniurius wordis of his brothir; and on þe samyn maner scho sparit nochþ as ane sedicious woman to speik maist odius⁴ wordis of hir sister to hir 10 awne husband, oft tymes⁵ allegiand him bettir to haue had ane chaist life, and hir sister to haue bene ane¹ wedo, þan to be maryit with ane þat was vnlike⁶ to him in condicioun. for þir ressounis It was nochþ profitabill to him to dul & paþ | oure his p. 91. dayis, nochþ be his awne bot be his wyffis⁷ sleuth; and⁸ gif þe 15 goddis had gevin⁹ to hir ane nobil man equale to hir corage¹⁰ and sprete, scho suld haue gart him within few dais reiose þe croun & diademe þat hir fader presentlie reiosit. This feirþ and cruell tullia armit haistely ȝoung terquyne to conforme him to hir cruelteis; And within schort tyme estir, quhen Aruns 20 terquyne and þe eldest tullia war deceissit, ȝoung¹¹ terquyne and þis feirþ tullia war maryit togiddir, howbeit Seruius nowthir assentit nor ȝit disassentit to þare mariage. (XLVII) Than Seruius be damage¹² of lang age was trublit Ilk day [mair] with new infirmite, throw quhilke þe realme was patent to mony 25 Iniuris; ffor quhen þis ȝoung tullia had slane be hir cruelte aruns terquyne hir first husband, estir þat lucius terquyne [had slane] his wife, be hant of maist vnnaturall cruelteis Scho fel Ilk day in new tressounis & crymes, and nowthir nyȝt nor day mycht suffir hir husband to haue rest. And þat þe slauchter be hir committit 30 suld nochþ be for nochþ, Scho began to reproche hir new husband, Saying þe defalt (þat hir desiris war nochþ completit) was nochþ for þat caus scho wantit ane¹ husband quhilke mycht suffir hir to leif vnder quiet and seruite, Bot erare becaus scho had nochþ ane

¹ a.⁴ hodyus.⁷ wifis.¹⁰ curaige.² riȝ.⁵ oftyme.⁸ for.¹¹ desessit, ȝing.³ oftymis.⁶ wnliklie.⁹ giffin.¹² dampnage.

husband þat thocht him worthy to be ane king, And becaus [þat] he wald nocht remember þat he was þe son of priscus terquynus, quhilk had ay mare desire to possede ane realme presentlie þan to leif in esperance sum tyme to haue It. "Gif þow be þis man" (said scho) "to quham I am fallin in new mariage, þan I wil call þe baith king and husband. gif It be vthirwayis, þan I think my mariage changeit ¹ in to werþ,¹ and succeding with þe mare infelicit, þat I haue done þe cruelte with my handis þat continewis þe in sleuth. And gif þi Ingyne is erekkit in more curage, þan belt þe with manhede to cum esely to þi purpois. 10

(83). for It Is nocht now necessare² to þe (as it was to *þi fader) to serche vncouth and strange realmes or citeis, sic as Corrinthy or terquyne, Sen baith þi domestic & freyndlie goddis, the ymage of þi fader, þe palice riall, þi kyndely & native heretage, & þe p. 92. name of þi | fader terquyne, has create the king and callis þe to 15 the empire þareof. And gif þow decayis als wele in thy manhede as curage, þan quhy dissavis þow thy awne ciete? quhy sufferis þow þi self to be estymyt þe kingis son and discending of his lynage riall? Returne erare shamefully to þe landis of Corinthy & terquynis. Returne agane to þi native cuntry, mare like in 20 condicounis to þi febill³ brother þan to thy vailȝeant⁴ and active fader." The feirþ tullia, be thir and siclike persuasions, armyt ȝoung terquyne to vsurpe þe crowne of romanis contrare the empire of hir fader, and mycht na wayis suffir him to haue quiet, Saying sen tanaquill (quhilk was ane⁵ strange and vncouth 25 woman) mycht attempt sa wechty⁶ & ponderus ane mater, to mak first hir husband [&] syne hir gudesoun kingis of Romanis, continually Ilkane succeding estir vthir be hir onely Industry; how and be quhat aventure mycht It fall, bot scho, þe kingis dochter, discending of þe blude ryal, suld haue ony Impediment 30 to raiþ and put doun kingis of Romanis at hir plesere? ȝoung⁷ Terquyne, Instrukkit be þir and siclike furyis of ane woman, Began to seirch⁸ þe myndis of þe senatouris and faderis of rome toward him, And specially þe myndes of þe faderis of small

¹—¹ to þe verþ,

³ fabill.

⁵ quhilkis was a.

⁷ ȝing.

² nesesar.

⁴ wailȝeand.

⁶ worthe.

⁸ seirþ.

pepill, Remembring þame of þe humanite and kyndenes done to þame be his fader priscus terquynus; And þarefore desirit þame to schaw þame benevolus to his grete materis quhen þai occurrit. Attoore, he tyistit¹ þe ȝoung² men of his ciete to his purpos with his liberalite and gudis, Promitting (gif all materis succedit to his desiris) to rewarde þame condingly to þare plesure; And þus he garnist and made himself strang in euery partis, Obieck- and þe vices of seruius. At last, quhen he saw þe tyme respondent to his besynes, he come armyt with ane strang band of weremen in þe counselhous;³ And þocheþ þe pepill war suddenly affrayit, he satt | doun in the kingis seit,⁴ as he wald p. 93. haue execute all chargis in þe kingis name. And Incontinent he warnit all þe faderis be ane⁵ officiare to convene in þe counselhous,³ to here quhat thingis war to be dressit be king terquyne. Mony of þe faderis⁶ convenit to þis convencioun. Sum of *þame war subornat and corruppit afore be his crafty (84). Industry to compere; Vtheris dredand sic thingis as mycht follow estir be his tyranny comperit, And war sa astonist be þis vncouth wounder þat þai traistit seruius to be slane. Alssone as þe faderis war generalie assemblit, terquyne began to speik maist vile and odious langage of Seruius, & repeting his lynage callit him ane servand borne of ane servand, quhilk estir þe petuouȝ slauchter of his fader tarquinius priscus had vsurpit þe croune, by þe auld lawis and ceremonis accustomat, but ony commites or 25 Interregne, but ony suffrage or votis of pepill, and but ony

¹ tistit.² ȝing.³ counsaillhouȝ.⁴ sait.⁵ a.⁶ Here (p. 97) the fourth hand in B. begins:—

Convenit to his conventioun. Sum of þaim was subornat and corruppit afoir be his crafty Industre to compere; wþairris dredand sik thingis as mycht fallow ester be his tyranny comperit, And war so astonist be wncouth wounder þat þai traistit seruius to be slane. Alssone as þe fadris war generalie assemblit, tarquine began to speik maist wile and odious langage of seruius, and repeting his linage callit him ane servand borne of ane servand, quhilk estir þe peiterus(!) slauchter of his fader tranqus(!) priscus had vsurpit þe croun, by þe auld Lawis and ceremonis accustomat, but ony commices or Interregne, but ony sufrage or votis of pepill & but ony

authorite of faderis, intrusit in the samyn allanerlie be dissate of ane woman. thus was he borne, þus was he maid king, and favorare all his dayis of sic vile and obscure pepill as him self, to þe haterent of al vthir honeste. "has he nocht latelie rest certane landis fra þe maist nobil and honest men of þe ciete, & 5 dividit þe sammyn amang þe maist vile persouns þareof? has he nocht put all þe hie chargis, quhilkis war afore commoun amang þe pepill, now allanerly to be rasit on þe nobillis? has he nocht institute the cens and estimacioun of euery mannis gudis, to cauß þe gudis of riche men to be þe more Invxit with þe pure 10 pepill, quharethrow he may dispone þe gudis quhilkis ar conquest be ws amang þe pure and Indigent pepill quhare he list?" (XLVIII) Seruius, aduertist be ane astonist messengere of þis assemblance and convencioun of pepill drawin be terquyne, comperit haistelie in þe porches of þe court & cryit with loud 15 voce, "O terquyne, quhat is þis þat þow Intendis to do? quhat malapert audacite has movit þe (during my life) to convene þe faderis to ony courte or counsell? Or quhat presumptioun has p. 94. armit þe to sitt in my sete?" Tarquyne answerit richt | feirly, saying he did nocht bot sat in his faderis sete, and had more 20

authorite of fadris, Intrusit in þe samyn alanelie be dissat of ane woman. Thus was he borne, thus was he maid kyng, and sauorar all his dayis of sik wile & obscure pepill as him self, to þe hatrent of all vthir honeste. "hes he nocht latelie rest certane landis fra þe maist nobill & honest men of þe ciete, and devidit þe samyn amang þe maist wile personis þairof? Hes he nocht put all þe he chargis (quhilkis war afor comoun amang þe pepill) now alanelie to be rasit on þe noblis? heſ he nocht Institute þe cens and estimatioun of euery mannis gudis, to cauß þe guddis of ryche mes to be þe moir Invxit wyth þe pure pepill, quhairthrow he may dispone þe guddis quhilkis ar conquest be ws amang pure & Indigent pepill quhare he list?" Seruius, aduertyst be ane astonyst messengere of his assemblance and convencioun of pepill drauin to tarquine, comperit haistely in þe porches of þe court and cryit with loud woce, "O tarquyne, quhat is þat þow Intendis to do? quhat malapert audacite hes mouit þe (duryng my lyf) to convene þe fadris to ony court or counsale? Or quhat presumptioun hes armit þe to sit in my sait?" Tarquyne answerit Rycht ferslye, saying he did nocht bot satt in his fadris sait,

resoun sen he was Iust heretoure þareto þan ony servand mycht haue to þe samyn; Affirmyng eik þat he was oure lang licent to þe said authorite in contempcioun baith of þe faderis & pepill of rome. In þe mene tyme raiß ane huge cry & noyiß be þe 5 favoraris of athir syde, throw quhilk sic confluence of pepill come haistelie to þe counselhous, þat nane of þir twa partyis apperit to regnne bot he þat was maist pussant, Or wan þe victorie be þe swerde. Tarquyne, seing þat It was necessare to him owtir de Or ellis assaileȝe extreme Ieo*perdie & chance of armes, gat (85).
 10 Seruius be þe myddill (ffor he was more wicht and lustiar þan þis vthir) & eieckit him *with* sic violence out of þe court, þat he fell certane stageis to þe ground. Sic thingis done, Tarquinius¹ returnit as afore to þe counsel to convene þe faderis. Incontinent king Seruius fled *with* all his garde & servandis to þe 15 palace,² And quhen he was cummyn (as discomfist and hertles wicht³) to ane place callit the cypriane rew, he come be aventure on ane cumpanye of armyt men quhilkis war send be terquyne, & was slane. It was traistit þat Tullia was þe doare of þis 20 cruelte, becaus scho abhorrit nocht with vther siclike cruelteis afore rehersit. All wais It is clerly knawin, þat eftir þe deith of hir fader scho come ridand on ane chariot⁴ to þe courte, And nocht being⁵ astonist be þe noyiß and fere of pepill þat war gaderit in þis terribill effray, scho cryit on hir husband terquyne to cum furth, and was þe first þat salust⁶ him king. Als sone as 25 scho had⁷ gottin hir husband in þe chariot,⁴ scho was commandit⁸ be him to returne hame with maist diligence; And quhen scho

And had mare Resoun sen he was Iust heritour þairto þan ony seruand mycht haue to þe samin; Affermyng eke þat he vas oure lang licent to þe said authorite in contentious bayth of þe [98] fadris and pepill of Rome. In þe meintyme Raiß ane huge cry and noys be þe fau[o]raris of athir syde, throw quhilk sic confluence of pepill come haistely to þe counsale houȝ, þat nane of thir two partiis apperit to þe Renge bot he þat was maist pussant, or wan þe wictory be þe sueird.

¹ Seruius, *both.*

² palice.

³ wyth.

⁴ chiriot.

⁵ And beard.

⁶ salute.

⁷ has, *A.*

⁸ *om.*

was cummyn to þe cipriane rewe, quhare þe templ of diane was latelie beildit, and turnand þe chariot¹ to hir ryght hand to haue passit be ane stay discente² callit Virbius³ to mont esquillis quhare hir lugeing⁴ was, The man þat led hir bridill stude astonist & wald noct⁵ pas fordwart,⁵ quhil he had schawin to hir 5

p. 95. þe body of hir fader liand dede in þe gate. ffollowis⁶ | ane shamefull and vnnaturall cruelte, and in memore⁷ þareof the place quhare þe deid was done Is callit ȝit þe vnhappy and cursit rew. This wod & waryit⁸ woman, be Impulsioun baith of þe furyis of hir husband and sister, draif þe chariot¹ oure hir faderis 10 body, with sic violence þat noct alanelie þe blude of hir faderis body spendit on hir face, bot als fylit⁹ baith hir clathis and þe cheriot; and scho beand fylit⁹ with his blude, scho returnit to hir lugeing. for quhilk horribill and Inhumane cruelteis & slauchteris the goddis war sa commovit¹⁰ and wraith, þat þe 15 empire of terquyne, conquest with sic waryit and evil begynnyng, behuffit to syny¹¹ with sic like ending. Seruius tullius rang abone þe romanis xlijiij ȝeris, In sic maner þat gif ony Iuste or temperate prince had succedit ester him, na reproche myght haue bene aganis his empire. Attoure, ane thing succedit to his 20

(86). souerane glore, þat with him endit baith Iust and resson*abil gouernance¹² concernyng þe kingdome of Romanis; And howbeit his empire was moderate and meik, ȝit becaus It was vnder þe gouernance¹² of ane allanerly persoun, Sum authouris sais the pepill thought to haue deprivit him fra his sete¹³ and dignite 25 riall, war noct⁵ þir Intestyne cruelteis afore rehersit, rising amang sa tendir freyndis, prevenit him þareof to deliuer þe pepill of all tyranny, baith of him and all vthir kingis quhilkis war to succede eftir him.

¹ chiriot.⁵ fordwert.⁸ variit.¹¹ finis.² discens.⁶ fallouis.⁹ fylid.¹²—¹² om.³ Werbius.⁷ þe memory.¹⁰ commvuit.¹³ sait.⁴ lugein.

5 Of King ^{Lucius} tempre he preode, and how he rang with
grete ^{tempre} and slanctier above he romantis :
how he was alligate with the prince of Latynis, and
gave ^{to} him the secrete of artillia he drownt be
ane tresscable sticht.

Ca. xix.

¶ XLIX. Six things done. Lucius tempre began to regne :
above the romantis, and was cald tempre he preode, becates he
wald ^{not} sett the body of Servius tullus his gode fader to be
burial : for he alight ^{hat} servius myght by his weyl viceroyt as
10 Romantis, he fader & god of romantis. This tempre saw al the
faderis & nobilitis of romane whilk he traist to have ^{oy} favour
to his godefader servius. forlik¹ his L² Tareynye knowyn³ p. 96
he kyngiche of romantis conques he him in ^{oy} evyl manere, as
he fyne ^{hat} vtheris sal ^{not} Invade him wth scithe⁴ tyranye
15 as he did servius, he garnis him with strong gardis of armys
men ; for he had na right to be kyng, but ^{except} he ^{almyghty} be violence, as he had rang beth the electioun of peple
and confirmation of faderis : thow whilk he come to sic paynt
hat becates he was odious to the peple thow his evyl⁵ tyranye
20 he myght⁶ have na confidence in hym. Therefore his empire
beleiv⁷ to be defendit vnder fere and dredore. And to caus
the peple to have he more fere and dredore in ^{hat} myndis, he
take cognicion⁸ of all capitale crymes aliancye be him self, but
oy consciencion⁹ of he senate or faderis. his war endit of his
25 nobilitis, but ^{oy} demeritis, be him slane, and vtheris banist ; &
nock aliancye¹⁰ he slew ^{hat} same whilk war Invyn¹¹ or suspectit¹² be
him, bot as all vther persons whilk he traist to gett ^{oy} pray
of godis. And socht he had mynyt¹³ aye grete nowmer¹⁴ of the
30 faderis be his way, he wald cheif¹⁵ name vtheris to put in ^{hat} pare
placis. To that fyne ^{hat} he ordore of senatoris for ^{hat} pare few

¹ ring.² forhouse.³ Lucius.⁴ knowand.⁵ sic.⁶ comit.⁷ myth.⁸ behif¹⁶ eye eye.⁹ consciencion.¹⁰ suspencion.¹¹ gret emperore.¹² gret emperore.

nowmer¹ suld be þe leß estymyt,² and the leß Indignacioun to follow³ to þe pepill þat na thing was done be þe said senatouris. This tarquyne was þe first amang þe romane kingis (as is writtin) þat put þe senaturis fra consultacioun of public materis; And als was þe first þat gouernit þe empire of Rome be domestic and 5 private counsale. Attoure, he denuncit weris and maid pece, confederacioun, and alliance with all pepill as he plesit, but ony avise of þe senate and pepill of Rome. he kest him in speciall to conqueß þe favoure of latynis, traisting be supporte of strange and vncouth pepill to be þe more sikkir amang his commouns and 10 ceteþanis⁴ of rome. And noct̄ alanelie had he familiarite with þe saidis princes of latynis, bot als made affinite with þame; for he gaif his dochter to octauius manilius, prince of latyne pepill. This manilius (as Is traistit) was þe son of vliisses, gottin on Circe p. 97. þe goddes, And be þis mariage he | conquest mony freyndis and 15 cosingis⁵ amangis þe latynis. (L) Now was terquyne of grete renoun & authorite amang þe latynis, quhen he be generall edict commandit þame to mete him beside þe wod of ferentyne aganis ane certane day. At þe said day and place be him assignit⁶ comperit gret nowmer⁷ of latynis richt arely in þe morow. 20 Terquyne kepit þe day bot noct̄ þe houre of þare convencioun, for he come noct̄ quhil ane⁸ litil afore þe occasioun of þe sone. Mony materis war despuite⁹ at þis convencioun amang þe latynis to sindri purpoisis. Turnus herdomitus, senȝeour¹⁰ of aricia, Invayit¹¹ feirly aganis terquyne, and accusit his absence, Saying 25 quietly It was na wounder þoth¹² he was callit terquyne þe proude; for how mycht he schaw him self more proude and arrogant þan to mok þe hale pepill of latynis, sen þe princes þareof war drawin be lang Iourney¹³ fra þare cuntre,¹⁴ And he þat devisit¹⁵ þis convencioun Is now absent. “þis Is done,” said turnus, “to 30 assailje oure pacience,¹⁶ to þat¹⁷ fyne þat gif we resaue plesandlie þe ȝoke¹⁸ of seruitude,¹⁹ he mycht²⁰ suddanlie (as him list) oppreß

¹ nomer.⁶ assingnit.¹¹ þat.¹⁶ patiens.² estymat.⁷ numer.¹² Iurnay.¹⁶ þis.³ fallow.⁸ a.¹³ contre.¹⁷ ȝok.⁴ ceteȝanis.⁹ dispute.¹⁴ deuisit, *B.*;¹⁸ seruitute.⁵ cosingis.¹⁰ Inwadit.devidit, *A.*¹⁹ myth.

ws. *quha Is he þat is now amang ws, to quham It is *nocht* (88). clerely apperit, bot terquyne desiris to haue empire abone ws? Attoure gif he be suspect¹ with his awne cieteȝanis, or gif his 5 cruelly tyraȝnyis has creditt² amang þe pepill [maist knawin to hym, It is leifull þe Latinis to beleif þe samiȝ, houbeit wncouth pepill suld gyf mair credence þairto. Attoure gyf þe pepill] & freyndis þat knawis him best be penitent of his empire, becaus he has slane ane parte þareof, vtheris banist, & of vtheris 10 confiscat the gudis to þare vthir³ poverte, quhat vthir confidence may þe latynis haue, bot þe said terquyne to Invaid⁴ þame on þe samyn maner?" Thareforȝ gif þai⁵ will here him, Na thing was sa honorabill as euery man to returne hame, & nane of þame 15 to obserue þe day and place set be terquyne mare þan he has kepit It be him self. "This seditious⁶ [and wariȝt] creature terquyne" (said turnus) "has done þir & mony vthir siclike 20 cruelteis, and be þe samyn falset & slichtis has conquest grete proffitt & richeſſ." quhen turnus was rehersing þir and vthir siclike wourdis, king terquyne comperit in Iugement and Interruppit his orison. Incontinent all þe latynis turnit þare bakkis 25 to turnus, & I began to salute terquyne. Than terquyne (estir p. 98. þat he was desirit be⁷ sic men as war maist approcheant⁸ to him to purge him of his lang tary) commandit silence, and said he was chosin ane amyabill compositoure⁹ of certane hie contencious fallin¹⁰ betuix twa Illuster persons, that ane þe fader and 30 þis¹¹ vthir þe son, duelling vnder his empire; and was taryit alanelry to recounsell þame to amyte and kyndenes. And becaus he had spendit þe day bigane in sic besynes, he suld glaidlie vaik on þame þe nixt morowe to dreſſ all materis as efferit.¹² It is said þat turnus was na thing satifit¹³ on his responſ, ffor he allegit [þat] na mater mycht be mare haistely discussit þan betuix þe fader and þe sone; ffor gif þe sone war *nocht* obeysant to his fader, he mycht *nocht* eschewe þe vengeance and maladictioun¹⁴ of þe goddis¹⁵ to fal on him. (LI) als sone as turnus þe senȝoure

¹ suspeckit.⁴ Inwade.⁷ wyth.¹⁰ falling.¹³ satyfitt.² credit.⁵ þa.⁸ approcheand.¹¹ þe.¹⁴ malidictioun.³ wter.⁶ sedetius.⁹ compoȝtowr.¹² afferit.¹⁵ goddefſ.

of aricia had rehersit þir Iniurius wourdis aganis þe king of romanis, he departit fra þe counsel. Terquyne tuke mare dis-
pleſſer¹ at his reprufe² þan he schew³ for þe tyme, And sett him Incontinent be sum tressonabill slichtis to sla þis turnus, to þat fyne þat he mycht Incuſ⁴ be his deith þe sammyn terroure to 5

(89). þe latynis be quhilk he opprest⁶ þe myndis of his awne *citejanis at hame. And becaus he mycht nocht sla turnus be opin violence, for he was ane prince of grete dominioun and rentis,⁶ Tharefore he opprest⁷ þe said turnus, ane Innocent man, be ane fals & dissimilit slicht,⁸ And be certane citejanis of aricia his 10 vnfreyndis⁹ he corruppit ane familiare servand of turnus, with large sowmes of gold, to suffer grete nowmer of swerdis to be secretelie hid in þe houſ quhare þe said turnus was lugeit. Als sone as þir slichtis¹⁰ war done in maner afore devisit, king terquyne, ane¹¹ litill afore evin, callit all þe princes of latynis to 15 ane counsell, as he war to be consultit with þame of¹² certane novellis & haisty materis quhilkis be divyne purviance taryit him p. 99. þis vthir day fra þare | convencioun, to þe safty baith of his life & þaris ; ffor he allegit þat turnus had devisit tressonably baith þe deith of him and¹³ all þe¹³ princis of latynis, þat he mycht be 20 him self alanelie reiose þe hale empire of latynis. Attoure, turnus but ony dout had execute his tressoun on þame þis vthir day, war nocht¹⁴ þe man þat he desirit maist was absent. in verificacioun hereof þe said turnus did maist cruelie Inway¹⁵ aganis him, becaus throw his absence allaneler he was frustrate 25 of his tressonabill purpoſ. Attour, gif It war lefull to schew þe verite, he doutit nocht bot als sone as þe princes of latynis¹⁶ was¹⁷ assemblit on þe nixt morow, þe said turnus sal cum armit with ane grete cumpany of conspiratouris to Inavid baith him and þame to deith ; ffor (as he was sickirlie Informat) þare was ane 30 huge nowmer of swerdis hid¹⁸ in his secrete chalmer to þe samyn

¹ diſ]pleſeir.

² Response.

³ sew.

⁴ Increſ.

⁵ epreſt (!).

⁶ grit dominat[i]oun

& mychtis.

⁷ epreſt (!).

⁸ dissimulat slyth.

⁹ wnfrendis.

¹⁰ slychtis.

¹¹ a.

¹² on.

¹³—¹³ wthir.

¹⁴ noth.

¹⁵ crevlye Invy ;

¹⁶ A. has cruelte.

¹⁷ latyne, A.

¹⁷ war.

¹⁸ had.

effect.¹ And gif thyre ymagineaciouns be vane, It may be sone knawin ; Praying þame þarefore to pas with him to þe said turnus² lugeing. þe feirþ Ingyne of turnus,³ and his dispitesfull orisoun made aganis terquyne In þe day afore, and als þe tary of þe said 5 terquyne, made þe mater þe more credibill to þe latyne princes ; ffor þai belevit þare slauchter alanelie differrit be his tary. Sone estir all togiddir þai past to turnus hous, *with* purpois to haue gevin na credit to þir ymagineaciouns afore rehersit, bot gif þe swerdis war found in his hous. At last quhen þai war cumin to 10 þe place desirit, þai⁴ stude awfully about turnus, quhare he was awalkynnyt out of his sleip ; And first tuke all his *servandis*, quhilkis (for þe lufe þai⁴ had to þare maister) maid debate. Alþ (90). sone as the * swerdis war drawin out of sindri partis of þe houſ 15 quhare þai war hid, þe tressoun apperit manifest to all þe princes of latynis, And Incontinent þai band turnus *with* chenȝeis and callit þe residew of latynis to ane counsell. In þe quhilkis (als sone as þe swerdis war producit afore þame in opin Jugement) all þe latyne princes war movit aganis him *with* sic Invy for the p. 100. | tresoun aganis þame compasit, that he was condampnit to de 20 *with*⁵ ane new maner of deith ; for þai band ane brandreth⁶ of Irne *with* mony grete stanys to his crag,⁷ and slang him in þe wattir⁸ of ferentyne, quhare he was⁹ perist.

¹ affect.²—³ *om.*³ tha.⁴ þa.⁵ to þe deth (!).⁶ brandrayȝit.⁷ craig.⁸ ane waltir.⁹ *om.*

how king terquyne was new confederate *with* þe latynis; Of his weris aganis þe wolchis, and how he wan sindri of þare townis; Of his grete magnificence¹ in bigging þe tempill of Iupiter; how he send sixtus tarquinius his sone to dissauë þe 5 gabynis,² and how he gat þame randerit to his empire be tressoun.

Ca. xx.

(LII) Tarquyne eftir þis callit þe latynis agane to a ne new counsell, and quhen he had lovit þame gretumlie³ for þare punycioun takin on turnus, quhilk he condingly deseruit, Intending be manifest cruelte and slauchter to haue changeit the gouernance of þare empire, he said⁴ as followis: “þe nobill princes and senȝeouris of latyne pepill suld leif be anciast richt vnder þe samyn confederacioun & amite with Romanis as did þe Albanis, Sen þe latynis ar discendit of þe ciete of Alba. And, as ȝe knaw, þe ciete of Alba *with* all þe pepill þareof war translatit to rome in þe tyme of Tullus hostilius.” ferther⁵ he thocht It more proffittabill for þare singuler⁶ and commoun weill to renewe band and⁷ kyndenes *with* [þe] romanis þat þai mycht reiose and be participant⁸ of þe hie felicite succeding to romanis, Than to suffr or abide sic hereschippis and direpcioun of þare landis & cieteis as þai sufferit afore, baith in [þe] tyme of Ancus marcius (91). and tarquinius priscus his fader. * The latynis war drawin *with* smal difficulte⁹ to þis alliance, howbeit be þe said confederacioun þe romanis war ordanit to haue empire apoun þe latinis; for 25 nocht onelie þe hedismen¹⁰ & princes of latynis stude afald to þe opinioun and mynde¹¹ of tarquyne, bot als the punycioun maid on turnus for his demeritis schew be notabill¹² document quhat frute mycht follow be þare rebelloun. Thus was þe band renewit p. 101. betuix latynis | and romanis, and charge gevin to all þe young 30

¹ mangn-.⁴ sayis.⁷ of.¹⁰ heidmen.² gibbanis (!).⁵ farþer.⁸ pertycipant.^{10—11} om.³ grittumlye.⁶ singulair.⁹ diffeculte.¹² nobill.

pepill of latynis to convene, armit in þare best awise,¹ aganis ane
 certane day beside þe wod of ferrentyne;² & quhen þai war
 assemblit be his edict at þe day & place assignit, þat nane of
 þame in tymes cummyng sal haue þare propir capitane or³ þare
 5 propir baner vnder þare awne empire, he mengit baith þe
 manipillis of romanis & [þe manipillis of] latynis togiddir, and
 stabillit baith þe two armyis vnder ane band; and quhen þe
 manipillis war doublit in þis maner, he made centuriouns abone
 10 þame to hald þame in array. (LIII) ffor þoche Tarquyne was ane
 wrangwis & Iniust⁴ king in tyme of pece, þit he was nocht ane
 evill capitane in tyme of were; ffor in chevelrie & science⁵
 militare he mycht haue [wele] bene comparit⁶ to ony his ante-
 cessoris, war nocht his slauchtir & tyranny⁷ obscurit þe glore of
 15 all his valeyeant⁸ dedis. Tarquyne was þe first of all þe romane
 kingis þat movit ony were aganis þe Wolchis, quhilkis weris con-
 tinewit⁹ eftir him mare þan ij^c¹⁰ þeris. he tuke fra þe said
 Wolschis baith þe tovne of pomecia & suessa be violence of
 armis, & in þe spuleȝeis & direpcions¹¹ of þe saidis tovnis, he
 20 gat xl^v¹² talentis als wele of gold as¹³ siluer; & be occasioun of
 þe said Richeß he tuke purpois to spend all þe money¹⁴ & riches
 gottin be þis aventure in ampliacioun of þe houß of Jupiter, þat
 25 be samyn mycht be biggit with sic magnificence¹⁵ & honour, þat
 It suld nocht onely be sufficient to ressaue him þat is prince of
 goddis & men, bot als wourthy to present þe maieste & empire
 of romanis. & quhen he had dantit þe Wolchis in þis maner he
 rasit his army aganis þe gabyis,¹⁶ & led þe batell aganis þame, with
 les esperance of victorie¹⁷ þat he assaleȝit¹⁸ afore þare principall
 ciete, namyt gabios, quhilk was nere approcheand to rome, & was
 doung fra þe oppugnacioun þareof alanelie be force of¹⁹ pepil;
 30 and finally he assailȝit¹⁸ þe said²⁰ toun be na fassoun of chevelry

¹ avyse.² florentyne, *A.*³ at, *A.*⁴ wrangus & on-Just.⁵ science & chewalry.⁶ comparat.⁷ tyranry.⁸ wailȝeand.⁹ contenvit.¹⁰ two hundredth.¹¹ derepcions.¹² fourty.¹³ als wele of (!).¹⁴ mony.¹⁵ mangnyfiscence.¹⁶ gabynis.¹⁷ witchore (!).¹⁸ assailȝit.¹⁹ befoir þe (!).²⁰ sam.

(92). hantit or accustu*myt be romanis, bot alanerlie be ¹ tressoun falset & slicht.¹ for efter ² þat he was rebutit at þe said sege, to cauſ his Inemyis beleve fermelie þat he had put ane end to all p. 102. his weris, he began to dissymyll his mynde | as he war gevin alanerlie to þe fundacioun of þe tempill of Iupiter, and to siclike 5 vrbane & civil ³ laubouris. And in þe mene tyme he falslie subornate & Instruckit sixtus terquinius (quhilk was his þoungest son of thre) to fle be crafty Industrie to þe gabyis, to complene ⁴ to þe said pepill þat he mycht [nocht] sustene þe Intollerabil cruelte of his fader aganis him, and to desire supporte of þame as Inemyis, 10 and to schaw þame þat he proude tyrant ⁵ his fader has turnit all his cruelte þat he before exercit ⁶ on vthir vncouth strange ⁷ pepill on his awn blude, And is penitent of his grete nowmer of barnis, And Intendis to mak his houſ als ⁸ ful of drery ⁸ sollicitude be slaunchter ⁹ of his awne barnis ¹⁰ As he made þe courte 15 afore be slaunchter ⁹ of þe faderis and senatouris of Rome; Traisting þarethow þat he sal leif nowthir heretoure ¹¹ nor barnis of [his] blude to succede eftir him. Attoure þe said Sixtus was sa narrowlie eschapit fra sindri armit men laid for his slaunchter, ⁹ þat he could find na place sikkir to him bot alanerly amang sic men 20 as war maist Inemyis to lucius terquyne his fader. forthir, to awalkin þame of þare vain beleve & erroris, & to þat fyne þat þai eschew þe Irrecouerabil dammage following haistelie to þare ciete & pepill, he schew how his fader was reddy ¹² to Invade þame [with battall, hovbeit he fenȝeit vnder culour to haue peace with 25 þame, and wald Invaid] vnavarnistlie, ¹³ quhen he saw occasioun & tyme. Attoure, gif þare was na place afore þame for deieckit & disparit men, force was ¹⁴ to him ¹⁴ to pas wilsum throw all Italie to seik supporte of þe pepill namyt Wolchis Equis & hennikis, ¹⁵ to se gif he mycht fynd be aventure þai pepill quhilkis throw 30

¹—¹ falset treason
& be slicht.

² torn out in A.

³ ciuell.

⁴ compleit (!).

⁵ terane.

⁶ asoif excersit.

⁷ vncovcht and
strang.

⁸ drery of.

⁹ slaunchter.

¹⁰ of his blude to
succede eftir him
(from below).

¹¹ heratour.

¹² rady.

¹³ vnavernystlie.

¹⁴—¹⁴ for to cum
throw (!).

¹⁵ wolches, eques and
harnikes.

Innatiue piete¹ list defend² þe barnis fra maist persecucion of þe fader; for peraventure sic pepill mycht fynd be him sum birnand curage & sprete to euery cais of batall þat may fall, als weill aganis þe maist proude tyrane his fader as aganis þe maist 5 feirß³ pepill in erde.⁴ At last quhen this sextus Tarquinius was maid⁵ to departe with hevy⁶ displeßer & Indignacioun, for þe pepill apperit na thing commovit be his lamentabil⁷ complaint and miserijs, The gabynis ressauit him with grete solemnité | and p. 103. glaïdnes; and bad him haue na admiracioun how beit his fader 10 tarquyne exercit⁸ siclike tyrannyis on his awne sonnys as he exercit⁸ afore on his cietežanis and compa*ñeounis; ffor quhen (93). þir pepill may nocht be gottin to satife⁹ his cruelte, he behuffit finalie to rage on him self. All wayis þe cummyng of þe said tarquyne was thankfull and plesand to þame, ffor þai belevit 15 within schorte tyme to transporte the batell appering fra þe portis of gabyses¹⁰ to þe wallis of Rome. (LIV) Ester þis, quhen he was admittit to sitt on þare public counsale, he said he wald assist to þe agit gabynis in all materis In quhilkis þai had experience & wisdome, Reservand þe charge & governance of batell to him 20 self; for in sic materis he had singulare prudence, becaus he knewe þe pussance of baith þe pepill, and vnderstude þe pride & tyranny¹¹ of terquyne was richt odious¹² to þe cietežanis & pepill of rome, Sen It was sa Intollerabill to his awne barnis. quhen Sixtus tarquinius had¹³ be þis slicht movit¹³ þe hedismen and principall 25 capitanis of gabynis to rebellioun aganis his fader, he past with ane cumpany of feirß young men, and made frequent direpcion and spuležeis in þe romane landis, to þat fyne þat ane vane faith suld Increß Ilk day mare and mare to all his wordis and dedis, quhilkis war alanelie instruckit to dissate and falsett. Nocht- 30 þeles he behauit¹⁴ him self at all Iourneis sa craftelie¹⁵ þat he was chosin finalie gouernoure of all þe gabinis army aganis his fader.

¹ Innatyfe peite.

⁷ lamentatioun and

¹² odius.

² diffend.

vofull.

¹³—¹³ movit þis slyth

³ force.

⁸ exercit (-cet).

by (!).

⁴ Rome.

⁹ satife.

¹⁴ behayffit.

⁵ makand him.

¹⁰ gabynis.

¹⁵ craftuſlie.

⁶ hevy.

¹¹ teraſny.

The fulich¹ gabynis, na thing knawing quhat suld be done, straik sindri small skarmischings² and batallis aganis þe romanis, & becaus þe victorie succedit offtymes be his Industry, as apperit, all þe princes and commouns of gabynis belevit halely þat he was nocht send to þame but speciall favoure of þe goddis, to supporte 5 þame in extreme dangere aganis þe cruell tyranny of his fader. Attoure, he behavit him so manfullie at euery lauboure & Ieoperdie, with sic liberalite amang his men of armis, & was sa ferventlie lufit with all þe pepill, þat he was als strang and pussant in þe ciete³ of gabynis as his fader tarquyne was in þe ciete³ of 10 rome ; and quhen he saw his power | sufficient to euery purpos and aventure þat myȝt fall, he send ane of his familiaris to Inquire at his fader in rome, quhat he desirit him to do ; for þe goddis has schewin to him sic favoure þat he may do allane all thingis þat⁴ he list in þe ciete of gabynis. king tarquyne gaif na 15 ansuere be his wordis to þis messinger, ffor he traistit⁵ him (as

p. 104. (94). I beleve) nocht faithfull,⁶ and for * þat cauȝt wald nocht oppin his mynde to him. Nochtþeles, he enterit with þis messinger in ane quiet garding, apperandlie as he had bene richt pensive⁷ and musing in his mynde of sum hie⁸ materis, ay gangand⁹ vp & 20 doun þe said garding but ony wourdis ; and in þe mene tyme he straik of þe hedis¹⁰ of þe chesbowis ay quhare þai war hiest¹¹ with his club.¹² The messingere in þe abiding¹³ & desiring his deliuerance was sa faschit and wery, þat he returnit to gabeos¹⁴ but ony ansuere, And schew to tarquinius sixtus all þe behavingis¹⁵ & 25 contenance (as he saw) of his fader, and how his fader list nocht denȝe¹⁶ to speik witȝ him, vncertane quheþir¹⁷ þe saȝyn¹⁷ was throw Ire or haterent þat he bure aganis his son, Or gif it was throw his¹⁸ Insolent pride. Sixtus tarquinius, knawing¹⁹ weill be þir hid conjecturacions quhat his fader desirit him to do, began 30 to accuse sindri of þe maist nobil [men] of gabeos for certane crimes be þame committit aganis þare ciete, & in þe mene tyme

¹ fulige.² skarmussingis.³ —⁸ om.⁴ as.⁵ traist.⁶ faȝfull.⁷ pensyf.⁸ he.⁹ ganand.¹⁰ heiddis.¹¹ þa vas heast.¹² cloub.¹³ in abydding.¹⁴ þe gabyos.¹⁵ hauingis.¹⁶ danȝe.¹⁷ —¹⁷ it.¹⁸ is.¹⁹ knauand.

slew ane parte¹ of þame as convickit² afore þe pepill, and vtheris slew be occasioun made aganis þame be Invie & parcialite of partie. Mony vtheris war slane opinlie be vane occasioun; vtheris (quhare na crymes nor occasioun or falt³ mycht be 5 gottin) war slane quietlie out of þe ciete, and vtheris war banist aganis þare wil; And schortlie all þe gudis of þame quhilkis war oþthir slane or absent was dividit amang þe commoun pepill, ⁴throw quhilk þe said pepill⁴ war sa tane with þe sweitnes of þe eschetis & gudis falling to þame be yþand slauchter of þare 10 nobillis, þat þai war blindit and mycht noct knawe þe haisty dammage cummyn to þare commoun wele; quhil at last þare ciete was sa destitute & nakit of wisdome, gude counsel & support, þat It was made ane facil pray | to the king of Romanis, and randrit p. 105. but ony straik in his handis.

15 how tarquyne biggit þe tempil of Iupiter; of sindri (95).
 prodigiis schewin to þe perpetuite⁵ and magnitude
 thareof; And how tarquyne⁶ send his twa sonnys
 to þe tempil of Apollo, to explore quhat was signi-
 fyit be þe prodigious eddir; and of þe respons gevin
 to þame; And how Iunius brutus kist þe erde.⁶
 20

Ca. xxi.

(LV) The ciete of gabynis tane, and þe pepill thareof brocht vnder romane empire be þir fals & tressonable slichtis, king tarquyne made pece with þe pepill namyt eques; Syne renewit þe band of confederacion with [þe] tuskanis. eftir þis settand 25 his mynde to policy and civil⁷ laubouris, first he made him to big þe tempil of Iupiter in þe mont terpey;⁸ And becaus baith he and his fader had made ane vow to big þis tempill, he thocht

¹ a pairt.² conviect.³ forfalt.⁴—⁴ om.⁵—⁸ om.⁶ erth.⁷ cyueill.⁸ tarpay.

he wald complete þe samyn, þat It mycht remane hereefir in memorie of his empire and name. Attoure, to mak þe said montane fre of al vthir religionis, and na goddis bot alanelie Iupiter to be adorit in þe samyn, he tuke purpois to distroy be augury all þe remanent tempillis and chapellis quhilk war biggit; and consecrate in It afore be auguryis during þe empire of king Tacius, quhen he, beand in extreme dangere, votit þame to his goddis for victorie to be had aganis romulus. It is said þat in þe begynnyng of þis magnificent¹ lauboure the goddis schew certane prodigiis and vncouth² mervellis, to signifie þe grete¹⁰ puissance and magnitude of romane empire; ffor quhen þe foulis be auguris had schewin þare evident takynnyss, to suffir all þe tempillis,³ quhilkis war biggit in þe montane foresaid, to be evertit and distroyit, ȝit þai wald nocht admitt þat þe tempill of þe god namyt terminus suld be distroyit. Of quhilk tempill was gevin¹⁵ þis augurie and divinacioun following: The vnchangeabil seit⁴ of god terminus (quhilk alanelie amang þe remanent goddis sal p. 106. abide vncasit away fra his mansioun) Signifiis all thingis | ferme (96). and stabill within his hallowit marchis. * This werde of perpetuite beand accepptit,⁵ followit ane vthir prodigie to signify þe magnitude⁶ of romane empire. apperit to þe lauboraris (quhilkis war castand vp þe fundament of þe said tempill) ane hede of ane man, with visage hale but ony corruptioun, quhilk signifijt þat þe said tempill suld be hede of þe warlde: for all þe divinouris and prophetis quhilkis war in þe toun, And als all þe divinouris²⁰ quhilkis war brocht out of hetruria, Interpret þis prodigie foresaid to þe samyn effect.⁷ All wayis þe mynde of [kyng] tarquyne was gretumlie⁸ troublit for þe Importabill expens⁹ daly rising¹⁰ be þis magnificent bigging; ffor all þe mony gottin be expugnacioun of þe ciete of pomecia, quhilk was ordanit to haue completit þis³⁰ tempill, mycht skarslie lay þe ground and first foundament¹¹ þareof. In þis mater I will gif mare credit to fabius Pictor, becaus he Is mare ancient historiographoure, Saying þe spuleȝeis

¹ mangn-.⁴ sait.⁷ affect.¹⁰ rysand.² wncouth.⁵ exceppit.⁸ gritt-.¹¹ foundment.³ templis.⁶ mangn-.⁹ expensis.

gottin in direpcioune of þe said toun Extendit alanelie to fourty
 talentis, than to gif creditt to piso saying the samyn¹ extendit
 to LX^m pundis of siluer; quhilk sovm² was put by (as said Is)
 to the bigging of þe said templ. ffor It is nocht lichtlie to be
 5 trowit þat sa huge money³ (as piso allegis) mycht be⁴ gottin in
 þe direpcioune of ony ane toun. Attoure, þare Is na toun nor
 ciete adiacent of sic riches, þat þe spuleȝe þareof mycht haue
 bene sufficient to haue rasit þe fundament⁵ of þis magnificent
 10 werk. (LVI) king terquyne, setting his hail Ingyne & Industry
 to complete þis templ, brocht sindri craftsmen out of hethuria;
 And nocht alanelie spendit þe public & commoun money⁶ of þe
 toun apoun þis tempill, bot als he thirlit⁶ al þe pepill of þe toun
 to ware þare laubouris on þe samyn. And how beit þe pepill
 15 war continually thirlit⁷ and occupyt⁸ be him als weill in werely
 besines as policye, zit þai thocht þare laubouris þe leȝt displesand
 þat þai war occupijt⁸ in bigging þe tempillis of goddis with þare
 awne handis. Attoure, quhen he had completit the said templ
 on his maner, | than he thirlit þe pepill to vthir mare besines of p. 107.
 20 leȝt honouris; and in sa fer as þai war occupijt with mare vile
 lauboure⁹ þan afore, þare lauboure⁹ was the mare displesand and
 sare; for þai war constrenit to mak public setis¹⁰ and scaffaldis in
 commoun placis quhare playis war devisit, and als mak ane
 25 commoun fousye¹¹ with rowme and depe synkis gangand vnder¹²
 þe erde to þe rivere, to purge þe toun of all * corrupcioun: And (97).
 to thir last twa werkis na magnificence may be comparit in oure
 dayis. king terquyne, estir þat þe pepill had bene continually
 exercit with þir and siclike laubouris, he considerit þat þe mul-
 titude of Idil pepill wald be richt chargeand to his toun; & þare-
 fore to ¹³ augment þe boundis of empire with new pussance, he
 30 send ane large nowmer of his pepill to new citeis, þat is to say
 to Circe and to signia, to þat fyne þat þai mycht, throw new
 Increscence and multitude of pepill, be sum tyme ane strang

¹ saming.

⁵ fundement.

⁹—⁹ om.

¹³ *Here the third*

² soume.

⁶ therlit.

¹⁰ saittis.

hand in B.

³ monei.

⁷ thirlit.

¹¹ fousei.

resumes (p.

⁴ bene.

⁸—⁸ om.

¹² onder.

113).

Municioune and defence, als wele be sey as land, to þe pepill of rome. quhill terquyne was doing sic thingis; apperit ane terribill prodigie afore his ene; for ane serpent slaid haistelie out of ane pillare of tre, and made þe pepill present for þe tyme sa astonist þat þai fled with grete dredoure to þe palice, throw quhilk þe king was strikin¹ haistelie with na les fere þan hevy thocht. And howbeit to þe Interpretacioun of public prodigiis alanelie war brocht þe prophetis & divinouris of ethruria; ȝit becaus þe king saw þis terribill sicht presentlie and was astonist þarewith, he set him with þe more diligence to knaw quhat thing mycht follow þareeftir; 10 And þarefore concludit to send to þe tempill of Apollo, quhilk was þe maist Illustir orakil þat was in þai dayis, for responß. and becaus þe mater was ponderus and (as he allegit²) concernyt maist him self, he wald committ þe respons³ þareof to nane vtheris bot to his awne maist tendir freyndis, And send finalie 15 his twa sonnys⁴ titus tarquinius and Aruns tarquinius in grece⁵ throw mony vncouth and vnkawin landis,⁶ and mare vnkawin seyis. titus and aruns⁶ (als sone as þai war direckit to þis message) tuke with þame lucius Iunius brutus, gottin on terquina the kingis sister. This lucius Iunius was ane man of mare hie Inginge 20 þan he semit for þe tyme; ffor quhen þe said lucius Iunius had sene his eldest bruthir, namyt Aruns Iunius, slane with mony of p. 108. all þe princes of Rome | be his [awin] eme⁷ lucius terquyne, he tuke ferme purpois to governe him in sic maner þat nouthir suld þe king haue occasioun to drede ony attemptatis following be his curage, nor ȝit to desire ony gudis pertenyng to his estate; Traisting (gif he war nocht estymait⁸ bot haldin in contempcioun) to be sovir⁹ of his life, quhare na defence apperit to sauf him be þe law. herefore be crafty Industry he dissimillit, 25 (98). & made him as he war * ane fule; And becaus he sufferit all his gudis and landis to pass as eschete and confiscate to þe King, he was callit to his surname¹⁰ Brutus, þat is to say ane dum¹¹ beist. Sa plesit þe goddis þat vnder þe schadow¹² of þat name þe

¹ stirkin, *A.*

⁴ tuo sonis.

⁷ om.

¹⁰ originally firmance in *B.*

² belevit.

⁵ grit (!).

⁸ estemait.

¹¹ doum.

³ responce.

⁶—⁶ om.

⁹ sober (!).

¹² schadow.

deliuer[ar] of romane pepil mycht hide his curage, quhil he saw
 þe tyme respondent þareto. It is said þat þis Brutus, passand to
 delphos þe tempil of Appollo with þir two sonnys of tarquyne,
 erare (as þai belevit¹) to haue bene fule þan companȝeon to þame
 5 in þare viage, brocht ane wand of gold Inclusit be his crafty
 Ingyne within ane club of horne, and offerit þe samyn² to Apollo.
 At [þe] last, quhen þir brethir war cummyn to þe said tempill,
 and fullelie satifijt be responþ of apollo of sic thingis as pertenit
 10 to þare fader, þai tuke new purpois in þare myndis, to Inquire
 quhilk of þame sal be king of romanis Immediateliestir king
 tarquyne. belive ane voce was herd out of þe lawest place³ of
 þe tempill, Saying : "O ȝoung⁴ children, he þat first kissis his
 15 moder sall succede ester tarquyne." Thir two brethir commandit
 þis respons to be kepit maist quiet, þat sixtus tarquinius þare thrid
 bruthir (quhilk was in rome) suld knaw na thing of þis respons,
 and haue na parte of Romane empire ; and þarefore kest Cavillis⁵
 amang þame twa, quhilk of þame suld kisþ þare moder first at
 20 þare cummyn⁶ to rome. Brutus knawing weil þis respons of
 Apollo fer discrepant to þare Interpretacioun and mynde, ruschit
 (as It had bene aganis his wil) to þe ground and kissit þe erde,
 becaus It was þe commoun moder of all mortall creaturis. Sic
 thingis done, þir companȝeounis maid þame to returne hame.

¹ beleiffit.² sam.³ plais.⁴ ȝing.⁵ keist kawellis.⁶ cuwing.

(99). | how king tarquyne segeit þe ciete of Ardea ; of
 p. 109. þe contenciounis amang þe princes of his army
 concernyng þare wyiffis,¹ And how tarquinius sextus
 deforsit lucres ; Of hir pietuous² complante and
 deith, And how king tarquyne with his wyif³ and 5
 barnis war exilit & banist Rome be Brutus.

Ca. xxij.

At the returnyng of þir companjeouns to Rome, þe romanis
 war makand grete ordinance to Invade þe Rutuleis. (LVII) ffor
 þir rutuleis had ane strang & riche ciete callit⁴ ardea, and war 10
 ane pepil in þai boundis and in þai dayis ful of riches ; quhilk
 thing was occasioun þat the king of romanis Invadit þame with
 batall, traistng becaus he was superexpendit in magnificent
 bigging with public werkis to recovir sum riches, be quhilk he
 mycht meiß sum parte þe haterent [of þe pepill] aganis him. 15
⁵ ffor þe said pepill war nocht onelie movit aganis him⁵ for his
 hie pride, bot als war movit aganis him for þe surfett⁶ spending
 of þare laubouris ythandlie in his erandis and biggingis. The
 ciete of Ardea was first assailȝeit, to se gif It mycht be tane be
 suddane assalt ; And becaus his purpos succedit nocht with 20
 felicite, he beltit þe toun on every side with strang mvinicioun
 and sege. The sege continewitt⁷ at the said tovne, as oft oc-
 curris quhare ony batallis ar mare langsum þan scharpe, Sindri
 of þe nobillis and princis of rome had fre licence to pas and
 repaß fra þe campe at þare plesoure, And vsit þarethrow to haue 25
 frequent bankettis⁸ & collacioun with vtheris. It happynnyt
 þat⁹ ane certane of þir princes war at banket¹⁰ with tarquinius
 sextus, Amang quham was terquyne collatyne, sone of Egerius
 afore rehersit, quhare þai fell in desputacioun concernyng þare
 wyiffis,¹¹ quhilk of þame had þe best wife ;¹² and becaus Ilk man 30

¹ wiffis.

⁴ namit.

⁷ continewing.

¹⁰ bankat.

² pietewis.

⁵—⁶ om.

⁸ bankatis.

¹¹ wifis.

³ wif.

⁶ surfeit.

⁹ at.

¹² wif.

lovit maist his awne wife,¹ þe contenciou was þe more vehement on athir side. At last tarquyne collatyne said It was *nocht* nedefull to multiply wourdis, for It mycht be patent be gude experience ²within * few houris² how fer his wiff¹ lucres past (100).
 5 all þe laif baith in bewtie | womanhede and gude maneris. "And p. 110. þarefore gif þare be ony strenth in oure ȝouth, lat ws ascend haistely on oure horȝ, and vesy be quhat Ingynis & exercicions³ euery ane of oure wyiffis⁴ ar presentlie occupijt; And þat to be apprisit allanerlie quhilk apperis to oure sichtis in oure vnwarnist 10 cummyng." Thir princis war hait and tane be⁵ þe wynis, & come haistelie to rome. At þare cummyng to rome þai vesyt all þare wyiffis,⁶ & estir þat It was fer *rvn*⁷ within þe nycht, thay passit⁸ all togiddir to þe ciete of collasia, and fand *nocht* lucres (as vthir princes wyiffis⁴ dois) passand hir tyme in lust & revel-
 15 ling⁹ with compaȝeouns, bot fand hir late at evin, sittand in þe myddis of hir houȝ amang hir vigilant *servandis*, gevin to lauboring of hir woll *with*¹⁰ vter besines. The victorie and loving of þis wyfelie¹¹ contenciou was gevin to lucres. Tarquinius collatyne & all þe remanent tarquinis his *cousingis*¹² and freyndis war 20 plesandlie ressauit be lucres; And becaus þe said tarquyne Collatyne wan þe victorie, he Intertenit þame *with* [the] maist humanite and chere þat he mycht. At þis collacioun Tarquinius Sixtus concludit secretelie be Inordinate desire to haue his plesere of lucres be violent deforsing, ffor baith hir fareness and 25 hir provin chaistite gaif occasioun þareto. Sone estir þe princes foresaid Returnit fra þare Insolent and barnelie contenciou to þe campe. (LVIII) Within few dayis estir, tarquinius *sixtus*, but ony avise¹³ of tarquyne collatyne, come *with* ane *servand* to Collacia, & enterit in collatynes houȝ, quhare he was curteslie 30 ressauit be þe *servandis* þareof, Nathing knawing his tressonabill purpois. And estir þat he was plesandlie tretit at his supper, he was brocht to ane chalmer within þe said lugeing to haue past

¹ wif.⁵ *with.*⁸ *past.*¹¹ wiflie.² *with* few wordis (!)⁶ wyiffis.⁹ Ravelling.¹² *cousignis.*³ exartiounis.⁷ Roun.¹⁰ and.¹³ awisse.⁴ viffis.

þe nyght ; howbeit he tuke litill rest, bot birnand in desire of his lust (Eftir þat all thingis apperit sikkir and all þe servandis in þe houſ on þare hevy slepe) he come with ane drawin swerde In his richt hand to lucres, quhare scho was slepand in hir bed, and held hir fast *with* his left hand, saying : “ O lucres, mak na 5
p. 111. noyis.¹ I am Tarquinius sixtus ; the swerde is here *þ* drawin in my hand ; thow shall de þarewith gif þow spekis ane worde.” Lucres, awalkynnyt² out of hir slepe be þis affray, was richt astonist seand hir deith sa nere approcheand. Than tarquyne (101). began to * confess þe vehement lufe þat he had to hir, & 10 besocht³ hir graciously⁴ to consent to his plesere ; And sum tyme began to boist hir with deith, assaileand mony wayis to haue turnit hir mynde. And fra he saw hir obstinate, & wald noct inclyne to his desiris by manassing⁵ & terroure of þe deith, he boistit hir by hir deith to bring hir to perpetuall dishonoure & 15 schame ; saying he suld first sla hir self, and eftir þat he shall sla ane of þe servandis of hir chalmer, and cast him nakit in þe bed with hir, to þat fyne the pepill may vndirstand scho was slane for hir maist vile & schamefull adultere.⁶ quhen this cruel man tarquinius sixtus had vincust hir obstinate chaistite be þis 20 last mynassing, & deflorit⁷ hir baith of hir womanhede and honoure, he departit *with* his victorius luste to þe campe. Lucres, richt soroufull⁸ and opprest *with* þis lamentabill displeſer, send ane messenger baith to hir fader & husband at þe sege of Ardea, to cum haistely to hir *with* all þare maist faithfull & tendir 25 freyndis, ffor sic ane terribil caſ was happynnyt þat It was necessare to þame to cum but delay. hir fader, namyt spureus lucreſius, come haistelie to hir *with* his [maist] tender freynde, namyt publius Valerius son of Valesius. And als hir husband Collatyne come *with* lucius Iunius brutus, ffor þai met hir writingis be þe gate quhen þai war cumand⁹ to rome. At þare cumming to Collasia þai fand lucres sittand full of sorrow and displeſer in hir bed. Als sone as hir freyndis apperit to hir

¹ noyſ.⁴ gratiuslie.⁷ deflourit.² awalknit.⁵ minassing.⁸ sorrowfull.³ besoucht.⁶ adultere.⁹ cuming.

sicht, þe teris began fast to hale¹ oure hir chekis, And quhen
 hir husband had demandit hir gif all thingis war sauf,² scho
 anserit, "nay; ffor na thing may be sauf to ane woman quhen
 hir chastite & womanhede Is gane. O collatyne, þe futesteppis
 5 of ane vthir man ar left in thy bed. The body³ is allanerlie
 defoulit, but þe sprete Is Innocent & clene. The deith sall be
 witnes þareof; ȝit gif me ȝoure handis & faith þat þe adulterare⁴
 and deforsare of me sall nocht leif vnpunyst. Tarquinius sixtus is
 10 þe man on quham I complene, quhilk was ressauit in my place⁵
 as freynd, howbeit he has schewin⁶ him maist cruell Inemye; for
 he come armit on me þis last | nycht, And has reft fra me (gif p. 112.
 ȝe be men and wourthy to be levand) all my joy and solace⁶
 to his pestilentius ples⁷er." hir fader, hir husband and remanent
 15 freyndis made þare aithis in solempne⁷ maner to be revengit on
 þe deflorare of hir honoure. Syne * made hir consolacioun in (102).
 hir sorow and troubil, Saying sen scho was opprest be violence na
 cryme may redounde to hir, bot alanerlie to tarquyne hir de-
 florare; for hir mynde & nocht hir body faleȝeit,⁸ And for þat
 20 cauȝ na schame nor dishonoure myȝt be Imput to hir. Than
 said lucres, "ȝe sall haue sone experience quhat punycion⁹ my
 body deservis;¹⁰ ffor þoȝt I haue assoleȝit¹¹ me fra consent of
 þe tresoun committit aganis my husband, ȝit I wil nocht exemne
 & deliuer me fra þe punycioun þat I haue Iustlie deseruit, And
 25 to be ane notabil exemplill¹² þat na vnchaist woman sall leif be
 Imytacioun¹³ of lucres in tymes cuming." Scho straik hir self
 with ane dagare¹⁴ (quhilk was hid vndir hir clathis) to þe hert,
 & fell to þe erde on hir said dagare.¹⁴ hir husband, hir fader, &
 remanent freyndis gaif ane lamentabill cry. (LIX) Lucius Iunius
 30 brutus, seing þame sa ouresett with pietuous¹⁵ doloure, pullit
 haistelie þe dagare out¹⁶ of þe¹⁷ wound þat was¹⁷ springand with
 huge stremes of blude, And swore with solempnit aith as followis.
 "Be this blude, maist chaist afore It was deflorit with Iniure and

¹ haill.⁶ solais.¹⁰ desyris.¹⁴ dager.² saif.⁷ soleempt.¹¹ assolȝeit.¹⁵ sa petewis.³ bode.⁸ faleȝeit.¹² exemplill.¹⁶ furth.⁴ adultrair.⁹ pvnition.¹³ Imaginacioun (!).¹⁷—¹⁷ vond Than.⁵ plais.

tyrannye¹ of kingis, And be þe goddis (quhilkis I tak in witnes
 of þis my solempne² aith) I sal persew lucius tarquinius þe
 proude, his waryit wiffe,³ and al þare barnis and freyndis with
 fire and swerde and al vthir dedelie violence (þat I may do) to
 þe deith, And sal nouthir suffir þame nor nane vthir creature for
 þare offence to regnne abone þe romanis." And quhen he had
 made this solempne aith, he deliuerit þe dagare first to collatyne
 hir husband, Syne to lucrisius and valesius hir vthir freyndis.
 All þir had grete admiracioun how and be quhat divyne puri-
 ance this new curage & Ingyne was enterit in þe mynde of brutus ; 10
 And Incontinent as þai war commandit be him þai swore & made
 þare aithis in his maner, Throw quhilk þai war turnit fra soroufull
 teris and murnyng in maist rageand haterent & Indignacioun to
 p. 113. revenge þe oppres|ion done to lucres, And followit haistelie
 brutus as þare capitane and ledare to confound and aluterlie 15
 distroy þe auctorite of kingdomes. And in þe mene tyme þai
 bure furth þe body of lucres out of þe chalmer quhare It lay
 to ane commoun place quhare maist confluence of pepill was,
 þat þai mycht be sicht of þis vncouth and terribill dede draw
 king tarquyne and his barnis in þe haitrent and Indignacioun 20
 (103). of al þe pepill. * Than Ilk creature beheld þis cruelte, and
 lamentit It on þe samyn maner as It had bene done to ony
 ane of þame self, And complenit pietuously þis oppressioun and
 violent Iniure done be lynage and blude riall of Rome. The
 soroufull contenance of lucresius hir fader movit þe pepill to 25
 continuall teris. Than brutus reprevit þame of þare effeminate
 murnyng, Saying It semit þame erare, sen þai war romanis and
 nobil men, to rusche haistelie to harnes and revenge þis terribill
 & Importabil cruelte be þe swerde on þare Inemyis and doaris
 þareof, þan to lament þe samyn be commiseracion of teris. In- 30
 continent þe maist feirß and vailjeant campions of al þe toun
 of Collasia come⁴ armit in þare best awise, and sone eftir followit
 þame all þe ȝoung⁵ men þareof. Sic thingis done, þai left ane
 buschment of armit men in collasia, to kepe þe portis þareof sa-
 cloiþ þat na aduertising of þare purpois suld pas to tarquyne & 35

¹ tyrane.² solempn.³ vif.⁴ coume.⁵ ȝing.

his sonnys ; Syne past with þe residew of þare army arrayit vnder þe gouernance of brutus to rome. Als sone as þis armit cumpany come to rome, þai made ane huge effray ¹ and noyß ² in euery partis þareof quhare þai come. Attoure þe pepill war þe mare 5 astonist, þat ³ becaus þai saw the principall men of þare ciete pas amang þe factioun of þis new cumpany, And Iugeit þarefore It was na vane thing, bot erare proceeding be grete consultacioun þat movit þame. And belive ⁴ þe abhominabil dede & cruelte foresaid, quhilk made sa huge effray in Collacia, Is divulgate on brede 10 in Rome, and causit þe pepill to rusch out of all partis þareof to þe merket. Incontinent ane officiare warnit þame all to compere afore brutus the tribune of þe garde (for he was cled at þis tyme with þat office). Than brutus maid ane orisoun afore þe pepil ^{p. 114.} with ane vthir mynde and Ingyne þan he had schewin afore thay 15 dayis, ffirst aduertising þe pepill of þe violence and lust of Tarquynius sixtus and of his odius deforsment made on lucres, and of hir miserabill deith, and of þe desolacioun of lucresius tricipitin hir fader, to quham þis violent oppressioun apperit mare miserabill and vncouth þan was hir deith. Als schew to þame 20 þe pride of Tarquyne, and of þe continuall miserie and lauboure to quhilkis þe pepill war thirlit be him in bigging ⁵ of fowsyis ⁶ Closetts and condittis vnder þe erde ; And how þe Romanis (quhilkis war afore men ^{*} of armes and dantaris of all pepil liand (104). about þame) war made þan bot vile lauboraris ; And als remembrit 25 þame of the vnwourthy slaunchter of Seruius tullus þare last king ; And how tullia king tarquinis cursit wife rade oure hir faderis body in ane cheriot, ⁷ for quhilkis þe goddis be Inuocacioun ⁸ of opprest pepill apperit to punyß ⁹ þare Iniquiteis. I beleif Brutus, with thir and mare penetrive wourdys opinly rehersit in his orisoun 30 (as þir present harmys and tyrannyis gaif occasioun for þe tyme), movit þe pepill to sic Indignacioun þat þai abrogate þe empire of þe kingis, And denuncit lucius tarquyne, his wife and barnis, as Inemyis to be banist out of rome. Incontinent brutus with ane

¹ affray.

² noyß.

³ om.

⁴ belyf.

⁵ biggin.

⁶ fouseis.

⁷ cheryoit.

⁸ Inmolatioun.

⁹ pvnice.

cumpany of feirß and ȝoung men (quhilkis with gude will gaif þare names to stand in ordinance and to raiß ane armye aganis þe king) past to Ardea, quhare he was liand for þe tyme, and left spureus lucresius president of Rome, with ane gude cumpany of armyt men to sauf þe samyn fra [the] tarquinis. In [the] myddis 5 of þis effray tullia, þe cursit spous of tarquyne, fled out of þe toun with maledictioun of men & wemen in all partis quhare scho come, Criand vengeance on hir for þe terrible and waryit dedis be him committit. (LX) Tarquyne þe proude, astonist be þis affray (quhen þe rumoure þareof apperit in his campe), made 10 him with maist diligence to paß to rome, to meiß þe trubil appering; And in þe mene tyme brutus went by the gate þat p. 115. he suld nocht mete him, for he was adjuertist of his cummyng. All wayis vnder ane tyme brutus come to ardea & tarquyne to 15 rome, bot þe ȝettis war closit to tarquyne, and him self exilde. The campe reiosing with grete blythnes¹ ressauit brutus as capitane and deliuerare of þe toun fra þe tyranny² of kingis. All þe kingis sonnys war banist on þe samyn manere. Two of þame followit þare fader and fled eftir to þe toun of tere³ amang the Etruschis. Sixtus tarquinius past to þe toun of gabijis his 20 native realme, quhare he was slane in recompensacion of þe grete murdir⁴ and slauchter made be him afore in þe said toun. Lucius tarquinius þe proude rang abone þe romanis xxv ȝeris. Thir sevin kingis rang fra the begynnyng of rome to þe deliueraunce þareof (105). fra þare empire ij^e xluiij ȝeris. Two consullis war create * eftir þe 25 proscriptioun of kingis in Comites centuriate be auctorite of þe president, be commentaris of Seruius tullus. lucius Iunius brutus and lucius tarquinius collatinus was made þe first Consullis⁵ of Rome.

And sa endis here þe translacioun of þe first buke of titus liuius fra þe begynnyng of rome.

30

¹ blythnes.² tirane.³ Teir.⁴ murthir.⁵ consaill.

| Here begynnys the secund buke of titus liuius of his first (106).
decade fra he begynnynge of rome. p. 117.

How Brutus solistit¹ þe pepill to mak þare solemne
aithis, neuer to suffir ony kingis regne abone þame ;
5 how Tarquyne collatyne renuncit þe consulate, And
how all þe tarquinis war banist oute of rome.

Ca. primo.²

FR A thens I will discribe the dedis of Romane pepill, frelie
10 deliuerit of all servitude baith in were³ and pece, and
declare þare ȝerelie digniteis and empire, mare pussant be
lawis þan ony force of pepill ; And how þe pride of þis last
king made⁴ commoun liberte richt plesand to þe pepil ; ffor all
kingis afore him rang in sic wise⁵ þat euery ane of þame mycht
haue bene Iustly namyt foundaris of rome, in sumparte ekit be
15 þare Industrie to romane pepill. It is nocht to be doutit bot
þe samyn brutus, þat conquest⁶ sa hie & souerane glore in
banysing [of] þe proude king, suld haue done maist odious
myscheif aganis þe commoun weill, gif he, be oure haisty desire
of liberte, had deponit ony of þe kingis afore rehersit⁷ fra þare
20 em*pire and kingdome. quhat trubill and Irrecouerabil hármes (107).
suld haue followit, gif sa mony cumpanyis of hirdis and stran-
gearis,⁸ fugitive fra þare native cuntrieis, had Invadit vthir with
tribuniciane contencious, havand liberte as þai plesit in þe ciete,
and frelie deliuerit of al fere of kingis and punyciou following.
25 quhat myscheif had followit, gif sa strange & vncouth pepill had
maid debate aganis þe faderis in ane vncouth cite, afore the

¹ solist.

³ veir.

⁵ vyȝ.

⁷ rehersit.

² xxij.

⁴ hes maid the.

⁶ conquest.

⁸ strangeris.

affeccioun¹ of þare wyiffis and barnis, Or afore the swetenes² of native cuntre (to quhilk men³ bene nocth haistelie³ acquentit), had confederit þame with societe of Romanis. for all thingis quhen þai ar ȝoung,⁴ and nocth cummyn to perfeccioun, mycht haue sone bene distroyit be discorde; and now, becaus þe romanis has bene nurist be soft and temperate empire, þai ar brocht to sic firmance þat þai may with ripe and strang pussance p. 118. sustene | the plesand frute of liberte. how may In sa fer consider the begynnyng of romane liberte⁵ þe bettir⁵ þat þe empire of consullis Is ȝerelie changeit, erare þan to haue mynyst ony thing pertenand⁶ to þe dignite ryall. Thir first consullis bure þe samyn privilege⁷ & ornamenti during þare auctorite as þe kingis afore rehersit⁸ bure during þare empire; ȝit þat þe pepil suld nocth be astonist nor more affrayit þan afore, gif baith þir consullis had apperit in þare sicht Clothit as kingis with purpore⁹ 15 and dignite ryall, Brutus be consent of his colleig come first to sicht of pepil with habit and ornamenti of kingis. This brutus was na les scharpe kepare¹⁰ of romane liberte þan recouerare þareof; ffor he was þe first þat solistit þe romane pepill, richt desirus of þare new liberte, to swere with solempne aithis nevir 20 to suffr ane king to regnne abone þame, to þat fyne þat þe myndis of þe said pepill suld nocth be brokin be sollicitacioun, requeist, nor proffitt¹¹ of kingis estir following. and to þat fyne þat þe pluralite & frequent nowmer of faderis suld mak þe senate & court þe more pussant & strang, This brutus ekit þe ordoure 25 of senatouris, quhilkis war mynist afore be tyranny of king tarquyne, to þe auld nowmer of iij^c faderis chosin of þe maist nobil persouns amang þe horsmen. It is said þat þis brutus devisit be his prudence quhay¹³ suld be callit faderis, and quha conscriptj, amang þe senaturis; ffor conscriptj war callit þe new 30 (108). faderis chosin at þis tyme to fulfill þe auld nowmer¹⁴ of faderis¹⁴ afore mynist. It is na littil admiracioun to consider how proffitt-

¹ effeccioun.^{5—8} om.⁹ in purpoir.¹² thre hundreith.² sueernes.⁶ perteneng.¹⁰ keippar.¹³ quha.^{3—3} nocth be haisty.⁷ preulaige.¹¹ propheet.^{14—14} om.⁴ ȝing.⁸ rehersit.

abil þis ampliacioun of new faderis was to continew þe ciete in concorde, & to conferme þe myndis of þame to þe pepill. (II) sic thingis done, þe consulis made solempne sacrifice to þare goddis, and becaus þare was certane public sacrifices quhilkis 5 war accustumate¹ to be done alanelie be kingis (howbeit þe pepill had na desire of kingis) ȝit þai create ane preist to be king of all divyne seruice; and þat þe name of þis king suld nocht be noysum nor suspicius to þare liberte, becaus þai tuke presentlie sa | diligent care² in keping þareof, they subiect³ him to þare p. 119.

10 bischop. I wate nocht gif þe faderis kepit Iust mesour in all thingis concernyng þare liberte, for þai garnist the sammyn nocht onelie with materis of grete valoure, bot als with thingis of small effect. The name of tarquyne Collatyne (howbeit he neuer offendit⁴ aganis þe private or public weill of rome) was richt 15 odious to þe pepil; ffor þai allegit þe tarquynis war oure lang hantit with þe croun of romanis. þai began be priscus tarquynus; and þocht seruius tullus rang estir him (as vncouth heretoure severing þe tarquynis ane certane tyme fra þe croun) ȝit tarquyne þe proude recouerit It agane as It had bene his 20 propir heretage, conquest be tyranny and slauchter. And now, instantlie estir þe proscripcioune of tarquyne þe proude, the empire is returnit to tarquyne collatyne; And sen nane of þe tarquynys can leif in private life, þare name apperis richt suspicius to þe liberte latelie recouerit. This rumoure raiȝ pece and 25 pece throw þe ciete, assailȝeing⁵ þe myndis of pepill to depone terquyne collatyne of his auctorite. Than brutus, seand þe pepill solist with þis suspicioun, callit þame to ane concioun, [and] began to remember þame of þare solempne aithis latelie made, to suffir nane regnne⁶ abone þame in ony tymes cummyng.

30 Attoure It suld be defendit be vter diligence, þat na thing remane within þare ciete þat may be noysum to þare liberte; And als na thing þat may garnis þe samyn suld be contempnit. ffor þir ressounis he was constrenit to releve⁷ þe mater, quhilk he wald neuer haue done, for þe affeccioun⁸ þat he beris to his

¹ accustomyt.² cure.³ subiecket.⁴ offendis, A.⁵ assailȝeand.⁶ to rigne.⁷ Reveill.⁸ effectioun.

freynd, war nocht þe fervent lufe þat he beris to þe commoun
 weill inforsis him þareto. "I think" (said Brutus) "þoure com-
 moun liberte is nocht recouerit as ȝit with sickir¹ fermance,
 (109). becaus þe lynage and name riall Is nocht *alanerlie as ȝit in
 þoure ciete, bot is als decorit with ² maieste & ² honouris, howbeit 5
 þe sammyn Is baith noysum & contrarius to þoure liberte. I
 pray þe, tarquyne collatyne" (said brutus) "to deliuer ws with þi
 awne beneuolence of all fere of lucius terquyne þi cousing. we
 p. 120. afferme³ þat þow has eieckit | the kingis out of rome. Do furth
 thy devoure,⁴ & tak away þat odious name tarquyne fra þe pepill; 10
 and gif þow dois It plesandlie, þi cietejanis sal nocht onelie
 rander to þe al þi gudis, bot als sall supporte þe samyn be þare
 liberalite gif þow lakis. departe as freynd, and deliuer þe pepill
 of þe terroure (quhilk perchance is bot vane) in to þare myndis.
 for It is sa rutit in þare breistis, þat þai beleive⁵ all empire of 15
 kingis sall fynys in þare ciete, als sone as þe tarquynis ar put
 away." Tarquyne collatyne, herand þis new and suddane mater,
 was sa astonist þat þe admiracioun þareof inclusit his voce but
 ony speich. And quhen he was begynnand ane orisoun to þe
 pepill, for purgacioun baith of his name & Innocence, The 20
 faderis stude about him, requiring him plesandlie to pas of þe
 ciete. ȝit nane of þame movit him sa mekil as Spurius lucresius,
 his gude-fader; for he was ane agit man of grete dignite, and be
 sindry persuasions exhortit þe said tarquyne, to suffir him self
 to be vincust be vniuersale consent of þe ciete. Tarquyne, 25
 dredand þat he suld nocht onelie tyne his gudis, bot als be
 eieckit out of þe ciete with mare dishonour, renuncit Wilfully þe
 consulate, & departit out of rome with all his gudis to þe ciete
 of lavyne. Than brutus, be avise of þe senate, commandit all
 lynage and blude of tarqwinis to be banist out of rome. 30

¹ siccar.

²—² maist.

³ efferme.

⁴ divore.

⁵ beleif.

how publius Valerius was made consull in place of (110).
 tarquyne collatyne ; how sindri ȝoung princes of
 Rome war punyst for þare tressoun ; and how þe
 gudis of tarquynis war confiscate amang þe pepill.

Ca. ij.¹

5

The tarquynis beand exilit in þis sorte, brutus made publius Valerius his colleig be comites centuriat, for be supporte of þis Valerius, he eieckit the kingis out of rome. (III) and þocht na thing apperit mare sikkir þan haisty and maist dangerous weris 10 approcheand be þe tarquinis, ȝit þe samyn ² was mare laitheand ³ þan it semyt. fforthir, þe commoun ⁴ | liberte sa recentlie Re- p. 121. couerit, was nere loist ⁴ be falset and tressoun, howbeit na thing was belevit les þan þe samyn. In þe romane ciete war certane ȝoung & Insolent persouns, discending of na obscure linage ; 15 And becaus þai war companȝouns to tarquinis, þai war licent during þe empire of kingis to frequent þare lustis with mare opin renȝeis þan ony vtheris, and war accustomyt to leif in princelie maner. Thir ȝoung nobillis, seand equale administracion of Justice, complenit lamentably amang þame self þat þe commoun 20 liberte was turnit ⁵ to þare seruitude. Apperit þarefore na thing sa gude as ane king ; for ane king was ane man fra quhilk þai mycht purches ony thing, quhethir ⁶ It war richt or wrang, & afore him was place of mercy estir offence, & rewarde followand estir gude dedis. And þocht he was sum tyme commovit, he 25 mycht estir be recounself with his liegis, havand all tymes braid defference betuix freyndis & vnfreyndis. be contrare þe lawis hantit amang thir new consullis was ane thing richt Vnmercefull, & mare halesum to vile bodyis þan to ony Illuster persouns ; ffor þe samyn has nowthir opin ⁷ renȝeis, nor ȝit remissioun quhen 30 ony cryme Is committit. herefore apperit rycht perrellus to euery

¹ xxvij.² lacheand.⁴ lost.⁶ quhiddir.² Second hand in B. resumes (p. 129).⁵ torned.⁷ appin.

man, amang sa mony errouris & defaltis, to haue na defencis bot
 (111). allanerlie be þare Innocence. * Thir ȝong¹ nobillis beard solist
 and wery in þare myndis for þe seuerite of lawis þan vsit abone
 þame, come þe legatis of king terquyne, desiring alanelry þe
 gudis left behynd him and his freyndis to be deliuerit, but ony 5
 mencioune to desire him restorit to his kingdome. ffra þir legatis
 had schewin þare message afore þe senatouris, followit sindri dayis
 estir grete consultacioun quhat was to be done; for gif þe gudis
 of tarquinis war nocht redressit, The sammyn mycht be Iust cauß
 of batall to þe tarquinis to Inavid þe ciete. And gif þare gudis 10
 war deliuerit, þai suld be sufficient mater and helpe to þe tar-
 quinis to continew in þare weris aganis þe ciete. quhil þis mater
 was dependant² afore þe faderis, Thir legatis began to assale³
 p. 122. grete materis be mony sindri wayis, & nocht onlie clamit | opinly
 restitucioun of þe gudis of terquyne, bot als began to trete 15
 secretlie how þe said terquinis mycht maist eselye recover þe
 kingdome. And becaus Ilk man belevit þame to be richt de-
 sirus⁴ & diligent in þare materis, þai assailȝeit þe myndis of þir
 ȝoung nobillis; be quham þare wourdis war plesandly acceppit.
 syne deliuerit certane *lettres* of þe tarquynis to þe said ȝong⁵ 20
 nobillis, And estir þe deliuerance þareof þai tuke consultacioun
 with þame, be quhat besines the tarquinis mycht be vnder nycht
 secretelie ressauit in þe ciete. (IV) The credit of þis tressoun
 was committit to twa brethir Vitellius & Aquillius, ⁶quhais
 sister⁶ was maryit on brutus, and had to him twa sonnys, titus 25
 and Tiberius, quhilkis war put on þe secrete counsell and parti-
 cipant with þe tressoun of þare two emis⁷ afore rehersit. Mony
 vthir notabill⁸ children war participant with þe samyn tressoun,
 bot þare names be roust of ȝeris Is perist. In þe menetyme, be
 avise of þe faderis, was decernit þat all gudis pertenand to tar- 30
 quynis salbe deliuerit to þare legatis. Be tenoure⁹ of þis sentence
 war grantit certane space to þe said legatis to remane in þe ciete,
 quhil þare provisioun war made for cartis to turſ away þe saidis

¹ ȝoung.⁴ desyris.⁷ þir two ennymes (!).² dependand.⁵ ȝoung.⁸ noble.³ assalȝe.⁶—⁶ The sister of þir twa breþir.⁹ tennowr.

gudis. The legatis spendit þe tyme þat was gevin to þame to þis effect with þir conspiratouris afore rehersit, solistand þame to send writingis to þe terquinis; and allegit gif þe samyn war nocht send, na faith suld be gevin to þame apoun sa wechty and hie materis. The *lettres* quhilkis war gevin to þir legatis, to mak faith for assistance of þir ȝoung nobillis to þe * tarquinis, made (112).
 5 þe tressoun mare patent þan It semit; ffor þir legatis afore þai war to departe war Intertenit¹ at þe supper² be solempne banket³ with þir twa brethir Vitellius and Aquillius, quhare þai and þe
 10 remanent conspiratouris, eftir þat þe houȝ was Ischit of all suspect persouns, began to commoun of mony hie materis be new consultacioun. In þe mene tyme ane servand was ripelie aduertist⁴ of all þare tressonabill purpois. Attoure, he was aduertist⁴ þareof afore, bot he abade to se gif | ony writingis p. 123.
 15 war send to þe tarquinis, þat þe sammyn (quhen þai war takin fra þir legatis) mycht be þe mare evident prufe of þare tressoun. Als sone as he saw þe *lettres* deliuerit, he schew þe samyn to þe consulis, And Incontinent þir consulis tuke baith þir legatis and conspiratouris, and apprehendit þame but ony noyis, afore
 20 þai war aduertist. Syne with grete diligence seirchit þe *lettres* þat þe sammyn suld nocht be distroyit. Als sone as þir *lettres* war fund, þe conspiratouris war cassyn in presoun. As concernyng þe legatis, It was in dout quhat suld be done with þame; And þoȝt þai haue committit sic cryme þat þai deseruit
 25 to be punyst as Inemyis of þe ciete, ȝit þai war sauffit⁵ be þe law of pepill. (V) The faderis war sa commovit for þis tressoun recentlie ymagineate, þat (howbeit þai decernit afore þe gudis of tarquinis to be deliuerit to þir legatis) ȝit þai retreit þare sentence, and defendit the samyn owthir to be deliuerit or ȝit applicate to
 30 þe commoun proffitt,⁶ bot allanerlie confiscate amang þe pepill, To þat fyne þat fra þe said pepill had Intromettit with þe gudis of tarquinis, þai suld haue na esperance in tymes cummyng to be recounsellit⁷ with þe said tarquynes, Nor ȝit to trete ony pece with þame. The croft of king tarquyne þat lay betuix rome

¹ Internyit, A.² sowpper.³ bankit.⁴—⁴ oms.⁵ saiffit.⁶ proffet.⁷ reconsalit.

and tiber was dedicate to mars, and callit estir Campus martius. be aventure was growand for þe tyme ane grete multitude of quhete on þe said croft, reddy to schere, and becaus þis croft was religious and consecrate (as said Is) to mars, It was nocht lefull to apply þe frute þareof to ony vse of man. ffor þis cauß 5
 (113). ane grete multitude of pepill come haistelie to þe said croft, and quhen þai had schorne þe said quhete, þai gaderit It with þe stra in crelis, and kest It doun in Tiber. * This ryver was þan throw fervent hetis of somer discending with litill stremes, throw quhilk happynnyt þat this multitude of quhete discending throw tiber 10
 abaid and stak stil in þe schald wattir þareof; And with þe huge glar and vthir stuff þat stak þareto, It made ane Ile in þe myddis of tyber, callit to oure dayis þe Ile of tyber. ȝit I
 p. 124. beleif þat sone estir grete burdingis of erde and | sand has bene brocht to þe said Ile, be Industry & laubouris of men, ffor vthir 15
 wayis It mycht neuer bene sa sovir ground to bere templis and palacis as It dois now in to oure dayis. quhen þe gudis of terquynis war confiscate and delt amang þe pepill (as said Is), The ȝoung nobillis for þare tressoun committit war adiugit to þe deith; and war þe mare opinlie punyst, þat brutus was decernit 20
 be þe faderis to punys þe tresoun of his awne sonnys. And pocht Brutus be faderlie piete suld haue bene removit fra þe sicht of ony punyciou made on his sonnys, ȝit fortoun gaif to him sic excellent fortitude, þat he was þe principall punissare of þare offenß. The nobill children stude bundin¹ at ane staik, 25
 amang quham was titus & tyberius, þe sonnys of brutus. The pepill beheld litil þe remanent conspiratouris, bot turnit þare ene alanelie to behald thir sonnys of Brutus, & had na leß miseriacioun of þare punyciou þan of² þe tressoun be þame committit, be quhilk þai Iustelie deseruit þare deith. The pepill 30
 had grete wounder, quhat suld haue movit þir sonnys of Brutus to haue randerit sa tressonably³ þare native cuntre recentlie recoverit, Thare fader Brutus þe deliuerare of þe ciete, the faderis þameself, and euery vthir thingis pertenyng⁴ to the Romane goddis and pepill, in to þe handis of lucius tarquyne, 35

¹ bondin.² to.³ tressonabilliy.⁴ pertenand.

sum tyme king, bot þan exild & Inemye to þare public weil,
 Considering þe dignite consulaire began be þe houß of Iunius.
 Als sone as þe faderis war ordourit in þare setis, Thir¹ bur-
 reouris come to punyß² þir conspiratouris, and quhen þe said
 5 surreouris had scurgeit þame with wandis þai straik of þare
 hedis with ane ax. The fader brutus na thing schrynkit with
 þe cruell punycioun maid on his sonnys, bot with faderlie piete
 beheld þe punycioun made on þame and þe remanent con-
 spiratouris, on þe samyn maner as þai Iustlie deseruit, þat he
 10 mycht be þarethrow ane notabil exemplill baith of piete and
 Justice for punycioun of all offence committit. * The conspir- (114).
 atouris being punyst in þis maner, Brutus commandit ane rewarde
 to be gevin of þe commoun gude to þis servand | that revelit p. 125.
 þe tressoun ; and noct̄ alanelie made him fre man bot als maid
 15 him citeȝane of rome. This was þe first man þat euir was de-
 liuerit fra servitude to liberte be Vengeance ; and þarefore It was
 allegit that þis worde Vengeance began first be þis servand ; ffor
 he was callit estir Vendicius to his name, quhilk name mony
 20 ȝeris estir remanit to be ane memorie, þat quhatsumeuir persoun
 war deliuerit be sic maner fra seruitude to liberte he suld be
 acceppit as [ane] citeȝane of rome.

25 how king tarquyne, be supporte of þe veanis and
 cieteȝanis of tarquyne, Invadit þe romanis ; how
 Brutus consull & Aruns tarquyne, recontering³
 vther in singulare batall, war baith slane ; And
 how þe matrouns of rome wore þe dule habit ane
 ȝere for þe deith of brutus. Ca. iii.⁴

(VI) King tarquyne, aduertist of þir doingis in maner afore
 rehersit, was noct̄ alanelie movit with grete doloure, for his
 30 esperance failȝeit in recovering his gudis, bot was als commovit

¹ seittis, þe.

² pvnis.

³ recontering.

⁴ xxv.

with grete Ire and haterent. At last seing all his slichtis Inter-cludit but ony out-passage, he tuke purpois to Inavid þe romanis with opin weris; and to bring his purpois to effect, he ¹ past humlie about the citejanis of Ethruria and specially ¹ amang þe veanis & cietejanis of þe toun of tarquyne, Requiring 5 þame to suffir him nocht, sen he was cummyn of þare lynage and blude, to be violentlie eieckit fra his empire & kingdome, That he and his young sonnys perrisch ² nocht afore þare ene; Schawing als how vtheris of vncouth blude has bene ressauit to þe empire of Romanis; And þocht he was native king þareof, ekand 10 daly ³ þare empire with landis and Rentis, jit he was exilit ⁴ & banist be tressonabill conspiracioun of his awne pepill. And becaus nane was fund wourthy to succede eftir him, The faderis

(115). has dividit þe croun amang * þame self, and sparrellit his riches [and guddis] amang þe pepill, þat na man suld remane Innocent, 15 bot euery man elike guilty with vthir. ffor þir ressouns he was sett to recovir his realme and cuntre, and persew his Vnthankfull

p. 126. | liegis, gif þe pepill afore rehersit wald supporte him, in sic maner þat he mycht nocht alanerlie revenge þe frequent slauchter of þare freyndis with vtheris Iniuris done to þame, bot als recovir 20 sindri landis quhilkis war rest fra þame be tyranny of romanis. Thir wordis of king tarquyne movit þe veanis to his purpois, for euery ane of þame, boldin with grete mynassing, thocht na thing sa gude as baith þare landis to be recoverit, and þe schamefull Iniuris done to þame revengeit be governance of þe romane 25 king. The name and lynage of tarquynis movit gretumly the Inhabitantis and pepill of þe ciete of tarquyne; ffor It apperit richt plesand þat þare name and lynage suld regnne in rome.

Be þis way war rasit twa ⁵ armyis of twa sindri pepill, and followit tarquyne as þare capitane, to recouer his realme & to persewe 30 þe romanis with batall. Als sone as þir armyis war enterit in þe romane landis, the twa Consulis Brutus and valerius met þame with arrayit batallis. Valerius led þe Oist of futemen, and Brutus past afore the armye with ane cumpany of horsmen, to espie þe oist of his Inemyis. on þe side aduersare was Aruns 35

^{1—1} om.

² peris.

³ daylie.

⁴ exild.

⁵ thre, A.

tarquyne, ridand on þe sammyn maner with ane band of horsmen afore king tarquyne his fader, quhilk was followand with ane awfull army. Als sone as Aruns saw þeurreouris, he vnderstude perfitelie the consulis war *present* in þare cumpany ; and fra he 5 **was** past forthwart ane litill space, he knew brutus, and Incontinent he began to rage In maist Ire, saying, “*Zone Is he þat [hes] banist ws fra oure cuntre.* Se sa proudelie as he procedis now, decorit with oure armyis. O þe goddis, Vengeouris of deprest kingis, be favorabill to me.” Incontinent he dang his 10 horþ with þe spurris, & kest doun his spere drevin maist awfullie aganis þe Consull. Brutus, persaving weil his cummyng, met him in þe samyn force,¹ ffor It was ane excellent glore in thay² dayis to princis and Capitanis of armyis to mete vthir in singulare batall. All wayis þir two feirþ campiouns ruschit 15 togiddir *with* sic boldin breistis, þat nane of þame tuke regarde to ony defence of þare | bodyis, bot alanelie to wound þare p. 127. fallow ;³ throw quhilk the * forþ⁴ was sa grete, þat euery ane (116). of þame ran vthir throw þare armoure and targeis to þe hart, and baith atanis fell of þare horþ dede to þe ground, þe lancis 20 stekand throw þare bodyis. followit haistelie þe batell of horsmen Invading vthir *with* maist terribill furie,⁵ And nocht lang eftir come þe futemen ; bot þe victorie⁵ was vncertane, and þe batall fochtin *with* equale haterent ; for þe richt wyngis⁶ war 25 victoriis, and þe left wyngis⁶ discomfist on euery side. The veanis (quhilkis war ay accustumyt to be vincust be romanis) war sloppit⁷ and put to flicht. king tarquyne the new Inemye, with his men of armes the cietejanis of Tarquyne, nocht alanelie withstude þe romanis, bot als put þame abak. (VII) quhill þir batallis war fechtand in þis maner, Sic terroure Invadit þe Veanis 30 & terquynis, þat baith þare armyis but ony forthir bargane severit and departit hame within þe nycht. It is said þat ane vncouth and prodigious mirakil happynt in þis last battall, ffor ane voce was herd in þe nycht afore þe sammyn in þe wod of Arsia be silvane god of þe said wod, saying, “þe romanis sal be victoriis,

¹ forþ.³ follow.⁵—⁵ *om.*⁷ stoppit, *A.*² þa.⁴ force.⁶ weyngis.

and ane salbe slane ma of þe Eþruschis þan of þe romanis";
 And þarefore þe romanis returnit hame as victorius, and þe
 ethruschis as vincust. publius valerius (als sone as licht apperit
 on þe nixt morow) gadderit vp þe spuleȝeis of þe said feild, &
 returnit with grete tryumphe to rome; Syne beryit þe body of 5
 Brutus his colleig with all reuerence & honoure þat he mycht.
 Bot ȝit na thing succedit mare to þe glore of brutus þan did þe
 public sorow of þe ciete, made in his funerall tryumphe; ffor þe
 matrouns wore þe dule habit for him (as he had bene þare fader)
 The space of ane ȝere, becaus he was sa¹ scharpe punyssare of 10
 þare violete chaistite.²

(117). how publius Valerius mesit þe suspiciooun of þe com-
 moun pepill aganis him, and made lawis for þare
 singulare proffitt; how marcus horacius was made
 p. 128. consul in | the place of Brutus, And how he 15
 dedicate the tempil of Iupiter. Ca. iiiij.³

Publius Valerius estir þis sorouful⁴ victorie (becaus the myndis
 of commoun ar variabil⁵) was nocht alanelie hatit, bot als
 hevily suspeckit with þe pepil; for þai belevit þat he wald vsurpe
 þe crovn, becaus he surrogate nocht haistelie ane new consul in 20
 þe place of brutus; And als becaus he began to edifie ane strang
 toure in mont Velia, quhilk be mvniciou and straitnes of þe
 ground apperit Vnexpugnabil. Thir and siclike wourdis movit
 þe mynde of Valerius to hie & Insufferable displesoure, herand
 how þe pepil had consauit sa wikkit opinioun of him; And þare- 25
 fore to purge him of þare suspiciooun he callit þe pepil to ane
 counsell, and nakit him (afore he made his orison) of al orna-
 mentis pertenyng⁶ to þe dignite consular, quhilk doingis made
 him richt tendir and plesand to þe pepill, becaus he devodit him
 self sa plesandlie of all ornamentis riall; ffor apperandlie he 30

¹ ane. ² chestite. ³ xxvj. ⁴ sorrowfull. ⁵ vareable. ⁶ pertenand.

confessit þat þe strenth and maieste of romane pepill was of
 mare pussance þan þe consulis. Valerius, (Alß sone as þe pepill
 war assemblit to here his orisoun) began to loif¹ þe grete felicite
 of Brutus his colleig; for estir þat he had deliuerit þe realme of
 5 seruitude, and brocht þe samyn in maist honour, he was slane
 fechtand with perseuerand manhede to þe deith, afore his huge
 glore brocht him be Invys to haterent of pepill. Be contrare,
 becaus he was left on live behynd þe glore of Brutus, he was
 fallin in Invys and suspiciooun of pepil; And quhare he was haldin
 10 sum tyme þe deliuerare of þe ciete, he was repute þan mare
 tressonabil þan þe Vitellis and aquillis, quhilkis thocht to haue
 randerit þe ciete in þe terquinis handis. "O romanis" (said he)
 "may þair nevir be sa provin vertew amang ȝow, þat It may be
 15 Inviolate but *suspicion. how mycht I be cryme of avarice (118).
 vsurpe þe king|dome, sen I was euer sa Vnmercifull Inemy to p. 129.
 kingis? Suld I beleif my citeȝanis to haue me in ony fere or
 dredoure, howbeit I duelt in þe capitoll or ony maist strang
 houf²? Is my fame of sa smal estimacion afore ȝow, is ȝoure
 20 faith foundit on sa inferme ground, þat ȝe tak regarde to knaw
 erare quhare I am þan quhat I am? The houssis (maist wise
 faderis) of Valerius sall nowthir be noysum nor contrarius to
 ȝoure liberte. Mont Velia sal be sovir to ȝow without suspiciooun,
 ffor I sal nocht alanelie mak þe wallis of my houssis² equale to
 25 þe ground, bot sall als tummyll þe stanis þareof to þe fute of þe
 montane, þat ȝe may haue empire abone me, ȝoure suspect
 citeȝane. Lat þame herefore edifie in mont Velia þat has mare
 credit of public liberte þan had Valerius." Sone estir was al þe
 mater (of quhilk þis houf² suld haue bene edifyit) Deieckit
 30 haistelie to þe vail³ vnder mont Velia; and on þe lawest parte
 of þe said montane ane houf² was biggit, quhare now is þe
 public rew. (VIII) Estir þis certane lawis war made be Valerius,
 quhilkis assoilȝete him of all suspiciooun movit aganis him twich-
 ing⁴ þe desire of þe croun; ffor þai war sa contrarius to þe said
 suspiciooun þat þai schew him bot ane private citeȝane, And he
 35 was callit þarefore Valerius publicola, þat is to say,⁵ þe woure-

¹ love.² houf².³ waile.⁴ tweching.⁵ schaw, A.

schippare¹ of pepill. The first law made be him was, þat ane appellacioun sall haue place fra þe faderis and consulis to þe pepill. The secund law was, þat Ilk man (Nochtwithstanding quhatsumeir estate and dignite he be of) þat makis him to vsurpe þe kingdome of Romanis, sal be slane, and baith his hede & his gudis brint in sacrifice to þare goddis. Thir twa lawis war richt plesand to þe pepill, And war pronuncit allanerlie to þe pepill be auctorite of þe said valerius (þat he mycht þarethrow haue þe thank þareof). Sic thingis done, he sett ane counsell to surrogate ane colleig in þe place of brutus, And create spureus lucresius consul; bot he was sa fer rvn² in age, þat he mycht nocht sustene þe charge of þe consulate, & within few dayis eftir p. 130. he deþeissit. In quhais place was surrogate mercius horatius³ pululus. I fynd amang certane auld autoris⁴ þat spureus lucresius was neuer consul; for þir allegis þat horacius succedit (119). Immediatelie in brutus place; or ellis gif lucre*sius was consul he did neuer na notabil actis, and for þat causis þe memorie of him Is perist. The set⁵ of Iupiter was nocht (as ȝit) dedicate in þe capitoll, and for þat cauȝt the two consullis kest cavillis, quhilk of þame suld dedicate þe said tempill; and becaus the 20 cavil fell to horacius, his colleig Valerius past with ane army aganis þe Veanis. In þe mene tyme his freyndis tuke grete Indignacioun, þat þis Illustir tempill suld be dedicate be horacius, and set þame [sa fer as þai mycht] to empesch þe samyn. At last, quhen sindri thare attemptatis war fund in 25 vane, this horacius was enterit in þe tempill makand his cerymonis and prayeris to þe goddis, as þe rite and custome was at þai dayis; And quhen he was haldand þe post of þe tempill in his handis, þai send ane schamefull messenger in þe tempill to schaw þat his son was dede; And sen his houȝt was vnchancy, 30 & his son dede, he aucht nocht to dedicate þe solempne tempill of Iupiter. It is nocht facill to be declarit, nor ȝit Is It writtin be sekire⁶ authoris, gif sic constance was in horace to gif na credit to þe wourdis of þis messenger; ffor he anseruit na thing

¹ worshippar.² rusin.³ heracius, A.⁴ authoress.⁵ sait.⁶ secure.

þareto, bot alanelrie commandit, gif his son was dede, to bere his body out of þe hous. Syne held þe post of þe tempil in his handis, continewing furth in his cerymonis quhil þe tempill was dedicate. Thir war þe dedis of romanis in þe first ȝere estir þe 5 proscripciou of kingis; And at þe begynnynge of þe nixt ȝere Valerius publicola was continewit consull as afore, & titus lucresius maid his colleig.

how tarquinius solistit prosena, king of Clusium, to (120).

10 Invade þe romanis; how þe faderis intertenit þe small pepill with sindri kyndenes; how horace Cocles defendit þe brig of tiber quhil It was cuttit be his compaȝouns, And how | he fred his self of p. 131. his Inemyis.

Ca. v.¹

(IX) The tarquynis banist, as we haue schewin, & discomfist 15 in þis last batall, fled to Laertes porsena king of Clusium, and with maist pietuous² requeist and prayeris besocht þe said porsena³ to suffir nocht þame, quhilkis war discindit of þe Ethruschis his couisingis, to be exilit⁴ fra þare native cuntre; & sum tyme persuadit him to suffir nocht þis odious maner lately 20 rising in proscription of kingis to be Vnpunyst. for liberte has sa grete sweitnes in þe self þat gif kingis defend nocht þare realmes with als grete force as þe pepill desiris⁵ to recouir þare liberte, All hie estatis⁶ sall be equate to ⁶þe lawest. Na thing sal be elevate; na thing sall⁷ be preemynent abone þe laif in 25 the⁸ ciete, throw þe quhilk þe honoure of kingdome, the maist plesand thing amang goddis & men, sal be finist. Porsena,⁹ traisting na thing sa proffittabil as to haue his lynage and blude regnand baith abone þe romanis and Ethruschis, come with ane

¹ xxvij.

² prosena.

^{5—6} and ^{6—7} are reversed in B.

³ pietous.

⁴ exild.

⁸ ony.

⁹ prosena.

awful armye to rome, and made þe senaturis¹ mare astonist þan
euer þai wer afore þat tyme; ffor baith his army was pussant,²
and his renoun richt grete In þai dayis. Attoure þe senatouris
dred noct³ onelie the⁸ vncouth and strange⁴ Inemyis liand
about þame with braid garnisouns, bot als dred þat þare awne 5
cieteȝanis, astonist be fere of Vncouth armyis, suld ressaue the
tarquynis within the ciete, and trete sum condicioun of pece
vnder maist vile and schamefull servitude. The senate, throw
þis present dredoure, ceisit noct³ to Intertený þe pepill with
maist plesand wourdis & dedis; And þat na penurite of vittalis⁵ 10

(121). suld follow be þis present trubill, Sindry prudent men * war send
baith to þe Wolchis and cumanyis to by vittalis⁶ for the susten-
tacioun of þe pepill. Attoure, fre licence was gevin to þe pepill
to sel salt, how beit þe sammyn was sald⁷ afore amang þame
with grete price. Attour, It was constitute þat þe smal & 15

p. 132. Indigent pepill sal noct³ alanelry be frelie exonerate of al tribute

& custumes,⁸ | bot sall als be supportit with all chargis & neces-
saris be þe riche men of þe ciete; ffor It was found sufficient
charge to þir Indigent pepill to Nuris þare awne children, howbeit
þai payit nane⁹ vthir tribute. Thir liberall and plesand dedis of 20

þe faderis was occasioun to þe commoun pepill to persevere with
ferme concorde at þare opinioun,¹⁰ Nochtwithstanding þe huge
trubill and hungir estir following during þe sege of porsena;
Throw quhilk þe commounis and small pepill of þe ciete Na leſſ
detestit þe name of kingis þan did þe faderis and senatouris 25
þareof. Thare mycht na man conqueſt¹¹ be gile or tressonabil
slichtis sic favoure and beneuolence of pepill, as did þe senatouris
be þare singulare prudence. (X) Als sone as þe Inemyis apperit,
all þe pepill þat duelt to landwarte come for defence, baith of
þame self & þare gudis, to duell within rome; Syne garnist þe 30
sammyn with strang soudiouris¹² and men of armes. sum thocht
þare¹³ self sikkir¹⁴ fra Inemyis be force of wallis, and sum be

¹ senatouris.

⁵ vittalis.

⁹ na.

¹³ sadiourtis.

² passant.

⁶ vittallis.

¹⁰ apinioun.

¹³ þame.

³ þir.

⁷ sauld.

¹¹ conquis.

¹⁴ sicker.

⁴ strang.

⁸ customes.

defence of þe river; ȝit nochtwithstanding þir Industrijs the Inemyis had almaist¹ gottin entres within þe ciete be ane brig of tre, war nocht It was þe mare valeȝeantlie defendit be ane nobill man namyt horace cocles, quham fortoun maid for þat 5 day ane grete munioun of roman ciete. This cocles, set be aventure in ane rovme maid for defence of þe said brig, & seand nocht alanely² mont Ianikill³ tane, and his Inemyis descending with huge force to tak þe said brig, bot als his companȝeouns sa 10 astonist þat þai fled, levand þare armowre and wapynnys behind ȝame, he reprevit⁴ euery ane of ȝame be þare name, and tuke baith þe faith of goddis & men in witnes þat þare fleing was in vane; ffor gif þai left þe brig with fre passage behind ȝame, Thare Inemyis suld be haistelie als pussant in þe palice & in þe 15 capitol as þai war presentlie in mont Ianicle. And þarefore he 20 prayit ȝame to returne, and cut þe brig with fire & Irne and al vthir violence þai mycht; for he suld resist þe dynt of Inemyis, sa | * fer⁵ as his body mycht suffir, quhil þe brig war brokin. p. 133. Incontinent þis cocles past to þe formest parte of þe brig fornens⁶ (122). his Inemyis, and made ȝame þe more astonist, That nochtwith- 25 standing þe fleing of his remanent companȝeouns, he abaid allane ready to gif ȝame bataill with maist audacite. ȝit in his extreme Ieoperdy two companȝeouns, namyt Titus herminius and spurius laertius, abade with him to eschewe schame; for þai war men of forcy dedis & descending of nane obscure lynage. 30 Cocles, accumpnayit with þir two companȝeouns, sustenit all þe first bront⁷ and furie of Inemyis. At last, quhen he herde⁸ the noyis and clamoure of ȝame quhil⁹is war cuttand the brig, þat nocht was left þareof vnbet doun bot ane small parte, sauffit alanelie for his returning, he causit his twa companȝeouns to pas abak to sum secure hald; Syne began awfully to turne his terribill ene fornens⁶ þe princis of Ethruschis, Sum tyme provok- and euery ane of ȝame to singulare batall, and sum tymes dis- pitand ȝame all, Sayand⁹ becaus þai war vnmyndfull of þare

¹ all maste.⁴ reprefit.⁷ brunt.² allanelie.⁵ far.⁸ hard.³ Ianikle.⁶ fornence.⁹ saying.

liberte, and levand vnder seruitude of proude kingis, þai come to Invaid þe liberte of vthir pepil quhilk neuer offendit to þame. The ethruschis taryit ane quhile fra his Invasioun, ffor ev ery ane of þame beheld vthir, quha suld strike first; quhil at last þe hale army was shamefully commovit and with huge noyis slang all þare dartis at him atanis. ȝit nochtwithstanding þir dartis fast stekand in his targe,¹ he abaid obstinate lie, gangand with maist sturdy² paſſ on þe said brig; And at last, quhen his Inemyis war sett with maist forcy violence to deieck³ him, raiſ sic noyis throw falling of þe brig, & throw clamoure of romanis reiosing in þe fall þareof, þat þe effray⁴ suddanlie rising þarethrow held þe preiſ⁵ of Inemyis abak. Than Cocles, seand him self Inter-cludit be Inemyis afore him, and but ony out-passage behynd, sade, "O haly fader tyberyne, ressaue þis armoure and þis knicht in þi propiciant streme;" and armyt in þis wise he lap in tyber, 15

p. 134. And nochtwithstanding Innow|mobil⁶ dartis schot at him be Inemyis, he swam throw þe river, but ony harme, to his fallois.⁷ This hardy Ieopardie be him done wil haue mare fame þan credence to oure posterite. The ciete was richt plesand to Cocles for his excellent vertew. Ane ymage was gravin to his similitude & sett in place of generall convencioun. Attoure, þe (123). ciete gaif him als mekil⁸ land as he mycht * cirkill⁹ about on ane day with ane pleuch. be þir wayis private lauboraris gat preeminence amang public honouris, ffor nochtwithstanding þe penurite of vittalis rising Ilk day in þe ciete throw segeing & oppugnacioun 20 þareof, ȝit Ilk cieteȝane defraudit him self of sa mekill vittalis as mycht support þe said Cocles quhil sum bettir chance of fortoun occurrit. 25

¹ trage (!).

⁴ effra.

⁷ followis.

² sturby (!).

⁵ preſ.

⁸ mekle.

³ deiect.

⁶ Innomerable.

⁹ circle.

5 how porsena segeit rome, and brocht þe samyn to
grete affliccioun ; how Valerius consull, be craft of
cheuelrie, discomfist ane cumpany of ethruschis ;
how Caius mucius slewe þe scribe in stede of
porsena, and causit porsena to scale¹ his sege.

Ca. vj.²

(XI) ³ Porsena, repulsit of his first assalt, set him be prudent
counsell to sege þe ciete, and lade ane strang garnisoun of armit
men within mont Ianicle ; syne campit him with his remanent
10 armye on the planis and brayis of tyber, And brocht schippis
out of al partis to incluse the said Ryver, þat na vittalis war
brocht to Rome, And þat his armye mycht spuleþe þe cuntre
on euery side without Impediment. belive he brocht þe romanis
to sic affliccioun, þat every gudis pertenand to þame, als well
15 bestiall as uthir fructis, for fere of his army war brocht within
rome. Thus þai durst put na thing vtowth þe wallis ; ȝit þe
Ethruschis war sufferit to rage with sic opyn renȝeis erare be
wisdome þan be ony dredoure of romanis ; for valerius consul,
assailȝeing be mony occasiounis to tak ane grete nowmer of
20 Inemyis sumtymes at avantage, quhen þai war skatterit at þare

¹ skale.

² xxvij.

³ The fifth hand in B. begins here (p. 145) as follows :—

Porsena, Repulsit of his first assalt, sett him be prudent counsale
to sege þe ciete, and laid ane strang garnisoun of armyt men within
mount Ianicle ; syne campit him with hir(!) remanent army on þe
planis and brais of tyber, And browcht schippis owt of all partis to
Incluse þe said riveir, þat na vittalis war brocht to rome, And þat
his army mycht spulȝe the cuntre on euery syd without Impediment.
Belyve he browcht the romanis to sic affliccioun, þat every gudis
pertenand to þame, als weill bestiall as vþir fructis, for feir of his
army war browcht within Rome. Thus þai durst put na thing
vtowth þe wallis ; ȝitt þe ethruschis war sufferit to Rage with sic
oppin reinȝeis erar be wosdome þan be ony dredour of Romanis ; for
Valerius consull, assailȝeing be mony occasiounis to tak grett nowmer
of ennymeis sum tyme at avantage, quhen þai war skatterit at þair

incursiouns, schew him self negligent in small materis, þat he mycht be the mare scharpe revengeoure of grete chargis quhen
 p. 135. þai occurrit. herefore, to draw his Inemyis fra | thare armye, he commandit ane large nowmer of bestiall to be schot furth on
 þe nixt day at porte aquillyne, quhilk was þe farest porte of 5
 rome fra sycht of Inemyis, traisting þame to be sone aduertist
 thareof be sundri fugitouris daly departing of þe ciete, for the
 (124). hunger and derth continu*ally rising in þe samyn; & as he
 coniecturit, sa followit. for the Etruschis war aduertist be ane
 fugitoure of þis huge nowmer of bestiall liand vtouth þe portis, 10
 and come haistelie with grete cumpany oure tyber, in esperance
 to tak þe haill pray of gudis foresaid. ȝit afore þare cumming
 Valerius laid tytus hermyneus with ane buschement of men hid
 in þe gabell rew beside þe secund stane; And in þe samyn
 maner left spurius largius with ane uthir buschement at porte 15
 collyne, to ly in wate quhil þare Inemyis war past by, and to stop
 þare returnyng to þe rivere. The tothir consul, Titus lucresius,
 Ischit furth at port Nivia with certane manipillis of armyt men.
 In þe mene tyme Valerius discendit fra mont Celia, and was þe
 first þat apperit to sicht of Etruschis. Als sone as hermyneus 20

Incursionis, schew him self negligent in small materis, þat he mycht be þe mair scharp revengeour of grett chargis quhen þai occurrit. Heirfoir, to draw his enymeis fra þair army, he commandit ane large nowmer of beistiall to be schot furth on the nixt day at part (!) exquillyne, quhilk was þe farest part of Rome fra sycht of enymeis, trasting [bame] to be sone aduertist þairof be sindry figitowris (!) daylie departing of þe ciete, for þe hunger and derth continualie rysing in þe samyn. And as he coniecturit, sa followit; ffor þe etruschis war aduertist be ane fegitour (!) of þis huge nowmer of beistiall liand vncowth (!) þe portis, and come haistelie with grett Cumpany oure tiber, in esperance To Tak þe haill pray of guddis foirsaid. ȝit afoir þair cummin Valerius lade tytus harmineus with ane Buschment¹ . . . at part Collyne to ly in wait quhill thair enymeis war past by, and to stop þair returning to þe Revere. The tothair consull tytus lucresius and schot (!) furth at port nivia with certane manipillis of armyt men. In þe meyne tyme balerus (!) discendit fra mont Celia, and was þe first þat apperit to sicht of

¹ No break in MS.

herde the noyis of Valerius cumpany, he Ischit with his buschement haistelye fra þe wate, and chasit þir Etruschis on lucresius. þan raiß ane huge noyis and clamoure on euery hand be Isching of þe romanis at sindri portis, throw quhilk þe Etruschis, 5 cummyn for pray of gudis, & nocht equale to resist þare Inemyis, war slane & discomfist; for þe passage was sa Intercludit on all handis þat þai mycht nocht returne. (XII) Porsena, nochtwithstanding þis discomfitor, continewit still at þe sege with more Ire and haterent þan afore, throw quhilk raiß ane miser- 10 abil derth¹ ay mare & mare in þe ciete, And gafe² ferme esperance to porsena to wyn þe samyn be lang sege³ alanelrie. Than was in rome ane nobill childe of hie sprete and curage, namyt Caius Mutius, quhilk havand grete Indignacioun þat romane pepill, being⁴ vnder seruite of kingis, war nowthir Invadit 15 with batall nor segit be Inemyis, and þan þai beand deliuerit of seruite to be segeit onelie be þai pepill quham þai sa oft afore | discomfist; herefore, traisting to revenge this vnwourthynes be p. 136. sum feirß and hardy Interprise, he tuke first purpois to pas of his awne curage amang the tentis of Inemyis; ȝit dredand gif he 20 past on þis maner to be tane and brocht agane be [þe] watche⁵ as ane tressonabil spy, as he þat semyt to revele in quhat estate and dangere þe ciete stude, he past to þe senate, and said: "O faderis, I will pas oure tyber, and enter within þe tentis of my Inemyis, nocht as ane revare⁶ movit for affection⁷ & desire of gudis; 25 my curage Is [sett] to attempt *ane hie & mare souerane (125). vassalege, gif þe goddis be respondent to my curage." The

ethruschis. alſo sone as hermineus hard þe noyis of þe valerius cumpany, he Ischit with his buschement haistelye fra þe waitt, And chasit þir ethruschis on lucresius. þan raiß ane huge noyes and clamour on euery hand be Isching of the Romanis at sindry portis, throw quhilk þe ethruschis, cummyn for pray of gudis and nocht equall to reseist þair enimeis, war slane and discomfest; for the passage was sa Intercludit on all handis, þat thay mycht nocht returne.

¹ dreith (!).

² gyf (!).

³ seig.

⁴ beand.

⁵ wache.

⁶ reuer.

⁷ effectioune.

faderis apprevit his purpos. Than Mutius enterit amang þe tentis of Inemyis *with* swerde hid vnder his clothis, and thrang in quhare maist confluence of pepill was, quhil at last he come quhare þe king was sittand in his seit¹ riall. The samyn² tyme happynnyt his army to be resavand þare wages, and be 5 aventure þe king's scribe or ellis his thesaurare was sittand beside þe king richelie accutterit,³ and *nocht* fer⁴ different fra þe samyn ornamentiſ as þe king wore, gevand his consultacioun, as apperit, on some wechty mater. Mutius knewe *nocht* quhilk of þame twa was king, and durst *nocht* inquire,⁵ in 10 aventure sum men had tane suspitioun of him; ȝit becaus he saw þe princes of þe armye haue mare erandis with the⁶ scribe þan *with* þis vthir þat sat beside him, he slew þe scribe in stede of þe king; syne with bludy swerde made ane gate throw his astonist Inemyis. *Nochtþeles*, throw noyis and clamoure of 15 pepill haistelie rissyn⁷ he was tane, and *brocht* afore þe king. Alwayis quhen he was maist destitute of freyndis, and Inquirit in generall⁸ quhat he was, and quhy he slew þis nobil man, he apperit mare feirfull and mynassant⁹ þan astonist. "I am" (said he) "ane romane, namyt L. Mutius, ȝoure Inemye, & thocȝt to 20 haue slane my Inemye, certifying ȝow my curage & sprete Is na p. 137. leß reddy to sustene þe deith, þan It was to committ | this slauchter. It is propir till ane romane als wele to suffir strong aduersiteſ,¹⁰ as to wirk forcy dedis. I am *nocht* þe man þat Is onelie coniurit in þi deith. þare Is ane grete nowmer of pepill 25 to cum behind me, to fulfill þe dede þat I haue failȝeit. Tharefore gif þow thinkis proffittabil, arme thy self to fecht euery houre aganis þe samyn Ieoperdeis quhilk I haue now assailȝeit; ffor þow has presently bayt¹¹ þe man and þe swerde in þe porchis of þi palice þat sall sla þe. We, þe young men of rome, 30 denuncis batall to þe *with* plane diffiance. Tharefore drede na vthir batall nor army, bot euery ane of my companȝeouns sall assailȝe¹¹ þe *with* [þe] samyn Ieoperdy þat I haue attemptit, quhil

¹ sait.² sam.³ accutreit.⁴ far.⁵ inqwyre.⁶ þis.⁷ rysing.⁸ Iugement.⁹ manisant.¹⁰ strang aduersiteis.¹¹ assailȝ.

þow be dede." Porsena, movit to na les Ire þan Indignacioun with¹ þir wourdis, and richt effrayit² for þe huge dangere appering, commandit with maist awfull mynassing þis Mutius to be circulit³ with maist rageand⁴ flammes on euery side, and to be brynt haistelie in þe sammyn, leſs þan he suddanie revelit quhat * watcheing⁵ & hid tressoun was compasit in his slaunchter. (126). "O porsena" (sade Mutius) "aduertis þe how small regarde my cumpaſſouns takis of þare miserabill⁶ bodyis, in compare of þe Interminabil honoure þat þai seik. þow sall vnderstand be me." 10 And Incontinent he schot his hand in þe fire, quhilk þan was birnand on ane altare to the sacrifice of goddis, and brynt his hand with sic constance as he had sufferit na pane þareof. Porsena, astonist of þis vncouth wounder, descendit haistely fra his trone,⁷ and commandit Mutius to be removit fra þe fire. 15 "pas þi way" (said Porsena) "þow has done mare displeſer to þi self þan to me. I suld command þe to be louit of maist provin vertew, gif þe sammyn had bene assailȝit for defence of my cuntry; And now be richt of batall I will suffir þe to departe fre, but ony hurte or displeſer of my army, quhare þow list." 20 Than Mutius, thinkand þat he wald recompenſ⁸ þe king with siclike rewarde, gude deid, and meritis, said, "becaus þow, nobil prince, has sa grete sicht to vertew, I will schaw, for þi gracius⁹ meritis done to me, þe thing þat I wald neuer haue schawin for ony | grevous punycioun or boist¹⁰ þat mycht haue followit. p. 138. 25 herefore vnderstand we are iij¹¹ men, quhilkis ar al princis and Illustir persouns of rome, sworne of ane opinioun and mynde in þi deith. And þocht my aventure was first, euery ane of þame sall sailȝe as þai best may, quhill þow be finalie¹² slane." (XIII) Mutius (becaus he was deliuerit fra þe deith for birnyng of his 30 richt hand) was callit Seuola¹³ to his new surname. Porsena was sa astonist be þis first aventure, for na thing failȝit in his deith bot alanelie þat þe hand ȝeid wrang, þat he send his legatis

¹ be.² affrayit.³ cerculit.⁴ regeand.⁵ waching.⁶ meserable.⁷ torne (!).⁸ recompenſe.⁹ gratious.¹⁰ bost.¹¹ thre hundredth.¹² fynelie.¹³ seuula, A.

to rome, offering of his fre benevolence to trete peace¹ with romanis; for he thoc^ht richt dangerus to abide þe chance of euyre ane of þir iij^c knichtis, quhilkis war (as he belevit) all coniurit in his deith. the⁸ legatis desirit þe tarquynis to be restorit to þare empire,⁴ how beit þe samyn was in vane; for þocht þe said porsena desirit þe tarquinis to be restorit, he knewe na thing bettir þan repulſ of sic desiris. Nochtþeles, becaus he promittit to þe tarquinis to lauboure for þare restitucion, he desirit þe samyn alanelie to saif his aith. In þis peace¹ was tretit⁵ þat þe landis tane afore fra þe veanis sal be restorit. It was⁶ als (127) expressit in þe said tretie þat romanis * sal gif plegeis for obseruacioun of þir poyntis, gif þai desirit porsena to remove his army fra mont Ianicle. The peace⁷ tretit in þis maner, Porsena rasit his army⁸ fra mont Ianicle,⁸ and departit nocht allanelie þarefra,⁹ bot als out of all vthir landis pertenyng¹⁰ to þe romanis. 15 The faderis, for þis hie & singulare vassalage¹¹ done be Mutius seuola,¹² gaif to him ane large heretage, and landis liand beþound¹³ tyber, callit mony ȝeris eſfir Mutius medois.

Off the hardy Vassalege¹¹ done be Chelia þe romane virgin; of þe selling of king porsenais vittalis; how Aruns his son was slane and his army discomfist be þe Cumanis; how porsena send his legatis to 20 rome & of þe ansuere made to þame. Ca. vij.¹⁴

p. 139. | Beacaus vertew was honorit in þis wise, It gaif occasioun to wemen to do¹⁵ gay vassalege.¹⁵ amang þe romanis was ane 25 virgine namyt chelia, quhilk was gevin with mony vthir plegeis, þoung men & women,¹⁶ to porsena, for obseruacioun of trevis afore contrakkit. This Chelia, seand þe tentis of hethruschis

¹ peax.

⁸ trettit.

⁹ out of mont Ianicle.

¹³ beþond.

² thre hundret^h.

⁶ is.

¹⁰ pertenand.

¹⁴ xxxix (!).

³ His.

⁷ peice.

¹¹ vaslage.

^{15—16} honest waslage.

⁴ emplice.

^{8—9} om.

¹² seuula, A.; seuula, B.

¹⁶ wemen.

(quhare scho was brocht) noct fer distant fra þe brayis¹ of tyber, begilit hir kepar; Syne with þe remanent virginis (quhilkis war gevin as plege² in þe samyn maner) come throw þe army of Ethruschis, and noct onelie swam oure tyber, bot als restorit³

5 þame but ony displeßer to þare freyndis. Als sone as porsena was aduertist of þis hardy vassalage,⁴ he grewe in vehement Ire, and send haistelie his legatis to rome, desiring þe said virgine Chelia to be restorit to him as principall plege;⁵ for of þe remanent plegeis be hir reskewit he tuke litill force. And

10 becaus he thocht þis last Interprise done be chelia of mare renoun þan was þe vassalage⁴ done latelie be Cocles or Mutius, he declarit be his oratouris (gif þis virgine war noct deliuerit) he suld noct onelie hald þe trewis as brokin, bot als Invaid þe romanis with new weris; promittinz als, gif þis chelia war

15 deliuerit, to restore hir but ony displeßer to hir freyndis. faith was keptit but violacioun on athir side; *ffor þe romanis be (128). tenoure of þare confederacioun deliuerit þis virgine, & porsena noct alanelie keptit hir but ony displeßer, bot als honorit hir for hir excellent vertu;⁶ Syne gaif hir fre licence to cheiß ane

20 parte of þe plegeis, quham scho best plesit, to returne hame with hir. This virgin, quhen þe plegeis war brocht afore hir, chesit sa mony of þame as war ȝoung, but ony haris on þare beirdis,⁷ quhilk doing was richt commendabill to þe virginite of goddis, and als richt probabil⁸ be consent of þe remanent plegeis, becaus

25 þe age⁹ reddiest to ressaue Iniure of Inemyis suld haue bene erast deliuerit. þe peace¹⁰ renewit in þis sorte, The romanis decorit þis virgine for hir singulare vertew with new maner of loving; for þai made ane ymage to hir similitude, sittand on ane horß, and sett þe samyn in þe hie way. | (XIV) throw this peceabill¹¹ departing p. 140.

30 of porsena fra rome, ane terribill rite was institute be þe auld faderis, continewing to oure dayis. Amang mony vthir solemniteis now vsit, occurris ane horribill custume Ilk ȝere to sell þe gudis of porsena. It is necessare to say þe begynnyng of þis rite

¹ brais.⁴ wasslage.⁷ birdis.¹⁰ peax.² plaig.⁵ prince, A.⁸ proffitable(!).¹¹ petiable.³ returnit.⁶ bewtie, A.⁹ aig.

raiß owthir during þe sege of porsena at rome, continewing ay in
 tyme of peace; Or ellis to say, It began of ane mare freyndlie
 begynnyng þan þe name and titill of It beris, That is to say, to
 sell þe gudis of porsena *with* maist Inemyte.¹ howbeit sindri
 opinious ar of þis mater, ȝit þe thing maist approcheand to 5
 verite Is be þis way as we haue schewin.² quhen porsena was to
 departe, eftir þat he had rasit his tentis fra mont Ianicle, he had
 incredibill provision³ of vittalis brocht to him out of þe maist
 riche partis of Ethruria, & gaif þe samyn be his liberalite to
 romanis; for þare ciete was waistit throw lang sege. herefore 10
 þat þe gudis of porsena suld *nocht* pas in pray amang þe pepill,
 It come in vse to sell þerelie þe gudis of porsena *with* inimite.¹
 thus þe said vittalis war callit þe gudis of porsena, to be erare
 ane memorie⁴ of þare benevolence towart porsena, þan of ony
 augmentacioun made be þame to his riches; ffor sic thingis was 15
nocht in þe power of Romanis, quhen Porsena had put ane end
 in þis maner to romane weris. þat þe rasing of his army to þai
 boundis suld *nocht* appere in vane, he send his son Aruns *with*
 ane parte of his army to sege þe toun of Arycia. The aricianis
 at his first cummyn⁵ war gretumlie astonis; ȝit *within* schort 20
 space eftir, þai gat sic supportis fra þe latynis and Cumanys, þat
 (129). þai tuke auda*cite⁶ to decerne⁷ þe chance of batall be þe swerde.
 Als sone as þe batallis war Ionit,⁸ the Etruschis come *with* sic
 properant furie be manhede of Aruns, þat þe aricianis war put
 to flicht; bot þe Cwmanis (quhilkis war arrayit in ane vthir 25
 weyng) sum parte be þare crafty Industry eschewit þe violence
 of Etruschis; quhill at [þe] last þai saw þe said Etruschis
 dividit but array, & þan come haistelie with displayit baner on
 p. 141. þare bakkis. Thus war þe | Etruschis in myddis of þare
 victorie discomfist. ane parte of þir Etruschis, seand Aruns 30
 slane, & havand no maner refuge, come but ony wappynys to
 rome, quhare þai war plesandlie ressauit & curit of þare woundis.
 parte of þame abade still in rome as citeȝanis þareof; vtheris

¹ inimite.

⁴ memorie.

⁷ disserne.

² haif now schawin.

⁵ cusing.

⁸ Iunit.

³ incredable promissiou (!).

⁶ adicite.

returnit hame & schewe þe benevolence of romanis. ȝit mony of þame remanit stil in rome, and gat certane boundis within þe wallis thareof, namyt þe Thuskane rew, to thare habitacioun. (XV) The nixt ȝere Valerius publicola and publius lucrecius ware 5 made consullis. In quhilk ȝere come þe legatis of porsena to rome, desiring king tarquyne to be restorit to his realme. It was ansuerit be romanis, þai wald send þare legatis with þare mynde & ansuere to porsena. sone eftir war send to him certane of þe 10 maist honorabil [men] and wise faderis of rome; for þoȝt þe romanis myȝt haue gevin schort ansuere neuer to ressauie ony kingis in þare ciete, ȝit þai thocht mare expedient to send þe maist wise faderis as ambassiatouris to him with þare ansuere, þan to haue gevin ony ansuere¹ to his legatis in rome; traistis to put perpetuall silence² to sic desiris in tymes cummyng, & þat 15 þe myndis of romanis and Ethruschis (considering³ þe grete humanite and tendirnes þan standing betuix⁴ þame) suld nocht be travellit with ony forthir sollicitude or troubill; becaus he socht baith þe thing þat was noysum and contrarius⁵ to romane liberte. And leß þan romanis war deliuerit wilfully to distroy 20 þame self, þai wald aluterly denye his desiris, for þe romanis desiris nocht to leif⁶ vnder seruitude of kingis, bot alanelie to reiose⁷ þare liberte. And for þat cauȝt þai war extremelie resoluit erare to opin⁸ þare portis to maist dedelie Inemyis þan to kingis. Attoure, þai war all resolute of ane mynde, to put 25 ane end alþ sone to þare ciete as to þare liberte; ⁹And for þir mociouns desirit porsena (gif he desirit þe romane ciete vndis-⁽¹³⁰⁾ troiȝt) to suffir þe * cieteȝanis þareof to leif in liberte.⁹ King p. 142. 30 porsena, vincust¹⁰ be thir ressounis, and seand þe romanis sa obstinate in defence of þare liberte, said, “I sal neuer infest nor trubil ȝow ony forthir with sic desiris, be[caus] ȝoure myndis ar

¹ anȝer.⁴ betueix.⁷ reoȝt (!).¹⁰ wincowst.² scilence.⁵ constyrius (!).⁸ oppin.¹¹ quydder.³ considdring.⁶ lyf.⁹—⁹ om.¹² pice.

serch new habitacioun, in aventure þai fynd occasioun to dissolute
 þe amite and kyndenes now standing betuix¹ me and romanis.²
 Porsena schew him mare plesand in his wourdis þan in his
 dedis to romanis; for he nocht alanelie restorit to þame all þare
 plegeis (quhilkis war laid afore to him in ostage,² for obserua- 5
 cioun of all poyntis contrackit at þe rasing of his siege fra Mont
 Ianicle) bot als restorit to þame þe landis of Veanis, quhilkis war
 tane fra þame be his contract made afore at mont Ianicle. king
 tarquyne, disparit all wayis to recouer his realme, fled to his
 maich mamilius Octavius tusculus, prince of latynis, be quahais 10
 departing gude peace³ continewit betuix¹ Ethruschis & romanis.

how þe Sabynis war dantit; Of þe deith of valerius
 publicola, and of þe [generall] doloure made for his
 deith; how þe aruncis war vincust, and pomecia
 equate to þe ground; and how þe nobillis and 15
 princes of þe said ciete war slane, and þe cieteþanis
 þareof sauld.

Ca. viij.⁴

(XVI) In the nixt ȝere M.⁵ Valerius and pub. posthumius
 war made consullis, and faucht þe samyn ȝere with grete felicite
 aganis þe sabinis, and tryumphit. the sabinis, nochtwithstanding 20
 þis discomfitoure, made þare ordinance to Invade þe romanis
 with greter army þan afore. The romanis, suspeckand⁶ sum
 occult weris to follow be Mamilius tusculus, maich to king
 tarquyne, howbeit þe samyn nocht opinlie apperit, ȝit to mete all
 haisty danger þat mycht occur þarethrow, Valerius publicola & 25
 titus lucrecius war made consullis. In þe mene *tyme raiß sic
 sediciois amang þe sabinis, concernyng þe treting of were and
 peace,⁷ þat þe samyn made þe romanis mare pussant þan afore;
 for Appius Clausus (quhilk was estir callit Appius Claudius),
 seand he mycht nocht be partie⁸ to sediciis lymmaris desirus⁹ 30

¹ betweix.

³ paix.

⁵ The ȝeir nixt follow-

⁶ suspecand.

⁸ perty.

² hostage.

⁴ xxx.

ing Marcus.

⁷ paix.

⁹ dysyris.

| of trubill (beacaus he was ane luffare of peace¹) come fra þe loch p. 143.
 of regill with ane grete cumpany of his freyndis to rome. Thir
 sabynis, quhilk come with appius, war sa plesandlie ressauit þat
 þai war made cetejanis of rome, and gat² certane landis liand
 5 beþound þe river of Anien to þare sustentacioun. Thir pepil, be
 cummyng of new freyndis, war callit þe auld tribe of Claudius.
 Appius for his wisdome³ & richeß was ekit to þe nowmer of
 faderis; bot he come sone estir in grete haitrent of sindri grete
 10 princes of Rome. The consulis nocht lang estir come with ane
 awful army in þe sabyne⁴ landis; and quhen þai had waistit þe
 sabynis be frequent Skarmussing⁵ & direptioun of þare landis,
 In sic maner þat na rebellioun be þame mycht appere mony
 15 ȝeris estir, þai returnit with grete tryumph to rome. The nixt
 ȝere Agrippa meninius and publius⁶ posthumius war made
 consulis. The samyn ȝere publius⁶ Valerius, namyt be romanis
 þe prince of pece and war,⁷ deceissit with Interminabill glore;
 howbeit he was richt pure in riches, ffor nochtwidstanding his
 20 excellent dedis sa oft sustenit for þe commoun weil, he deceissit
 in sic pouerte þat all his gudis war nocht sufficient to bery his
 body; And was beryit þarefore be expens of þe commoun purß.
 The ladyis & matronis of rome lamentit his deith in þe samyn
 maner as þai did Brutus. The samyn ȝere twa townis namyt
 25 pomecia and Chora (quhilkis war afore Colonyis of latynis) past
 fra þe romanis to þe opiniou of Aruncis. This occasiou movit
 þe romanis to cum with strang army aganis þe Aruncis. Thir
 aruncis, at þe first entreß of þe consullis in þare land, gaif batall,
 & war discomfist and chaist to þe⁸ toun of pomecia, bot þe
 30 slauchter was na leß estir þan afor þe victorie, [for] few [war]
 tane and mony slane, & sa mony as war tane war all slane; and
 abone þis cruelty the plegeis (quhilkis war iij^o⁹ in nowmer) mycht
 nocht be saffit.¹⁰ The consullis estir þis victorie¹¹ tryumphit in
 rome. (XVII) * The nixt ȝere Opiter Virginius and spurius (132).
 Cassius war made consullis, quhilkis sone estir þare electioune

¹ a luffar of peax.

⁴ saben.

⁷ peax and weir.

¹⁰ saffit.

² gart, both.

⁵ scarmuschis.

⁸ þair.

¹¹ victourie.

³ wosdome.

^{6—6} om.

⁹ thre hundredȝ.

assailȝeit to tak be force þe ciete of pomecia ; and becaus þare
 p. 144. | oppugnacioun succedit nocht *with* felicite, þai assailȝeit to tak
 þe ciete be sowis¹ and vthir [sindry] Instrumentis of were. The
 Aruncis war sa boldin in haterent (howbeit þai had litill esperance²
 of victorie), þat þai Ischit in grete nowmer on þe romanis, armyt³ 5
 mare with firebrandis þan ony martial wapynnys, and trublit all
 þe army of romanis *with* fire and slauchter ; & nocht alanelie
 brynt þe sowis and woundit þe men of armys vnder the samyn,
 bot als hurt ane⁴ of þe consullis sa cruelly on his horȝ þat he
 was nere slane. ȝit It is nocht schawin be authouris⁵ quhat 10
 was his name. The romanis estir þis batall returnit to rome.
 amang mony hurt and woundit⁶ men at þis Ieoperdie, The
 consull was left in danger of his liffe. The romanis (als sone
 as þare woundis war curit) returnit to pomecia with mare pus-
 sance & cruelte þan afore ; And quhen þe sowis with vthir 15
 [sindry] Instrument of chevilyr war reparit, in sic maner þat
 þe men of armys war reddy to pas oure þe wallis, þe ciete
 was randrit ; bot þe slauchter was na leȝ on þe cieteȝanis
 þareof þan þe sammyn had bene tane be strang hand or on
 force ; ffor all þe princes of þe ciete war slane, and þe reman- 20
 ent pepill sauld vnder crovn. Estir, al þe ciete was cassin
 doun and þare landis sauld. The consullis tryumphit mare
 for þe scharpe revengeing of þare haitrent þan for ony grete
 vassalege⁷ be þame done.

¹ swis.³ armye, *A.*⁵ awtouris.⁷ vaslage.² asperance.⁴ a (!).⁶ wondit.

how þe commoun women of rome war revist¹ be (133).

sabynis ; how Titus largius was made dictator, and
spurius Cassius maister of cheuelrie ; how þe latynis
war discomfist at þe loch² of Regill ; how sindri
princes recounterit vthir be singulare batall, and
how þe latynis war discomfist. Ca. ix.³

(XVIII) The ȝere following, posthumius Cominius & titus largius war made consullis. This ȝere apperit trublus, for certane solemgne playis war made in Rome, In quhilkis sindri
10 huris and commoun women war revyst be certane Insolent
sabinis. throw revessing⁴ of þir commoun women apperit grete p. 145.
dissensioun and batall on athir hand ; and þocht þis mater
was of small effect, ȝit be occasioun þareof apperit new re-
bellioun of sabinis aganis þe romanis ; and above þe fere and
15 dredoure þat apperit be þe were of sabinis, followit ane troubil
mare dangerus, for fourty sindri pepill war coniurit al attanis
in perdicoun of romanis, be persuasioun of Mamilius prince
of latynis, maich to king tarquyne. The ciete of rome stand-
and in þis extreme sollicitude & danger, raiß þe first men-
20 cioun amang romanis to create ane dictator ; ffor It was traistit
the consulis war of þe opinion and factioun of þe tarquinis.
It is vncertane in quhat ȝere or vnder quhat consulis þis first
dictator was made ; ȝit I find be excellent autouris þat Titus
25 largius was þe first dictator amang þe romanis, & spurius cassius
þe first maister of cheuelrie. þe law concernyng þe creacioun of
þe dictatoure was þat he sal be chosin be þe consullis. I beleif
erare þat titus largius was þe first dictatoure & maister abone
þe consulis, for he was sum tyme consul afore, þan to say
30 þat marcus Valerius fusius, nepote to Volesius, was þe fyrist
dictator, becaus he was neuer consul. ffor gif ane⁵ dictator
suld haue be⁶ chosin of þat houß, his fader marcus Valerius,
sum tyme consul, ane⁵ man of provin vertewe, suld haue erare

¹ reveist. ² loith (!). ³ xxxij. ⁴ revisching. ⁵ a. ⁶ bene.

(134). bene¹ chosin þan þe said va*lerius fusius. Als sone as þis first dictator was creat, þe pepil began to be gretumly astonist, seand þe axis² and ornamentiſ riall pas afore him as king; ffor þai vnderstude It was necessare to obey all his chargis in ane scharper³ maner þan to be consulis. ffor þe 5 consulis war twa persouns vnder ane dignite, euery ane of þare supporte depending on þe tothir. fforther, nowthir remede of appellacioun nor ȝit na vthir helpe myȝt avale in þis mater, sa lang as he was dictator, bot alanelie to obey. þe sabynis war þe more astonist, herand ane dictator made in rome alanelie for þare cauȝt, and þarefore send þare legatis to rome to commoun of pece;⁴ & desiring þe dictator and senate to p. 146. perdoun⁵ þe folie & errouris | done be ȝouȝt and Insolent persouns, in revessing⁶ þe wemen afore rehersit. It was an- 10 suerit be romanis, þai culd remitt þe offence done be ȝouȝt, bot nocht be agit men; for sic men vnderstude weill, be occa- sion⁷ of Iniuris and batall risis Iniure⁷ and batall;⁸ alwayis þe romanis wald haue discendit to peace,⁴ gif the sabinis wald haue debursit plesandlie all þe expens⁹ of weris rasit be þare 15 rebellioun, for þat was desirit. (XIX) In þe niȝt ȝere Seruilius 20 Sulpicius & manlius Tullius war made consulis. Na thing was done In þis ȝere wourthy to haue memorie, for certane quiet trewis war takin, & prevenit al trubil appering. In þe niȝt ȝere titus Ebutius and gneus Vetusius war maid 25 consulis. In þare tyme þe toun of fidena was segeit, & þe toun of Crus- tumerie tane. Als þe ciete of prenesta was tane fra þe latynis, and ekit to þe empire of Romanis, throw quhilk þe batall In- 30 cressing sa mony ȝeris be latynis was noȝt lang differrit. ffor fere of þis troubill au. posthumius was made dictator & ti. Ebutius,⁹ maister of [þe] cheuelrie, be quhais auctorite ane¹⁰ army was rasit baith on fute and horȝ, & met þe latynis at þe louch of regill within þe tuskane landis. And becaus þe romanis hard þe tarquynis war gadderit in grete nowmer amang

¹ be.⁴ paix.⁷ Iniuris.¹⁰ a (!).² aixis.⁵ perdone.⁷⁻⁸ om.³ scarppar.⁶ Revising.⁹ ebatius, A.; abutius, B.

þe oist of latynis, þai raiß in sic haitrent and furie þat þe
 batellis mycht nocht be seuerit, bot ruschit haistelie togiddir.
 This batall was fochtin¹ with mare cruelte þan ony batall afore
 rehersit; ffor þe princes & regentis of baith þe armyis abaid
 5 nocht (as þe custume² Is) to gif þare prudent consultacioun
 for felicite to þare army estir following; bot erare boldin in
 maist Ire ruschit pertlie with þare awne bodyis amyd þe oist
 of *Inemyis, throw quhilk þare was nocht ane nobil man bot (135).
 onlie þe dictator þat eschapit vnwoundit on athir side. Als
 10 sone as king tarquyne persauit þe dictator posthumius arraying
 his oist, he prekit his horß with grete Ire, howbeit he was waik,
 and fer rvn³ in ȝeris, aganis þe dictator. Nochtþeles, he was
 doung sidelingis fra his horß, and sone estir reskewit be his
 freyndis. In ane vthir weyng was Ebutius, the maister of
 15 cheuelrie, quhilk with grete ferocite⁴ prekit | aganis Mamilius, p. 147.
 maich to king tarquyne; & he, nocht vnwar of his cummyng,
 met him on þe sammyn maner. So thik was þe schoure of
 dartis, þat mamilius was woundit throw his armoure in þe
 breist, and Ebutius schott throw þe arme. Mamilius was
 20 haistelie recoursit be ane weyng of latynis. Than Ebutius,
 Impatient for vehement doloure to bere his spere, departit of
 þe feild. Mamilius, na thing astonist of his wound, provokit⁵
 new batall on þe romanis; ȝit becaus he saw his freyndis herte,
 he drew þe band of tarquinis about him, to quham Titus, þe
 25 son of tarquyne þe proude, was capitane. The tarquinis,
 movit to grete haterent for þe tynsale of þare realme and gudis,
 faucht sa cruelly,⁶ þat in sum parte þai renewit batall. (XX) quhen
 þe romanis war put sum parte abak in this wise, M.⁷ Valerius,
 bruthir to valerius publicola, beheld þe feirß ȝoung tarquyne mus-
 30 terand in þe first bront of þe tarquinis oist; and was sa revist with
 þe glore and lynage of his houß, þat he thocht þe blude riall and
 name of tarquinis suld synys be þe samyn houß be quhilk þai
 war first disherist, and bot ony mare tary he prekit his horß,
 and come drevin with huge furie on tarquyne. Than tarquyne

¹ fochin.² custome.³ ron.⁴ forocite, A.; felocite, B.⁵ provocat.⁶ crewell.⁷ marcus.

to eschew his dynt sum parte schrinkit, and fled amang his freyndis; throw quhilk Valerius, or he mycht renze¹ his horß, was drevin vnwarlie amang his Inemyis. In þe menetyme, þoung tarquyne ran him² sidlingis throw þe body *with* aне spere, and straik him² dede to þe ground. quhen Posthumius 5 dictator saw nocht onelie þis nobil³ man slane, bot als þe tarquinis sa feirslie fechtand þat þe romanis war astonist, reddy to gif bakkis, he gaif signe to aне vthir cumpany, quhilk was chosin alanerlie for defence of his body, commanding þame to Inavid euery man þat fled *with* na les haterent þan þare Inemyis. The 10 (136). & *with* new curage recouterit þare Inemyis. Incontinent *þis band of men (quhilk stude in maner of garde about þe dictator) enterit with fresche mynde and bodyis on þe tarquinis, quhilk war þan wery and Irkit throw lang & obstinate batall; and 15 p. 148. | Invadit þe said tarquinis *with* grete slauchter. Than raiß aне new battall betuix þe princes of baith þe armyis. Mamilius, prince and capitane in þe army of latynis, seand þe tarquinis circulit on euery hand *with* þe dictatouris cumpany, tuke certane manipillis of latynis, quhilk war maist reddy to all Ieoperdis 20 for þe tyme; and went fordwartis⁴ þarewith to support þe tarquinis. Als sone as titus hermineus, lieutennent⁵ vnder þe dictator, saw þis cumpany cument fordwart,⁶ he knewe perfitelie mamilius be his schynand armoure and riche clething; & Incontinent prekit his horß, drevin aganis him *with* mare 25 violent preiſ þan did ebutius þe maister of chevelrie in þe batall latelie rehersit; throw quhilk he ran þe said mamilius throw þe body. At last, quhen he was spuleȝeand þe said mamilius of his riche armoure, he was hurte with aне lance be aне of his Inemyis, & brocht to his tent, 30 quhare he deceissit sone eftir þat his wound was dicht. Incontinent þe dictator past to þe horsmen, commanding þame (becaus þe futemen was Irkit with lang batall) to discend of þare horß to þare support. The horsmen haistelie obeyit, and ruschit

¹ reinȝe. ² The second scribe in B. ³ forthwartis. ⁴ forthwart. ⁵ lieutenand.

^{2—3} om.

resumes here (p. 161).

in supporte of þe futemen ; Syne kest vp þare targeis in defence of þame þat past afore þe banerman. The futemen, seand þe horsmen enterand in batall to þare support, faucht with sic curage þat þe latynis war vincust and put to flicht. þan þe 5 romanis montit haistelie on þare horþ to followe on þe chais,¹ and þe fute oist² followit on þare bakkis on þe samyn maner. It is said þe dictator, na thing pretermittit þat mycht supporte his armye owtir be divine or humane lawis, votit to edifie ane 10 templi in þe honoure of þe god Castor ; and assignit certane rewardis to euery knyght of his armye, as þai enterit first and nixt wîthin þare Inemyis tentis. throw quhilk followit sic birnand curage wîth his folkis, þat þare Inemyis war spuleȝete³ of þare tentis with na leſs force þan þai war chasit afore. Thus 15 was It fouchtin⁴ at þe louch⁵ of Regill betuix þe latynis and romanis ; the dictator and maister of chevelrie returnit with grete | tryumph to rome.

p. 149.

How the tempillis of saturne and marcurie war dedi- (137).
cate, and of þe deith of king tarquyne ; how þe
latynis send þe legatis of [the] Wolchis to rome
as presoneris ; And how þe romanis and Latynis
war confederate togiddir with grete humanite &
kyndenes.

Ca. x.⁶

(XXI) The nixt ȝere Quintus Clelius and titus laercius war made consulis, And in þe ȝere following⁷ Aulus sempronius and 25 marcus Minucius war made consullis, In quhais tyme ane tempill was dedicate to Saturne. þe solempne feistis institute þareto war namyt Saturnilia. The ȝere following, Aurelius Posthumius and titus virgineus war made consulis, In quhais tyme (as sum autouris allegeis) was þe batall afore rehersit at 30 þe louch⁸ of regill. during þir thre ȝeris nouthir was sikkir

¹ chace.² ost.³ spulȝeit.⁴ fochtin.⁵ loch.⁶ xxxij.⁷ followand.⁸ locht.

peace¹ nor sikkir were betuix þe romanis & latynis. It is said Aurelius posthumius renuzcit þe consulate, becaus he dred his colleig virginius was nocht sikkir with² him, and was made þarefore dictator. Sa mony erroris and diuersiteis of writaris dois ordoure þe tyme and digniteis of rome with sic contrarieteis, þat it is richt difficult owthir to knaw quha war consulis or ȝit quhat was done in sic antiquiteis. The ȝere eftir³ maid Appius Claudius & publius Seruilius consulis. This ȝere is richt notabil 5
 be ane messingere þat schew þe deith of King Tarquyne, for he deceissit in þe ciete of Cymys, eftir þat he was cummyn to seik refuge at Arisdemus the tyran; becaus þe latynis war sa brokin þat þai mycht mak him na forthir support. Throw þir tythingis nocht anerlie⁴ war þe faderis, bot all þe pepill of rome, rasit with inestimabil blythnes; ȝit þe faderis war mare reiosit þan þe pepill; for (as It is afore rehersit) the faderis, for fere of þe tarquynis, intertenyt þe pepill with continual benefactis⁵ & gudis, to make þame stand þe more afaldly at þare opinioun. bot 10
 (138). fra þe faderis war aduertist of king tarquinis deith, *þai nocht onelie ceissit⁶ of þare gude dedis done to þe smal pepill, bot p. 150. als began | to Invaide þame Ilk day with new Iniuris. the ciete 20
 namyt segnia (quhilk was afore ane colone of romanis) howbeit It stude certane tyme at þe opinioun of king tarquyne, was recoverit and brocht as afore to Romane empire. The Inhabitantis þareof war ekit with mare nowmer þan afore. The samyn ȝere þe romanis war diuidit in xxxi tribis,⁷ And in þe Idis of 25
 maj nixt following was dedicate þe tempill of mercurij.⁸ (XXII) Sa lang as þe weris continuit⁹ betuix romanis and latynis, nowthir was sikkir peace nor ȝit were betuix romanis and wolchis; ȝit þe wolchis made all þe ordinance þat þai mycht to support þe latynis; bot þe dictator & romane pepill made sa 30
 haisty provisioun þat þe latynis and wolchis mycht nocht Invaide þame atanis. At last þe Consulis, movit with maist haitrent aganis þe wolchis, brocht mony awfull legiouns in þare landis. The wolchis, seand þame self brokin of þare purpoiſ be

¹ pace.² following.⁵ benefices.⁷ tribus.⁹ continewit.² secker to.⁴ allanerlie.⁶ cessit.⁸ marcurie.

vnawarnist cummyng of romane legiouns¹ in þare landis, war sa
 astonist þat, but ony recountering or debate, þai gaif iij^c plegeis
 for peace, quhilkis war all sonnys of þe princes and maist nobil
 men of Chora and pomecia; throw quhilk þe romane legiouns
 5 returnit hame but ony batall. ȝit als sone as þir wolchis war
 deliuerit of all fere of Inemyis, þai returnit to þare auld slichtis,
 makand provisioun in þare maist quiete maner to Inavid þe
 romanis; and gat þe hernikis confederat to þame, And sone
 eftir send þare legatis to persuade þe latynis to þare opinioun.
 10 bot þe recent slauchter made on þe saidis latinis at þe louch of
 regill causit þame to haue sic extreme haterent aganis all per-
 sons persuading þame to haue ony batall with romanis, þat
 þai tuke þir legatis, & nocht alanelrie send þame to rome, bot
 15 deliuerit þame to þe consulis, be quham It was schewin þe
 wolchis and hernikis war confederate with all vthir circum-
 stance (as Is afore rehersit) to Inavid þe romanis. this humani-
 te was sa plesand to þe faderis, that þai sufferit vj^m plegeis &
 20 prisoneris of latynis | to returne hame but ony ransoun. Syne p. 151.
 tuke consultacioun with þe new faderis to trete peace & be
 confederate with latinis; how beit þe samyn culd² neuer be
 done in na tymes past. The latynis, reiosing of þir doingis, and
 seand þame self (becaus þai war devisaris of peace) estimyet³
 25 with sic * glore amang romanis, send ane goldin croun to be (139).
 offerit to Iupiter in þe capitoll. Mony of þir presonaris
 (quhilkis war lately deliuerit be beneuolence of romanis) returnit
 with þir legatis to rome, and eftir þare cummyng vesyt þe samyn
 housis quhare þai war haldin afore in captiuite, and gaif thankis
 30 to þare lugearis for þe benevolence schawin to þame during þe
 tyme of þare captiuite. Sone eftir, þe romanis and latynis war
 lugeit togiddir with mare familiarite & kyndenes þan euer was
 amang þame in ony tyme afore.

¹ legyons.

² micht.

³ estemt.

how grete dissensioun raiß betuix the faderis & pepil
of rome, and of sindri consultaciouns made to
repreß þe samyn; and how þis dissensioun was
mesit be prudence of þe consul seruilius; how þe
sade consul dantit þe wolchis, & gaif the spuleȝe 5
þareof amang his indegent knichtis. Ca. xj.¹

(XXIII) Now was þe batall of wolchis apperand haistelie
aganis þe romanis, quhen þe ciete of rome was full of haitrent
and dissensioun amang þame self; for þe faderis and small
pepil war of sindri & contrarius opinions. This dissensioun 10
raiß in speciall throw certane Indigent pepill, quhilkis war
haldin in captiuite for non-payment of dettis to þare creditouris.
The small pepill lamentit hevilie, Sayand² þai war send furth
of þe said ciete, fechtand continually for þe liberte & empire
þareof; And at þare returnyng þai war takin & opprest Be þe
cieteȝanis, throw quhilk nocht allanerlie apperit þare liberte
mare sikkir³ in tyme of were þan pece, bot was als mare
sikkir³ amang þare Inemyis þan amang þare freyndis. This
p. 152. Invy | and dissensioun of pepill, sproutand in þis maner, was
gretumly inflambit⁴ be calamye of ane agit man, quhilk was 20
descendit of Illuster lynnage. This man past with þe ansenȝis
of all his eldaris to ane opin place, quhare maist confluence
was of pepil, eftir þat he was haldin in lang captiuite be his
(140). creditouris, for dett In quhilk he * was deuoluit. his clething
throw filth of presoun was vile and horribil, the habit of his
body was richt fowsum, for he was lene and nere consumyt
throw hunger. The hare of his berde was lang and taty,⁵ &
the hare of his hede made his face elrage & wylde; zit nocht-
withstanding þis difformite he was knawin, for he was ane 25
capitane sum tyme in þe romane weris, and had done grete
vassalege⁶ baith for þe honoure & defence of þe ciete, as weil

¹ xxxijj.² saying.³ sicker.⁴ Inflammit.⁵ tawty.⁶ wassalage.

pperit be sindri wannys and markis in his face and vther [partis] of his body. The pepill had grete miseracioun of his calamite, and stude about him on euery side, demanding him how and be quhat maner þat vile habit and deformite was 5 cummyn to him. he answerit þat he was sum tyme ane man of armes in þe sabyne weris, and was ane heretoure of grete heretage, bot þe sabynis nocht alanelrie wastit þe samyn and barrit him fra þe frutis þareof, bot als brynt þe village quhare he was borne, and confiscate al his gudis and bestial. And nochtwith- 10 standing þat he was brocht on þis maner to extreme pouerty,¹ he was chargit to pay þe samyn tribute as he payit afore. schortlie, þe dett in quhilk he was devolvit to his creditouris has brocht him to þe said calamite; ffor þis dett þat he was awand be non-payment was ay duplyit² on him be vsure and 15 okkir, and raiß sa grete be doubling & non-payment þareof at termes assignit, þat he was constrenit to sel his kyndelie heretage, quhilk was left to him baith be his fader and eme. And nocht alanelrie was he disherist þus of his landis, bot als throw þe samyn he was bereft of all his vthir gudis. And finalie, 20 quhen his creditouris mycht recovir na mare gudis, | thay pynit p. 153. his body with grete torment; for he was nocht condampnit to service, bot erar to presoun and bouchery.³ And to verify þe samyn, he schew mony grene woundis on his bak, apperandlie as he had bene new scourgit. Throw þe miserabil sicht 25 schewin to þe pepill of þis man, and throw his pietuous regret,⁴ raiß ane huge noyis and clamoure, nocht onelie in þe merkett bot als throw all partis of þe ciete. ffor euery persons (quhilkis war thirllit vnder dett to þare creditouris) and all þai quhilkis war lately deliuerit þareof, ruschit opinlie to þe merket,⁵ 30 desiring pietuusly the romane pepill to support þame aganis þare troubil.⁶ in euery partis of þe ciete occurrit wilfullie certane men to augment þis sedicioun, And drew þe pepill with grete noyis * and cumpanyis out of all partis to þe merkett.⁵ (141). Sa mony of þe faderis (as war present for þe tyme) war in grete

¹ poverte.² dowbillit.³ bocherie.⁴ regrate.⁵ mercat.⁶ trible.

dangere, throw þis effraye suddenly falling amang þe pepill ; and but dout þe faderis suld nocht haue eschapit with þare livis, war nocht þis sedicioun was þe more haistelie repressit be Intervencioun of þe twa consulis. In þe mene tyme, ane cumpany of reuthful and Indigent pepill turnit þare vissage to þe consulis, 5 and began to schaw þare thirlage and vtheris þare grete desormiteis, allegaand þai suld nocht haue ressauit sic meritis in rewarde of þare chevelrie ; & desirit herefore þe consulis, mare with awfull þan ony benyng continance, to convene þe faderis ; And in þe menetyme þai stude with brade garnisouns about þe 10 court, to be arbitouris and dressouris of all public materis as þai plesit. Ane parte of þe faderis (how beit þai war few in nowmer) come be aventure (as said Is) to þis convencioun, and drewe þame towart þe consulis. The remanent faderis war nocht onelie absent fra þe courte, bot als for fere of pepill þat 15 was gadderit in þis furye durst nocht convene to public merkett ;¹ Throw quhilk þe faderis (quhilkis war presentlie assemblit) mycht conclude na thing concernyng grete materis for þare few nowmer. Than þe confusit multitude of pepil belevit þame delayit and mokkit, and traistit þat þe faderis war nocht absent fra þis 20 convencioun be ony aventure or fere, bot alanelie to be Im-

p. 154. pediment to þare desiris. | Attoure, the consullis nocht allanerly dissauit þame, but als turnit bakkis to þare peticious. Apperit þus þare Calamiteis to be in plane derisioun to þe faderis. This sedicioun was finalie approcheand to sic poynt, þat þe 25 maieste of consullis mycht nocht abandon þe Instant furie of pepill ; Throw quhilk þe faderis war vncertane, nocht knawand quhidder þai war in mare dangere to compere in þis furie of pepill, Or to be absent fra þe samyn. At last þai apperit. the courte finalie beand garnist with hale nowmer of faderis, nocht 30 onelie war þe said faderis, bot als þe consulis, of sindri and diuerſ opinious. Appius Claudius consul, ane man of hie curage, decernit þis sedicioun to be dantit be autorite consulaire, Saying gif one or two² of þe maist sidicious³ persouns amang þe pepill war scharplie punyst for þis Instant troubill, þe re- 35

¹ mercat.

² ane or twa.

³ seditious.

manent wald ceiſſ for fere þareſſ. * Seruilius his colleig, ane (142). man of mare soft Ingynē, said þe myndis of pepill mycht be mare eselie bowit þan brokin. (XXIV) In þe menetyme succedit ane vthir trubil, to þe grete terroure of þe ciete, ffor ane post 5 come with grete noyis fra þe latynis, to aduertise þe romanis þat þe wolchis was cummand with ane dangerus armye to sege rome. Thir tithingis movit þe faderis & commouns in diuerſ maner and sortis; ffor nochtwiſtanding þat þai war baith membris of ane ciete, ȝit be þis dissensioun þai war dividit in two sindri bodyis 10 and myndis; ffor þe commoun pepill reisit þat þe wolchis war cummyn (as þai belevit) be provisioun of goddis to revenge þe hicht and pride of þe faderis. Attoure, euery ane of þe pepill persuadit vthir to gif nocht þare names in writt, þat þai suld nocht be rasit in ane armye aganis þare Inemyis; Thinkand It 15 mare plesand þat þai and þe faderis suld periſſ¹ all togiddir þan to periſſ þame allane. And þarefore desirit þe faderis to tak þare wappynys & defend þe ciete, þat þe proffittis and commoditeis conquest be Ieoperdie of batall May be allanerlie with þame quhare moist dangers is sustenit. On þe tothir side, 20 the curage of faderis was richt astonist & doutsum, | Als mekill p. 155. for þe fere of þare awne pepill as for ony vncouth Inemyis; And þarefore desirit maist tendirlie Seruilius consul (because he was gevin to favoure populare) to deliuer þe commoun weill of troubil with quhilk It was presentlie circumvenit. Than 25 Seruilius departit fra þe senaturis, and began to mak ane orisoun to þe pepill, Saying þe faderis tuk grete sollicitude in þare consultaciouns to dreſſ all materis for þe commoun proffitt of [þe] pepill. Nochtþeles þare deliuerance in þis wechty mater concernyng þe gretest parte of þe ciete, þat is to say, þe small pepill, 30 was Interruppit be Interuenciouſ of ane vncouth trubil, quhilk Invadit þe haill public weill. And becaus þare Inemyis war sa nere þe portis, and þe batall sa nere approcheand, þai mycht mak na new alteracioun at þat tyme for weill of þe pepil. And howbeit þai had lasere² to do þe samyn, It was nocht honest 35 to þe pepill to refuse þe defence of þare liberte and realme,

¹ perice.² lasar.

without þai war afore rewardit for þe samyn ; nor ȝit was It honest to þe faderis to releif þare Indegent pepill erare be force (143). and dredoure than be þare awne beneuolence. * The generall edict made be Seruilius causit þe pepill to gif þe mare faith to his orisoun ; ffor be þis edict was commandit þat na cieteȝanis 5 of rome be haldin owtir bound or inclusit within ony houȝ or presoun in rome, vnder pane of dede,¹ That þir pepil quhilk war presonit in þis wise suld nocth be Impeschit² þarethrow to gif þare names in writh. Attoure It was commandit be þe samyn edict þat na man sell, nor ȝit posseid, þe gudis of ony 10 romane cieteȝane, nor tary his sonnys nor nepotis sa lang as þai ar³ within þe romane army. be þis edict all þe pepill þat stude thirlit vndir dett to þare creditouris⁴ gaif haistelie þare names in writh, and come ruscheand out of all partis to þe merket, for þare creditouris durst nocth withhold þame.⁴ Thus⁵ was ane 15 huge army rasit, with mare ordoure, wisdome, and vertew þan euer was ony vthir armye afore aganis þe wolchis. The consull went fordwart with þis foresaid armye, and satt doun with his tentis ane litill space fra þe armye of wolchis.

p. 156. (XXV) The nicht following, the wolchis, confiding in this new 20 dissensioun betuix þe faderis and small pepil, assailȝeit þare tentis, to espie gif ony fugitive persoun war tressonably cummyn fra þe romanis to aduertiȝ⁶ þare Inemiyis In quhat estate þare armye stude, Or to reveil how þare army myȝt be Invadit with maist avantage. Nochtþeles the wolchis war Impeschit, 25 for þe watche⁷ of romanis persauit þare cummyn, throw quhilk þai war haistelie rasit and be sound of trumpett went to harnes. Thus failȝeit þe wolchis of þare first assalt. The residewe of þe nicht was in quiet with baith þe Oistis. Als sone as licht apperit on þe nixt day, þe wolchis fillit up þe fowsyis,⁸ quhare þe campe 30 of romanis lay, and Invadit þare trinschis. belive⁹ all muni-

¹ deith.² empeschit.³ wer.⁴⁻⁴ Transposed as follows in B.: durst nocth withhold þaim | In writ and come ruscheand out of all partis to þe | mercat, ffor þir creditouris durst (deleted) gaif haistelie þair | names.⁵ þis.⁶ aduertice.⁷ wache.⁸ fowseis.⁹ beliefe.

ciouns,¹ quhilkis war laid be Industrye to sivir² þe armyis, war removit. þan þe counsel, seand all his Oist richt desirus³ of bataill, And in speciaill þe Indigent knichtis afore rehersit, to haue experience of þare feirþ myndis, he sum parte delayit þe 5 batall. And fra he saw þare myndis richt ernistlie gevin þareto, he gaif signne to Ione.⁴ The wolchis at þe first Ioynyn⁵ was put to flicht, And chasit with continuall slauchter sa lang as the futeaman mycht follow; and eftir þame followit the horsemen, and chasit þame with Ithand slauchter to þare tentis; and be- 10 caus þai war astonist with huge dredoure * for þe chace sa (144). feirslly following on þare bakkis, þai durst nocht abide in þare [said] tentis quhare þai war campit afore þe batall. Thus war the tentis of wolchis tane, and þame self miserably discomfist. The consul went arelie on þe morow with all his legiouns to 15 Swessa pomecia, quhare þe wolchis war fled eftir þis last discomfitoure. Nochtþeles þe counsull tuke þe toun within schort tyme eftir his cummyng, And gaif all þe spuleȝe þareof to his wery & Indigent knichtis; syne returnit with his victorius armye to rome.

20 how peace was tretit betuix Wolchis & þe romanis, p. 157.
and parte of þare landis ekit to romane empire;
how þe Sabynis & Aruncis war vincust, And how
þe faderis and þe pepill of rome fell agane in new
dissensioun. Ca. xij.⁶

25 At returnyng of þe Consull to rome, come þe legatis of Wolchis namyt mitetranis, ffor þai war astonist be taking of pomecia, and desirit peace. þus was peace grantit finalie to þe Wolchis, bot ane parte of þare landis war ekit to romane empire. (XXVI) Schort tyme eftir, þe Sabynis maid þe romanis

¹ aventureis (!) ² syver. ³ desyris. ⁴ Iune. ⁵ Iunyng. ⁶ xxxvij.

richt astonist. This effray was erare ane vane noyß than ony batall, ffor ane ymoure was brocht haistely to Rome within þe nyght, þat þe Sabynis war cummyn with maist terribil Incursiou in [þe] romane landis, noct fer fra þe rivere of Anien, and put baith villagis & landis be fire and hereschip¹ to vtr euersioun. haistelie aganis þe Sabynis was send Aulus posthumius with þe haill power of horsmen, for he was dictator in þe batall afore rehersit aganis the latynis. Eftir him followit seruilius consull with ane strang power of futemen. The horsmen discomfist ane grete nowmer of sabinis, eftir þat þai war skatterit but array at þare spulezeis. The remanent legiouns of sabinis mycht noct resist þe fute Oist of romanis, ffor þai war sa Irkit be þir Incursiou In þe nyght afore, & sa ful of mete & wynis, þat þai had bot skarß powar to fle.

(145.) *Thus was þe effray of Sabyne batall baith herde² in rome, & 15
endit, within þe space of ane nyght. On þe day following, quhen þe romanis belevit ferme peace of euery pepill liand þame about, come þe legatis of Aruncis denunceand batall to þame, Without þai haistelie randerit þe landis tane fra þame afore & ekit to romane empire. Als sone as þir legatis war 20
departit, þe fame was þat þis army of Aruncis was sene ane large space fra þare ciete, cummand fordwart to sege Rome; throw quhilk raiß [sa] suddane effray amang þe faderis, þat þai mycht nowthir ripelie avise nor ȝit (becaus þai ran al attanis p. 158. to harnes) mycht | gif plesand ansuere to þe legatis, bringand 25
sa awful army within þare message. finalie þe romanis gadderit ane army to pas fordwart to Aricia, bot þai war noct fer gane quhen þe aruncis apperit in sicht, and sone eftir baith þe armyis Ionit;³ bot þe Aruncis war vincust, And be þis batall ane end was put to all þare weris. (XXVII) The Aruncis beand þus 30
discomfist, þe romane army, sa oft victorius at frequent Ieopardyis within sa few dayis, abaid on þe promeß and faith maid to þame baith be Seruilius consul and þe senate. Than appius Claudius, ane man of Innative pride, to mak þe faith and promeß of his colleig in vane, allegeit scharplie afore þe pepill 35

¹ herschippis.

² hard.

³ Iunit.

þe law concernyng payment of lent money. throw seuerite of
 þis law noct̄t alanelie all personis¹ (quhilkis war afore devoluit
 in dett) war commandit to be restorit to þare creditouris, bot
 als sindri vthir persouns for new dett war randerit in² þe samyn
 5 maner. Als sone as þe pepill (þat war returnit fra þis last batall)
 saw þis trubil new appering, þai ran with grete cumpanyis to
 seruilius Consull, Ilkane reprocheand þe promisß maid be him,
 And Inquiring gif It was þe frute & rewarde of þare cheuelrie
 & woundis sustenit in þis last batall. And sum tyme þai schew
 10 þe wannys & prentis of þare sare woundis latelie sustenit in
 þare Weris, desiring him herefore to bring þis mater with new
 consultacioun afore þe faderis, or ellis to concur with þame as
 ane emprioure suld do with his men of armyis, and as ane
 consul suld do with his knichtis. Thir wordis movit þe consul,
 15 how beit the mater (as It presentlie occurrit) causit him to
 change his mynde; for noct̄t allanelie was his colleig con-
 trarius to his condicioun made afore to þe pepill, Bot als þe
 faderis war * contrarius on þe samyn maner. And becaus þis (146).
 seruilius bure him Indeffrent³ in þis mater, he conquest grete
 20 haterent of þe pepill, & was na thing luffit with þe faderis; for
 he was haldin soft and ambitious with þe faderis, & maist dis-
 satefull | with þe pepill. Apperit þus þat he suld be within p. 159.
 schorte tyme na leß hatit with þe pepill þan was appius. In
 þe mene tyme, fell ane new debate amang þe consullis, quhilk
 25 of þame suld dedicate þe tempill of marcurie. The faderis
 reieckit þis mater fra þame to þe pepill, vnder sic conditioun
 þat he þat war chosin þareto suld be baith stewart of al vittalis
 pertenand to þe ciete for þat ȝere, And sal als Institute þe col-
 lege of marchandis, & ressaue all solempniteis þat suld be done
 30 to þe bischope. The pepill frustrate baith þe consullis of þis
 honoure, for þai gaif þe dedicatioun of þe said tempil to marcus
 lectorius, centurio primupile,⁴ quhilk thing apperit na les done
 in honoure of lectorius þan in contemptioun of þe consullis;
 ffor It was ane dignite passing abone his estate. And noct̄t
 35 alanelie war þe consullis commovit for þis contemptioun, bot

¹ þe soumes, A.

² on.

³ Indifferent.

⁴ primipile.

als þe faderis commovit on þe samyn wise. On þe tothir side, þe curage of pepill was þe more rasit, & went ane more feirß way þan euir þai afore devisit; ffor thai war sa disparit, þat þai beleuit nowthir helpe of þe faderis nor ȝit of þe consulis. At last, quhen þai saw ane of þare companzeons brocht in Iuge- 5
ment to here him self punyst for his dett, þai ran all togiddir to his debate, throw quhilk þare noyis and clamoure was sa grete þat nowthir mycht þe decretis of þe consulis be herd, nor ȝit wald þe pepill obey þareto. Apperit na thing to be done be law bot alanerlie be force; And becaus sindri of þe 10
pepil war trublit be þare creditouris In presens of þe consulis, Thay turnit all dredoure & dangere of þare commoun liberte on þare said creditouris. Abone þis trubil, þe ciete was astonist throw weris instantlie appering be þe sabynis; And howbeit þe senaturis decernit ane armye to be rasit, ȝit þare wald nane 15
gif þare namys in writh. Than Appius began to rage in maist Ire, and accusit þe ambition of his colleig, sayand for favoure populare he Intendit to betraþ þe public liberte; And becaus p. 160. he wald nocht allege þe law | concernyng lent mony, he was Impediment þat na army suld be rasit be auctorite of þe senate. 20
(147). * “The public weill” (sade Cladius) “is nocht sa desert, nor ȝit þe consell nor senȝeorye of romanis is sa attenuate and febill, bot I sal revenge baith þe contemptioun done to þe faderis and to me.” And nochtwitþstanding þat ane huge multitude of pepill was standard about him, all Inflammeyt in maist 25
fervent Ire throw licence & liberte recentlie be þame vsurpit, he commandit to tak ane of þe maist notabill¹ and principale persouns of þis factioun populare, þat þe punytioun made on him suld be ane terroure to þe remanent pepill. Als sone as þis man was takin be þe surreouris, he appetit to þe pepill; 30
ȝit appius had nocht gevin place to his appellatioun, becaus þe Iugement of pepil (as he knewe) wald be contrarius to his doingis, war nocht his obstinate and feirß mynde was vincust mare be auctorite & counsell² of þe faderis þan be ony clamour & noyis of small pepill, Sa fer þe ³curage & myndis of small 35

¹ noble.² consale.³ The fifth hand in B. resumes here (p. 177).

pepill war boldin to sustene þe Invy of Appius. Attoure Appius the consull raiß Ilk day mare and mare, nocht alanelie be opin clamouris, bot erare be thingis mare wikit¹ and dangerus; þat is to say, be secessioun and private counsale. At last baith the 5 consulis war sa faschit, seand þame self odious to þe pepill, þat þai wilfully exonerit² þame self of al auctorite & dignite consulare. Seruilius was hatit baith with þe pepil and faderis, And appius alanelry luffit with þe faderis.

10 how þe faderis and small pepill continewit in þare (148) dissencions; Of þare sindri consultaciouns þare-intill; how marcus Valerius was made dictator to abandoun³ þe smal pepill of þare insolent dissensions; And how þe equis, wolchis, and sabynis war vincust⁴ be romanis. Ca. xij.⁵

15 (XXVIII) Sic thingis done, Aulus Virginius & Titus Vitellius war made consulis. The smal pepill, nocht knawand | quhat p. 161. myndis þir new consulis wald bere to þame, tuke private consultacioun, and convenit be frequent cumpanyis within þe nycht to avise on þare materis. Sum tymes þare convencioun was in 20 mont esquilles, and sum tyme in mont Aventyne, þat þai suld nocht be astonist to do ony thing be Vnprudence or foly quhen euer It happynnyt þame to assembill in commoun place. The consulis, knawing þis mater (as It was) richt noysum, schew þe dampnage⁶ þarethrow following to þe faderis. The faderis, 25 quhen þis mater was brocht afore þame, mycht nocht ordourlie gif þare consultacioun þareintill. This mater was sa postponit be noys of pepil and Indignatioun of faderis, þat þe consullis thocht best to remitt þe charge of Ilk thing þat was to be execute be þare auctorite alanelry to þe senate, þat þai mycht

¹ vikit. ² exonerat. ³ aboundoun. ⁴ vincost. ⁵ xxxv. ⁶ dampnage.

bere þe Invy þareof afore þe pepill. ffor þai allegeit, gif þe commoun wele of Rome was gouernit be auctorite, nane bot þe public¹ counsel suld be haldin in rome. howbeit as þaz þe public¹ weil was devidit and skatterit² in ane thousand sindri courtis & consulis, ffor sum of þame war made in mont 5 Esquilles, & sum in mont aventyne. “be þe faith of hercules” (said þe faderis) “had we sic ane man as appius Claudius! for sic ane man war bettir þan ony consull.³ he wald within ane moment remove all troubil Instantlie appering.” The consulis, correkkit in his wise be þe faderis,⁴ Inquirit quhat þai 10 erast desirit, ffor þai war to do na thing bot as þe faderis⁴ (149). ple*sit. Than þe faderis decernit ane army to be rasit, for þe small pepill be sleuth and ydilnes rageit in all Insolence. At last, quhen þe consulis war departit fra þe faderis and cummyn in Iugement, þai callit all þe ȝoung men of þe ciete be þare 15 names; bot þare was nane þat made þame ansuere.⁵ ȝit þare assemblit ane confusit nowmer of pepil about þe consulis, saying þai wald nocht suffir þame self to be ony langare frustrate be⁶ vane behechtis, & declarit þat þe consulis sall neuer gett ane man of þame to ane armye, quhill þe said consulis war 20 p. 162. opinlie sworne to deliuer to Ilk man first his liberte, or | euer þai deliuer to him ony wappynnys,⁷ þat þai may fecht erare for defence of þare native cuntre and cietejanis þan to fecht for ony defence of þe faderis. The consulis considerit weil þe mater, as It was commandit be þe faderis, And howbeit þai 25 saw mony of þe faderis speik richt feirslie⁸ within þe wallis of þat courte, ȝit nane of þe said faderis wald concur with þame and be participant of all Invie and haterent of pepill. Apperit þus ane richt dangerus contencioun betuix⁹ þe faderis 10 and small pepill; ȝit þe consulis, afore þai assaleȝeit extreme danger, 30 tuke purpois to convene þe faderis¹⁰ to new consultacioun. Sone estir convenit mony of all þe ȝoung faderis of þe ciete to þe chalmeris quhare þe consulis war, commanding þe saidis consulis to exoner þame self of all auctorite & dignite con-

¹—¹ *om.*² counsale.⁵ answeir.⁷ wappingis.⁹ betweix.² scattris.⁴ fadderis.⁶ w^t.⁸ ferslie.¹⁰—¹⁰ *om.*

sulare, Sen þare myndis war nocht abil to sustene þe chargis pertenyng¹ þareto. (XXIX) The consulis, havand experience sufficientlie of al þe materis, said as followis; "O faderis conscript, þat ȝe soll nocht say bot we ar reddy to execute al

5 Ieoperdyis, sen sa grete seditioun is risyn in þe ciete, we desire² þat sic persouns as accusis oure sleuth pas with þis armye quhen It is rasit in oure cumpany; ffor sen It is ȝoure plesser, we soll Ieoperd ws als fer as he þat Is maist feirf³ in þis ciete." The consulis estir þir wourdis returnit to þare settis, And be Industrie

10 gart call ane man be his name quhilk was present in þare sicht. This man made na ansuere,⁴ for he had ane multitude of pepil armit at all poyntis to sauf him fra all Iniure þat mycht follow.

nochtþeles The consulis send ane burro to tak him; bot he was haistelie rescourcis be þe pepill. Incontinent þe faderis

15 (quhilkis come as assessoris to þe consulis) come with grete noyis, cryand, "þis Is ane terribill deid," And discendit haistelie fra þare trone to haue supportit * þis officiare. The (150).

pepil, estir þat þai had stoppit þe officiare to tak⁵ þe man afore rehersit, come with all þe⁶ furie on þe faderis. Nochtþeles þe

20 debate⁷ was haistelie mesit be Intervencion | of þe consulis. p. 163.

This debait⁷ was finist but straik of stane or darte, for þe noyis and clamoure was mare þan ony Iniure þareintil. The senate effrayitlie⁷ convenit to þis counsell, and was more effrayitlie⁷ consultit. The faderis (quhilkis war Iniurit in þis mater⁸)

25 desirit punycioun to be made for þe offence committit. Nochtþeles Ilk man began to gif⁹ his counsel¹⁰ mare be noyis and clamoure þan be ony gudelie sentence; And quhen þare haterent was a litill mesit, the consulis began to reproche þe faderis, saying na bettir consell¹⁰ [wes] in þe court þan in þe merkett.

30 At last þe faderis began to be consultit with bettir ordoure. Estir lang consultacions thre opinious & sentence was in þis mater. The sentence of publius Virgineus was nocht generall, for his mynde was þat nane of þe thirlit pepill suld be deliuerit fra þare dett, bot sa mony as faucht vnder seruilius aganis þe

¹ pertenand. ³ fers. ⁵ take. ^{7—7} om. ⁹ geif.

² dysyre. ⁴ answir. ⁶ þair. ⁸ maner. ¹⁰ counsale.

Aruncis, wolchis, and sabinis. Titus largius allegit þat þe tyme was mare expedient to tak consultacioun for dressing of grete materis, þan to rewarde ony meritis or gude dedis; becaus þe hail communite was drownit in dett, And þarefore na tranquillite mycht follow without þe small pepill ware equalie relevit. sfor 5 gif ane war preferrit to ane vthir, þe small pepill suld rise¹ in mare seditiouñ þan afore. Appius claudius, ane man of feirþ nature, and made wyld be haterent of pepill aganis him on þat ane parte,² & gloriis be loving of þe faderis on þat vthir parte,³ said þe pepill war rasit on flocht⁴ mare throw þare 10 licence & opin renȝeis þan ony miserabil calamite fallin⁵ to þame, as weil apperit; for þai war mare Insolent þan rageand; for all þis damage⁶ was cummyn alanelry becaus ane appellacioun has place fra þe faderis and counsulis to þe pepill. This apperis þe auctorite of counsulis to be erare ane mynassing þan 15 ony empire abone þe pepill, Beacuþ þe appellaciouns has place before þe samyn persouns quhilkis ar participant with þe cryme. "Tharefore," said Appius, "latt ws create ane dictator, fra quhais sentence is na appellacion; for be þis way all þis furie, p. 164. þat now birnis sa bald⁷ | in the hartis of small pepil, sal be 20 sone slokynnyt.⁸ traist ȝe," said Appius, "þat ony man wil be (151). sa malaperte to strike ane officiare, quhen * he seis þe Iuridiccioun baith of live⁹ and deith in his handis quhais maieste Is violate be his tressoun?" (XXX) This sentence of Appius (as It was in dede) apperit to sindri richt terribill in respect 25 of the sentence of Virgineus and largius, quhilkis war mare plesand and humane in þare Iugementis; ȝit þe opinioun and sentence of largius apperit Vnproffittabil, becaus he desirit þe pepill equaly to be deliuerit of þare dettis; And gif þat war done, al faith promittit to creditouris within the ciete suld 30 be aluterlie brokin. herefore the counsel¹⁰ of Virgineus was thocht mare moderate and ressonabill þan ony of þir vthir sentence. The faderis applaudit finalie to þe oppinioun of

¹ riȝt.² on þe ta part.³ on þe toþer part.⁴ rasit on floucht.⁵ falling.⁶ dampnaige.⁷ so bauld.⁸ slokin.⁹ lif.¹⁰ counsaill.

appius be faction of private persouns, quhilkis has euer noyit & sal euir noy the commoun weil. The mater was sa nere dressit þat appius had almaist bene create dictator, to þe Infinite troubil of þe ciete; for þe making of him dictator suld 5 haue drawin þe lufe and myndis of commoun pepil fra þe faderis in [ane] maist dangerus tyme; for þe sabynis, equis and wolchis war all providit and reddy atanis to Invaid þe romanis. The faderis for þir ressouns thocȝt expedient to gif þe empire and dictatoury¹ to ane man of mare soft Ingynē, 10 And þarefore made marcus valerius þe sone of valesius dictator. The small pepill, nochwithstanding þat þis valerius was create dictator to resist þare desiris, ȝit becaus his brothir Valerius publicola dotate þame with sa mony gude lawis and priuilegis² aganis þe faderis and consullis, þai belevit na thing contrarius 15 nor displesand to þare weil mycht rise³ fra þat houȝt. The edict made eftir be þis Valerius confermit⁴ þe myndis of small pepill to him; for þe samyn was nocht fer different fra þe edict made before be seruilius consul, at þe beginnyng of þe first dissencioun betuix þe said faderis & small pepill. Alwayis 20 þe smal pepill, thinkand best to obey þe auctorite of þis dictator, leſt þare debait & gaif | þare names in writt, And sone p. 165. eftir was rasit ane army of mare power þan evir was rasit afore þai dais; for þai war x⁵ legiouns of pepill, of quhilkis foure was gevin to þe dictator, and thre to Ilkane of þe con- 25 sulis. Now mycht the batell be na langare deferrit,⁶ for þe equis latelie Invadit þe romane landis. Attoure þe oratouris of latynis desirit þe romanis oþthir to send þame supporte, Or ellis to suffir þame [to] tak wapynnys⁷ for defence of þare awne landis. It was found * mare expedient to þe romanis (152). 30 to defend þe vnarmit latynis fra all Invasouris þan to suffir þame bere wapynnys,⁸ In aventure gif þe sade latynis gat ony victorie, þai mycht be more facill to rebellioun. ffor þir ressouns vetusius consul was send in þare supporte, quhilk put ane⁹ finale end to all þare troubil; ffor þe equis leſt þe

¹ dictatoure. ³ ryȝt.

² privilaigis. ⁴ conformit, both.

⁵ ten.

⁶ differrit.

⁷ wapingis.

⁸ wappis.

⁹ a.

planis, and confiding more in þe straitnes of þe ground þan in þare wapynnys,¹ þai debatit þame self in þe hicht of þe montanis. The tothir consul Virgineus past aganis þe wolchis, and þat he suld nocht tyne his tyme, he waistit þe wolchis landis with sic cruelte þat þai war constrainit to gif batall. 5 Now was baith þe armyis arrayit in myddis of ane feild betuix þe tentis of athir side afore þare trynschis. The Wolchis (becaus þai war in mare nowmer þan [war] þe romanis) had þame in contempcioun, and come fordwart² skatterit but ony array. The consul be his prudence wald nouthir suffir his 10 armye to remove, nor ȝit to mak ony³ clamoure or noyis; bot commandit þame to stand still with þare darts all in þare handis. Als⁴ sone as þe armyis war Ionit, The romanis faucht⁴ maist cruelly with þare swerdis. The Wolchis, ouresett with lang travell and clamoure, eftir þat þai war cummy⁵ on þe 15 romanis, quham þai traistit to haue effrayit⁶ for fere of þe huge danger appering, and seand þe said romanis sa feirly fechtand aganis þame with schynand swerdis afore þare ene, þai war na leſt astonist þan þai had bene tane vnder wait, And Incontinent þai gaif bakkis. howbeit þai had litill pus- 20

p. 166. sance to fle, for þai | war ouresett and ayndleſſ⁶ throw þare lang ryſnyng afore þai Ionit. On þe tothir side the romanis (becaus þai war nocht travellit in þe begynnyng of þare bataill) war fresche, and nocht alanerlie ourtuke suddenly þe said wolchis, bot als with grete force tuke þare tentis quhare þai war campit; syne chasit⁷ þame to þe toun of velicras with sic feirsnes þat baith þe victouris and vincust pepill vnder ane cumpany and buschement enterit within þe said toun atanis. bot⁸ mare horribil slauchter was made þan in þe first batall or chaif⁹, ffor þare was nane sauffit except alanerlie sa mony 30 as randrit þame self nakit in þe romane handis. (XXXI) quhil þe wolchis war dantit in þis wise, the dictator vincust þe sabynis and distursit¹⁰ þame with þare tentis; howbeit þe samyn¹¹ was nocht but cruel bargane and Innowmerabill slauchter

¹ wappenis.

³ any.

⁵ affrayit.

⁷ chaissit.

⁹ chace.

² furthwart.

⁴—⁴ om.

⁶ endles.

⁸ quhair.

¹⁰ discursxit.

on athir side. for þe * dictator left his band of horsmen, & (153) come on þe myd feild of sabynis on þare left hand with his Oist of futemen, quhare baith þare wyngis war arrayit for defence þareof, and be þe samyn force he tuke þare tentis and 5 put end to þare bataill. Sene¹ the bataill was fochtin² at³ þe louch of Regil, þare was na batall mare honest þan þis last rehersit. The dictator Valerius returnit ~~with~~ tryvmphe to rome. abone all vthir honouris quhilkis war gevin to him, þare was made in þe generall playing placis⁴ ane sete to him and his 10 posterite for contemplatioun of playis⁴ quhen þai occurrit, and þe sadill curale⁵ set in þe samyn. The romanis, eftir þis victorie of wolchis, tuke þe landis namyt Velicras and ekit þame to romane empire; And sone eftir send ane cumpany of romanis to Inhabit þe toun of Velicras, and maid It ane colonie of 15 romanis. Eftir thir frequent Victories followit new batell aganis the eques; ȝit þis batall was fochtin⁶ aganis þe mynde of þe consul, for þe place quhare his Inemyis lay was sa difficill⁷ þat he mycht nocht weil Inavid þame. ȝit his army thocht It dangerous to delay þe batail, In aventure | the dictator war p. 167. 20 deprivit of his office afore þai returnit to rome, throw quhilk þai mycht be frustrate als wele of his promissis as þai war afore be þe⁸ promissis⁹ of þe consulis. Thir ressouns movit þe consul to raiȝ his armye fulichlie aganis þe stay montanis quhare his Inemyis lay; And þoȝt þe samyn was attemptit with huge 25 folie, ȝit throw febilnes of wolchis followit grete felicite to romanis. ffor the wolchis war sa astonisit be feirȝ cummyng of romanis, þat þai left baith þare tentis & trynschis quhare þai war campit in maist strenthy place, afore þai come within schot¹⁰ of dartis, & fled doun in þe law valis. be þis way þe 30 romanis gat Innumerabil pray of gudis and victorie but ony effusioun of blude.

¹ Syne.³ and, *A.*⁵ curage, *A.*⁷ deficill.⁹ promisis.² fouchtin.⁴—⁴ *om.*⁶ fouchtin.⁸ his, *both.*¹⁰ schort, *A.*

(154). how Valerius dictator¹ exonerate him self of þe dictatorie;¹ of þe first secessioun of þe small pepill to þe sacrate montane, And how þai war recounsalit to þe faderis be moninius agrippa; and of þe first institucioun of þe tribunys. 5
Ca. xiiij.²

Howbeit þe romanis war thryis³ victorius in thre sindri batallis, as said Is, ȝit nowthir þe faderis nor commounys mycht forȝett þare particulare⁴ besines; ffor þe vsuraris⁵ devisit be þare subtell⁶ and crafty Industry to frustrate baith þe pepill 10 and þe dictator of all promeis⁷ and faith made to þame afore the rasing of þare last armye. valerius dictator,⁸ eftir returnyng of vetusius consul (afore ony accioun was discussit be þe senate), proponit þe accioun of þe victorius pepill, desiring to haue þare myndis concernyng þe dett In quhilk þai war⁹ presentlie devoluit. 15 And becaus his petitouns war⁹ repulsite afore þe senate, he said in þis wise, "I can nocht be plesand to ȝow sa lang as I am dressare of concorde. Nochtþeles within few dayis ȝe will desire þat þe small pepill had had sic ane maister as I haue bene to þame; and in sa fer as pertenis to my honoure, I wil nocht 20 p. 168. dissauie | my cleteȝanis with vane behechtis,¹⁰ Nor ȝit bere the office of dictatoury¹¹ ony langare abone ȝow. the contencious arang ȝoure self has movit vncouth Inemyis to Invaid ȝow with batall; and to þat fyne þat ȝoure public weil suld myster þe ministracioun of þis office þat I bure latelie. Pece is maid¹² 25 with vncouth Inemyis, bot It is empeschit at hame. ffor þir causis I wil testify ȝoure sedition erare as ane private man þan to be cled with ony public auctorite." Als sone as valerius had sade þir wourdis, he departit fra þe courte, & exonerate him self of þe dictatoury. It apperit to þe smal pepil þat 30

¹ dictatoure.

² xxxvj.

³ thrib.

⁴ perticulare.

⁵ wsararis.

⁶ subtile.

⁷ promeis.

⁸ dictatoure.

⁹—⁹ om.

¹⁰ behechtis.

¹¹ dictatourrie.

¹² maist, A.

valerius left þe said auctorite for [þe] Indignacioun þat he tuke in his mynde for þe repelling of his petitouns ; and for þat cauß þai convoyit him wth incredibil¹ lo*ving to his houſ, (155). thinkand þat he had done sufficientlie al chargis pertenyng to 5 his devore, for It stude nocht be him þat þai war frustate. (XXXII) Estir þis ane huge dredoure Invadit þe faderis, ffor þai traistit als sone as þe army was skalit, nocht alanelie mony hid conventiouns bot als new conspiratiouns suld rise haistelie in þe ciete ; And howbeit þis last army was rassit² 10 alanelie be auctorite of valerius dictator, þit becaus euery mane³ of þame was sworne to þe consulis, Thay belevit nane of þe said armye wald brek þare faith promittit. for þir ressouns (as some new occasioun of batall war approcheand be þe equis) The faderis commandit þe romane legioun and 15 armyforesaid to departe of þe ciete to resist þare Inemyis. be þir doingis raiſ þe seditioun betuix þe smal pepil and faderis mare haistelie þan It apperit. for þe army tuke þare deliuerit purpos to sla þe consulis, þat be þare deith all faith to þame promittit mycht be dissoluit. Nochtþeles, herand þat 20 na religioun nor faith of sacramentis mycht be dissoluit be cruelle fellowny, þai ceissit þare purpos, and be persuasioun of sitinius, ane subtel man, þai departit of þe ciete, but command of þe consullis, & past oure þe river of Anien to þe sacrate montane, | thre mylis fra rome. this opiniou⁴ is mare p. 169. 25 autentik þan Is þe opiniou⁴ of piso historiciane, Saying þe pepill departit alanelry to mont avantyne. The pepill, beand campit⁵ on þis montane but ony capitane, garnist þare tentis with maist sovir⁶ trinschis & fowseis, and held þame self quiet certane dayis, takand nathing bot alanelie sa mekill as mycht 30 be þare necessare sustentacioun ; And nowthir did Iniuris nor þit tuke ony Iniuris of ony pepil liand þame about. In þe menetyme raiſ ane huge dredoure in þe ciete, & throw fere þareof all thingis apperit richt doutsum, ffor all þe small pepill, quhilk war left in rome behynd þare fallowis,⁷ dred þe

¹ incredable.³ ane.⁵ campitit.⁷ followis.² rassit.⁴ oppinȝeoun.⁶ sober.

violence of þe faderis. on þe samyn maner þe faderis dred þe ydil pepill þan present in þe ciete, and war vncertane quhethir þe sammyn war mare desirus to abide or departe. Als þai knew nocht how lang þis multitude of pepil þat departit (as said is) to þe sacrate montane wald stand in quiet but ony 5
 (156). forthir Iniure or Violence, throw quhilk þe said faderis war
 richt pensive in þare myndis, oft avising quhat * Irrecouerabil
 harmes mycht follow in perditiooun of þare ciete, gif ony ex-
 terne or vncouth¹ Inemyis war Instantlie reddy to Invaid þe
 sammyn. And þarefore þai war extremelie resoluit þat na 10
 esperance² mycht appere of defence of þare ciete, bot gif þe
 cietejanis þareof stude with þame at concorde; throw quhilk
 It was necessare þame to be recounself³ with vthir be gude
 or ellis be evill wayis. ffor þir resouns It was found expedient
 to send meninius Agrippa, ane richt facound Oratoure, to þe 15
 pepill, for he was richt tendir to þame and discendit of þare
 lynnage & blude. This meninius, beand finalie ressauit within
 þe tentis of þe pepill, with maist grave maner said na thing to
 þame bot þis fabil following. Sum tyme þe membris of þe
 body war nocht all (as þai ar now) of ane opinioun and con- 20
 corde, for every ane of þame had þare awne counsel and þare
 awne ressouns be þame self. The remanent membris tuke hie
 Indignacioun aganis þe wame,⁴ thinkand richt vnworthy þat
 þare hail sollicitude, þare hale laubour & besyneß, was direkkit⁵
 p. 170. to na vthir fyne, bot alanelie for | the plesere of þe wame.⁴ 25
 Attoure, þe wame stude in myddis of þame all with maist eis
 and quiet, vsing nane vthir exercitioun bot alanelie the pleseris
 brocht to It; And þarefore all þe membris conspirit atanis
 aganis þe wame in sic Ire, þat þe handis determit⁶ to bere na
 mete to þe mouth. The mouth sal nocht resaue þat þe handis 30
 has brocht, and þe teith sal nocht grynd þat þe mouth resauis.
 quhen þe membris, boldin in þis haterent, beleuit to haue
 dantit þe wame with hunger, Thay brokkt baith þame self
 and all þe body to extreme resolucioun; Throw quhilk apperis

¹ extrein or
 vncouth.

² asperance.
³ recounselfit.

⁴ wambe (and so
 below).

⁵ derectit.
⁶ discernit.

þe office of þe wame is richt nobil and proffittabil¹ to þe remanent membris, for It nocht onelie nurissis þe self, bot als nurissis all þe laif of þe membris; for quhen It has degestit þe mete, It diffoundis þe blude, be quhilk we leif and consuis oure hele, throw al þe vanis of oure body. Meninus þe oratoure forsaid, comparand þis Intestyne seditioun betuix þe wame & þe remanent membris of þe body to þe haterent rissyn² betuix þe faderis and pepill of rome, softit þe myndis of þe said pepill in sic maner þat þai war content to be reconsalit with þe faderis. (XXXIII) Sic thingis done, freyndis began to trete concorde³ and power grantit to þe pepill be certane conditiouns, to haue hallowit⁴ officis to support þame aganis * þe consulis; And It sall nocht be lefull to þe faderis (157). to reiose þe said officis. Be þis way twa tribunys of [þe] pepill war Institute, þat is to say, Caius Lucinius and lucius Albinus. Thir twa first tribunis chesit thre collegis to support þame. Sicinius, þe seditious man afore rehersit, was made ane; of þe remanent names Is litill force. sum allegis þat þe pepil create twa tribunis at þare first departing to þe sacrate montane, quhare þe sacrate law was first pronuȝcit be secessioun of þe pepill fra þe faderis to þe said montane.

how romanis and latynis war confederit; how þe wolches war vincust and sindri of þare townys tane be romanis; Of þe | huge vassalege done be p. 171.
 25 marcius corillianus; how þe romanis war troublit with derth, and þe wolchis with þe pestilence; how marcius corillianus was banist & tendirly rasauit⁵ with þe wolchis. Ca. xv.⁶

At þe returnyng of þe pepill to rome, spurius Cassius and 30 posthumius Cominus war made consulis. In tyme of þir con-
 1 profytaible. 2 rysing. 3 accorde. 4 hallouit. 5 ressauit. 6 xxxvij.

sulis was ane band of confederatioun made betuix þe latynis and romanis, for Spurius Cassius was left in rome for making of þe samyn. the tothir consul Cominus was send with ane army aganis þe wolchis; And he within schort tyme vincust þe anciates,¹ and chasit þame to þe toun of longula; quhare 5 þai war vincust as afore and þe toun takin. Eftir þis he tuke ane vthir toun of wolchis namyt mutamit;² Syne with grete force segeit þe toun of coriolos. amang mony vthir vailȝeand³ knichtis in þe romane army was ane ȝoung childe, namit marcius, baith reddy of wit and hand, quhilk was eftir callit 10 Corilianus to his surname. Certane legiouns of wolchis de-partit out of Ancium⁴ þare toun, as þai had nocht bene astonist with fere of vncouth Inemyis or ony batellis apper-and, and suddanly Invadit þe romane army, quhilk was liand (158). for þe tyme at * þe sege of Coriolas, and takand na aduertence 15 nor sollicitude bot alanelie of þe toun and cieteȝanis In it Inclusit. In þe samyn tyme sindri cieteȝanis of Coriolas Ischit out of þe toun on þe romanis. Than be aventure was standing by marcius, þis valeȝeand campioun afore rehersit, accumpnayit with ane knott of feirȝ knichtis, and be his singulare manhede 20 nocht alanelie dang abak þe Inemyis Isching (as said Is) bot als enterit feirȝlie with all his cumpany at ane opin porte; and slew all pepill þat occurrat to his sicht. Syne put þe housȝ,⁵ quhilk stude hie abone þe wallis, in fire. Incontinent ane terribill spraich and crye of wyiffis⁶ and barnis rysing 25 p. 172. throw | all partis of þe toun, to huge terroure of þe cieteȝanis þareof (as þe vse Is), rasit þe curage of þe romanis and made þe anciatis⁷ astonist, becaus þe toun þat þai come to reskew was takin. Thus was þe anciatis⁷ vincust,⁸ and þe toun of Coriolas takin. Marcius corilianus be his souerane vassalage 30 sa fer obscurit þe renoun of posthumius consull, þat war nocht þe band of latynis was made þat sammyȝ ȝere be spurius Cassius his Colleig,⁹ and Ingravin in ane brasin pillare, all þe victorie conquest¹⁰ be him but ony memorie suld haue perist.¹¹

¹ antiatys. ³ vailȝeant. ⁵ housis. ⁷ antiatis. ⁹ collaige. ¹¹ perreist.
² mucamyt. ⁴ Antium. ⁶ wiffis. ⁸ winkust. ¹⁰ conqueist.

The samyn *ȝere* deceissit¹ Meninius Agrippa, quhilk was lufit baith with *þe* faderis and small pepill; bot abone all he was maist hartelie beluffit² with *þe* small pepill, eftir þare secessioun³ to *þe* sacrate montane. And þoche he was baith com-
 5 positoure and Iuge to continew *þe* cieteȝanis in concorde, and ambassiatour⁴ of *þe* faderis to *þe* smal pepill and reducear⁵ of þame to *þe* ciete, ȝit he deceissit⁶ sa pure þat all his gudis war nocth sufficient to bery⁷ his body; And þarefore *þe* small pepill broȝt him furth with ane sovme of money rasit amang
 10 þameself be equale taxacioun, extending to twa vnces. (XXXIV)
 The nixt *ȝere* titus gregonius & publius Minutius war made consulis; how beit *þe* ciete was in quiet þis *ȝere* but ony vncouth⁸ or domestic weris; ȝit þare succedit ane vthir troubill
 15 mare soroufull to *þe* pepill. for throw secessioun of *þe* pepill to *þe* sacrate montane, mony of all *þe* romane landis lay waist and vnlauborit⁹ for þat *ȝere*; And sa raiȝ first ane huge derth of vittalis in *þe* ciete, And eftir þat followit na les hunger
 20 þan¹⁰ is with sic persouns as bene Inclusit or segeit within cieteis, quhare na vittalis may be gottin. throw quhilk ane
 25 terrible mortalite suld haue haistelie followit baith of ser* vandis (159). and commouns, war nocth *þe* consulis maid *þe* maist haiste prouisioun to remede *þe* samyn. ffor nocth alanelry war merchandis direct¹¹ be *þe* said consulis to by vittalis in *þe* land of Ethrurie on *þe* richt hand of Ostia, and on *þe* eist
 30 hand to *þe* ciete of Cvma amang *þe* wolchis; Bot als war send merchandis to by | quhete in sicill. for all *þe* pepill p. 173. quhilk lay maist approcheand to romanis had sic Ire and haterent aganis þame, þat þai war constrenit¹² to seik vittalis at maist remote and vncouth⁸ regiouns. quhen þir merchandis
 35 quhilk war direckit¹¹ to Cvma had ladin þare schippis, and war reddy to cum away with þir vittalis be þame cost, þai war haldin violently be Aristodemus tyran, and confiscate for *þe* gudis of terquynis, to quham he allegit him to be heretoure.

¹ dissisit.⁴ -ouris, both.⁷ bury.¹⁰ þat, both.² beluvit.⁵ redussar.⁸ vncouȝ.¹¹ dereckit.³ cesescioun (!).⁶ disseissit.⁹ wnlauborait.¹² constrainit.

The schippis quhilkis war send to þe wolchis & pontyne war
 nocht alanerlie Inhibit to by vittalis, bot war als cruelly In-
 vadir be Inhabitantis and pepil þareof. ȝit certane vittalis war
 brocht to rome out of Ethrurie, be quhilk þe pepill was sus-
 tenit. The romanis, vexit with þis affliction and troubil of 5
 hunger, had bene vntymuslie Invadir be þe wolchis, war nocht¹
 ane grete² pestilence come haistelie on þe said wolchis quhen
 þai war redy to raiß þare armye. The romanis, seand þare
 Inemyis astonist with þis terribil pestilence, send new garni-
 soun of pepill baith to the toun of velitras and to þe Castell 10
 of norva, to þat fyne That howbeit þis pestilence happynnyt
 to ceiße amang þe wolchis, ȝit þai suld leif vnder grete fere
 and dredoure of romanis. At þe Ische of þis ȝere, Marcus
 Minutius and Aulus sempronius war made consulis; In quhais
 tyme come grete haboundance of vyttale³ out of sicill to 15
 rome. Sone estir, þe faderis went to þare consultacioun, to
 avise how mekil of þir vittalis⁴ suld be gevin to þe small
 pepill. Sindry men belevit þe tyme cummyng⁵ to recovir the
 priuilegis quhilkis war latelie conquest⁶ be þare secessioun in
 plane extorsioun of þe faderis. In þe first marcius Corilianus, 20
 Inemye to þis new auctorite of tribunis, said as followis: “gif
 þe pepill desiris þir vittalis,⁷ lat þame renunce þare new priu-
 ilegis,⁸ and restore þe faderis to þe samyn richtis as þai had
 afore. quhy suffer I” (said Marcius) “þir new digniteis &
 officis of tribunys? quhy suffer I sicinius * schynand with þis 25
 auþtorite abone me, as I war put vnder seruitude and redemit
 p. 174 fra þe handis of thevis? quhy suffir I [sic schame and dis-
 honour forþer þan Is necesar? ⁹ Sall I suffer] sicinius to
 regnne¹⁰ abone me, sen I mycht nocht suffir king tarquyne?⁹
 Lat sicinius pas now to þe sacrate montane, and tak þe pepill 30
 with him; for þe way is nocht onelie patent þareto, bot als to
 all montanis liand þareabout. Lat þe pepill reif now þe frutis
 of oure landis, as þai did þe thrid ȝere afore. Lat þame now

¹ noch.² cruel.³ wictaill.⁴ vitillis.⁵ cumin.⁶ conqueist.⁷ vattellis.⁸ preuilages.⁹—⁹ after next sentence in B.¹⁰ rigne.

leif on þe vittalis quhilkis þai conquest¹ be þare furie. I dar afferme gif we hold abak þir vittalis fra þame, þai sall be dantit [þairthrow] erare to be lauboraris of þe landis in tymes cummyn² þan to arme þame aganis þe faderis, or stop þe landis to be 5 manurit. And beleif It may be als eith done as said, to gif na vittalis to þe pepil, bot vnder sic conditioun þat þai renunce al lawis, autoriteis, and priuilegis quhilkis þai latelie conquest in extorsioun of þe faderis be þare secessioun, afore þai gett ony parte of þir vittalis." (XXXV) This opiniouen of marcius 10 was found oure Rigorus³ be þe faderis; ffor It was ane provocacioun to arme þe pepill with maist Ire aganis þame, becaus It defraudit þe pepill of þare leving, and to mak þame as þai war Inemyis of⁴ þe ciete, to perisþ be hunger & to haue na parte of þe vittalis quhilk come in þare ciete be 15 gude aventure, without þe tribunis war deliuer⁵ as cativis to be punyst at þe plesere of þis marcius, and without sa mony as he plesit amang þe pepil war skurgit on þe samyn wise. The pepill had na litill Indignacioun, þat þis marcius suld rise sa haistelie to be þare new fleschour and skurgeare,⁶ Or to 20 haue ony power of life or deith abone þame, Or ȝit to bring þame to ony servitude or thirrlage. And finalie þai had⁷ Invadit þis marcius afore his departing fra þe courte, war nocht þe tribunis assignit ane day to here him punyst for þe tressoun aganis þame committit. þus was þe Ire and Indignacioun of pepill sum parte I mesit, seand þame self made p. 175. 25 baith Iuge & maister of his life and deith þat was þare Inemye. Marcius tuke first þe minassing of tribunys in contemptioun, & said þai had na autorite nor power to pvnys,⁸ bot alanelie to supporte þe pepill, als þai war tribunys of 30 pepill and nocht of faderis. All wayis þe pepill was sa halely commovit þat þe faderis mycht nocht eschewe nor be deliuerit of þare Ire bot be * punytioun of þis man; and ȝit þe faderis (161). resistit þe Ire of small pepill sa fer as þai mycht, nocht alanelie be euery ane of þare persuasioun In speciall, bot

¹ conqueist.³ regorus.⁵ delyuering.⁷ to haue, A.² cumming.⁴ to.⁶ scurge.⁸ pvnice.

als be þe auctorite of þe hale ordoure of senatouris. ffirst It was assailȝete be þe faderis to brek þe purpois of small pepil gif þai mycht, and to stop þame fra ony convention or counsell.¹ and becaus þe saidis faderis war frustrate in þis lauboure, þai went altogiddir as þai had bene gilty for sum cryme be 5 þame committit, makand humyll Intercessioun to þe pepill for þe life of ane cieteȝane or senatoure; and prayit þame gif þai wald nocht assoleȝe² him as cieteȝane, to perdoun his life, and to gif him frelie to þame as he war ane faltoure. finalie þe day Is cummyn þat was sett to marcius to compere afore þe 10 pepill, and how beit he nocht comperit, þe pepil perseverit in þare Ire; and nochtwitkstanding his absence þai condampnit him, quhare euer he mycht be apprehendit, to þe deith. Marcius, fugitive fra þare lawis, become Inemye with grete mynassing baith to romanis and his native cuntry, and fled 15 amang þe wolchis; quhare he was maist tendirlie Ressauit, & estemyit with grete reuerence and honoure, Becaus his haterest was sa boldin aganis þe said Romanis. ffor he complenit sum tyme þe Insufferabil and maist odious³ Iniuris done to him, and sum tyme he votit him self with huge mynassing to revenge þe 20 samyn. he was ressauit ⁴in lugeing⁴ with Attius Tullius, þe gretest senȝeour þat was amang þe wolchis in þai dayis, and ay scharpest⁵ Inemye to romanis. And becaus þis Tullius had ane auld rankoure⁶ aganis þe Romanis, and þat vthir marcius had p. 176. ane new Ire aganis þame on þe samyn maner, | thay tuke þare 25 secrete avisement togiddir be quhat maner þai mycht best mak were aganis þe said romanis. ffor þai beleuit þare pepill mycht nocht be lightly persuadit to batall, becaus þe samyn has bene assailȝete sa oft with sindri infelicitieis; and nocht onelie was þare ferȝ sprete and corage⁷ brokin be sindri discomfitouris, 30 bot all þe maist forcy ȝoung campiouns of þare cuntry miserably devourit⁸ be pestilence. Thus sen þe Ire and Indignatioun of þare pepill was slokynnyt⁹ be Interuentioun of lang trewis, It was necessare to awalkin þame be sum slicht of new Iniuris.

¹ consale.² odyus.³ schairpest.⁷ curaige.⁹ sloknit.² assoilȝe.⁴—⁴ om.⁶ ald rancure.⁸ devorit.

5 how latyne¹ was punyst for his contempcioun aganis (162).

þe command of Iupiter, and how þe romane playis
war new restorit ; how Tullius causit þe wolchis to
be schamefully eiekkit out of rome, and armit þame
with grete Ire aganis þe romanis ; and how marcius
Corilianus put þe romanis to grete afflictiou.

Ca. xvij.²

(XXXVI) It happynnyt þat þe romanis war makand þare pro-
visioun to renew þe grete playis mony ȝere before hantit in þare
10 ciete. þe cauȝt quhy þir playis war renewit followis. ane hous-
haldare nocth onelie scurgit his servand arelie in þe morow throw
þe placis quhare þe playis war ordanit³ to be, bot als gart him
bere þe gibbet on his bak throw þe said place, afore þe pepill was
convenit to þe contemplatioun of þir playis. Sone estir, þe rom-
15 anis began þare playis, as þis sorowfull punytioun had bene na
thing vnseemand to þe religioun & solemnite of þare playis.
Schort tyme estir, Iupiter apperit to ane citeȝane of rome, how-
beit he was of þe lynnage populare, namyt latyne ; And schew to
him be divyne visioun þat þis last play was na thing plesand to
20 him, becaus þe first padȝeane þareof be skurgeing of þe servand
was dolorus ; & þarefore⁴ | commandit him to schaw þe faderis and p. 177.
consulis, gif þai restorit nocth þare playis to sic magnificence and
honoure as was hantit afore, þare ciete suld be haistelie Invadit
with grete trubill. how beit þis man was gevin to all religioun,
25 and had þe goddis in reuerence [and dredour], ȝit he schew nocth
his visioun to þe faderis, þat he suld nocth cum be revelatioun of
sic fretis in derisioun of pepill. bot his tary and Inobedience
succedit to his hevy dammage,⁵ for within few dayis he tynt his
son be suddane infirmite. þan Iupiter (þat þe cauȝt of suddane
30 deith⁶ of his son suld nocth be vnknawin to þe said latyne)

¹ king latyne, A.

² om.

³ ordenat.

⁴ for that cauȝt.

⁵ havy dampnaige.

⁶ deid.

appert to him be new visioun, Inquiring gif he thocht him self sufficientlie punyst for his Inobedience be deith of his son ; and ȝit (as of before) said to him gif he schew noct̄ þe said visioun to (163). þe faderis & consulis, as he was afore *commandit, he suld be punyst with maist cruell displeſer. how beit þis secund visioun 5 was deiply prentit in his mynde, ȝit he was sleuthfull and wald noct̄ schaw¹ þe samyn ; And þarefore be haterent of goddis he was strikkin with suddane infirmite but ony power of his body. Than was he clerely aduertist þat he had incurrit þe Ire of goddis. At last he was sa ouresett with grete² troubill rising aboue vthir, 10 þat he send for his freyndis, and schew to þame þe sindri visiouns of Iupiter, with all circumstance afore rehersit. Incontinent, be avise of freyndis, he was brocht on ane³ litter to þe courte afore þe faderis, and quhen he had schewin all his visioun, to þe grete wounder⁴ of all pepill present for þe tyme, ffollowit ane vthir 15 mirakil mare wounderus⁵ þan was sene afore ; for þis latyne (quhilk was brocht to þe court afore the faderis but ony pouste of his membris) was sa suddanlie convalescit & restorit to his hele, fra he had schewin þe command of Iupiter, þat he past hame to his houſ sa hale as he had never be⁶ strikkin with ony Infirmitie. 20

p. 178. (XXXVII) The senate for þis my|rakill commandit þe playis to be renewit to Iupiter with maist magnificent coist þat mycht be devisit. to vesy þir playis come grete nowmer of wolchis with Attius Tullius þare prince. This Tullius afore þe begynnyng of þir playis went to þe consulis, as It was devisit be him and martius 25 at his departing, and said [as] he wald schaw to þame sum secrete materis, gif þai war at quiet concernyng þe public wele. "I wil" (said tullius) "say sum thing of my cieteȝanis, quhilkis be my command has followit me to ȝoure ciete, noct̄ to accuse þame for ony falt or tressoun as ȝit committit aganis ȝow, Bot erare to 30 provide sum way þat þai do na thing tressonabill aganis ȝow in tymes cummyng. The Ingyn of my pepill is mare Inconstant þan I desire, quhilk Is richt manifest to ws be mony harmes ; ffor we stand noct̄ in prosperite be oure awne gude dedis, bot allan-

¹ schew.² Ilk.³ a.⁴ vonder.⁵ vonderus.⁶ bene.

erlie be ȝoure patience. here is ane grete nowmer of wolchis gadderit in ȝoure ciete, and ȝoure playis ar now haistelie to be begvn, to quhais sicht sal the pepill be maist ernistfully gevin. I remember quhat displeſer was laitlie done be ȝoung and Insolent 5 sabynis In þis ciete, quhen þai revist ȝoure commoun wemen. Tharefore I drede þat sum thing be done by vnprudence or folie of my pepill. This is þe mater þat I wald haue schewin to ȝow for þe eiſ of my pepill and ȝouris. Attoure, * In sa fer as pertenis (164). to me I am deliuerit to departe haistelie of ȝoure ciete, and to 10 returne hame, þat I be noȝt participant of ony Iniure or troubil following." Quhen þe consulis had opynnyt þis doutsum mater afore þe faderis be sikker certificacioun¹ of Tullus, þai belevit þe samyn of verite; ffor þe auctorite of Tullus was of sic estimacioun² and renown amang þame, þat It maid þis mater ryȝt credibill. 15 And þarefore, to eschew all displesere | (gif ony was appering) p. 179. certane seriandis war send to þe wolchis, commanding þame to departe out of þe ciete afore þe nycht war cummyn, Vnder pane of dede.³ The terroure of þis proclamacioun made þe wolchis sa astonist, þat þai ran with huge effray to thare lugeing, to gadder 20 þare gudis þat þai myȝt haistelie departe. Eftir þare parting⁴ fra þe ciete, raiſ ane hie Indignacioun in þare myndis, becaus thay war chasit on sic ane solempnit⁵ day fra þe cumpany of goddis and men, as þai war maist waryit and abhominabil creaturis. (XXXVIII) Tullus, eftir þat þai war returnand hame in sindri 25 cumpanyis, abaid at þe wod of ferentyne; And quhen þai war all presentlie cum,⁶ he callit þe capitaniſ and principale men þareof to ane counsell. Als sone as he had gottin þame about him in maner of Concioun, he apperit full of haitrent, & with wourdis persuading þame to grete Ire he said in þis maner: "Belouit freyndis, 30 howbeit þe wald forȝett þe auld Iniuris and harmes done to ȝow & ȝoure progenitouris be romane pepill, how may þe sustene þe schame and dishonoure done to ȝow þis day? ffor þe romanis has made þare playis allanerlie þis day to ȝoure diffamacioun & schame. Persaue⁷ þe noȝt how þai haue led ȝow þis day as

¹ siccar sartification.³ deith.⁵ solempne.⁷ persaif.² astimatioun.⁴ departting.⁶ cummyn.

vincust cativis in tryumphe? knew ȝe noct̄ quhat derisioun ȝe
 haue sufferit þis day, be sa mony vncouth cieteȝanis, stranglearis
 & nychtbouris? Se ȝe noct̄ how ȝoure wyiffis & barnis has bene
 þis day transportit throw sa mony mowthis of vncouth pepill?
 quhat will be said be þai pepill quhilk herd þe schamefull pro- 5
 clamacioun made aganis ȝow? quhat will be said be þai pepill
 þat has mett ȝow schamefully passing of þe ciete? Na vthir thing
 wil be presumyt bot we suld haue done sum tressonabill offence,
 p. 180. þat mycht haue perturbit þir solempne playis, gif we | had taryit
 ony langare within þe said ciete, & mycht noct̄ haue purgit ws 10
 (165). þareof bot alanelie *be þe sacrifice of piacle. and for þir causis
 we ar chasit fra cumpany and counsell of euery honest pepill.
 Attoure, It proffittis na thing to oure livis how beit we haue
 haistyit¹ ws with maist diligence of þare ciete; And þoche we
 wald say þat þis haisty departing may noct̄ be callit ane schame- 15
 full fleing, jit how may ȝe think ony vthir bot þat ciete Is ȝoure
 dedelie Inemye, In quhilk ȝe behuffit to haue loist² all ȝoure
 livis,³ gif ȝe had taryit ane day mare þan ȝe did? Now is opin
 were denuzcit to ȝow, to þe grete mischeif of þame þat has
 denuzcit It, gif ȝe be vailȝeant men." The wolchis, boldin with 20
 huge Ire na leſt consauit be þame self þan be persuasioun⁴ of
 tullus, Returnit in þare houſſ,⁵ and movit sa þare freyndis for þe
 dishonoure done to þame, þat al þe name and lynage of Wolchis
 was conspirit with opin rebelloun aganis þe romanis. (XXXIX)
 And to be gouernouris to þame in þis maist dangerus battall war 25
 chosin Attius Tullus and marcius Corilianus, þe romane outlaw,
 In quham þis wolchis had mare esperance⁶ of felicite þan eftir
 succedit to þare purpoſſ. Apperit þus þat⁷ þe public wele of
 romanis was more strong and pussant be Valeȝeand capitaniis þan
 be ony strang armyis. This marcius tuke first þe toun of circe, 30
 and quhen he had expellit þe Colonis and new citeȝanis þareof, he
 deliuerit þe samyn⁸ frelie to þe wolchis. sic thingis done, he past
 fordwart with thortoure passage in þe latyne way, & tuke fra rom-
 anis the townis namyt longula, satrik, polustia, Coriolos & Novella,

¹ haistit.

² lost.

³ liffis.

⁴ persuatioun.

⁵ to þair houſſis.

⁶ asperance.

⁷ at.

⁸ sam.

and made þame tributare to þe empire of Wolchis. And within schort tyme estir, he tuke þe toun of lavyne *with* Corbeo, vetelia, trebium, labicos, & pedum. finalie departing | fra þe toun of p. 181. pedum, he sat doun campit *with* his oist beside þe fowsy¹ namyt 5 Civilia Within five mylis to Rome; and howbeit he waistit all landis pertenand² to þe small pepil of rome, with sindri vthir landis liand þareabout, ȝit he send ane cumpanye of armit men to kepe þe landis pertenand to þe faderis fra all direptioun. This slicht was done be martius, owhir becaus he had mare Ire aganis 10 þe pepil þan faderis, Or ellis to raiȝ ane seditioun betuix þe faderis and Pepill of rome. In þe mene tyme, þe tribunis armit þe small pepil feirslie aganis þe faderis, Saying þai lauborit alanelie for sauftie of þare awne landis; þat but ony dout grete disorde had followit estir, war noct̄ *þe feir of vncouth Inemyis, quhilk Is (166). 15 occasioun of concorde, causit þame, howbeit þai war suspect to vthir, to stand all of ane opinioun. The faderis had confidence in na thing bot alanelie in þare wapynnys and armour; Be contrare þe pepill curit noct̄ quhat aduersite nor troubil succedit to þame, sa þat þai had na weris.

20 how the faderis send þare legatis and preistis to martius for peace, and war repulsit; Of þe orisoun made be volumnia to þe said martius, & how he rasit his campe and was slane; how þe equis and Wolchis war diuidit amang þame self, and 25 vincust be romanis. Ca. xvij.³

Spurius mausius⁴ and sextus furius war made consulis in þe ȝere following. quhen þir consulis war nowmerand þare legions, and devisand to put garnisouns of armit men to þe portis and wallis of þare ciete, Comperit afore þame ane huge pepill desiring 30 peace. The consulis be þare pietuous regret⁵ and noysis war

¹ fousey. ² pertenig. ³ xxxix. ⁴ Nawsius. ⁵ petewis Regrait.

astonist, & solistit þe faderis to send legatis to *martius* Corili-
 p. 182. anus | for sum tretie of pece. The faderis, seand þe pepil dekey¹
 fra all curage and manhede, send þare oratouris² to þe said
 martius. To þir legatis was gevin ane doure ansuere be martius,
 saying he wald trete pece with romanis, sa þai wald frelie gif 5
 oure all landis pertenyng to þe wolchis; And gif þe romanis
 wald nocth [freli] renunce þe saidis landis, bot traisting be crafty
 tyranny to reiose þe sammyn, he maid þame vnderstand he was
 na leß myndefull of euery *Iniuris* done to him be his cietejanis
 þan of þe meritis done to him be þe wolchis his freyndis; & mak 10
 þame sone to knaw his feirß curage and sprete was nocth brokin
 bot scharpit³ be exile. Eftir þis ansuere was send to him vthir
 oratouris of mare renovne [and prudence], bot þai gat na entres
 in his tentis. Than þe preistis war send to him in þare religious
 habitis; howbeit þai brak nowthir his mynde nor purpois more 15
 (167). þan did þe vthir legatis afore rehersit. (XL) * In þe mene tyme
 þe matronis of rome past oft tymes to *Veturia*, moder to þe said
 martius, and to *Volumnia* his wife; ȝit it is nocth knawin quhiddit
 þe samyn procedit be generall consultacioun of þe faderis, or gif
 It was onelie be þare awne effeminate doloure. Alwayis þe fore- 20
 said matronis persuadit þis agit woman *Veturia* to pas to þe
 camp of martius with his wiffe *Volumnia* and his twa barnis, þat
 þai mycht defend þe ciete be þare teris & petuous⁴ wourdis,
 quhilk couth⁵ nocth be defendit be force of men. Als sone as
 þir women⁶ war cummyn to the campe, It was schawin be his 25
 familiaris þat ane huge nowmer of women⁶ was cummyn⁷ to him,
 presumyng sen he was nocth brokin fra his purpois be maieste
 of legatis, nor ȝit be religioun or reuerence of preistis, þat he suld
 be þe more obstinate aganis þe teris of women.⁶ Belive⁸ ane of
 his familiaris saw *Veturia* his moder with his wiffe and barnis, for 30
 p. 183. scho was of more hevy⁹ | and dolorus contenance þan þe re-
 manent matronis in hir cumpny, and said to *Martius*: “leß þan
 myne ene dissau me, baith thy moder, þi wiffe, and þi barnis
 ar cummyn to oure oist.” *Martius* þan raib (as he had bene

¹ decay.² horitouris.³ schairpit.⁴ petewis.⁵ culd.⁶ wemen.⁷ cuming.⁸ belif.⁹ havy.

astonist) fra his seit,¹ and went forthwart to embraiß his moder. Incontinent þis Veturia turnit hir [about] fra humyl prayeris to² maist Ire, and said: “hald abak þi handis, quhil I may se quhiddir I am cummyn to my son or to my Inemye, and quhiddir 5 I am now þi moder, or þi presoner in þi tentis. Vnhappy eild has brocht me with lang and miserabil liffe to sic poynt, þat I man se þe first banist, & syne Inemye. how mycht þow distroy and waist þe land þat has bred and nurist þe? howbeit þow was full of mynassing,³ quhy was noct⁴ þi Ire assuageit,⁴ fra þow was 10 cummyn in thy cuntry? als sone as rome apperit to þi sicht, quhy wald þow noct⁴ say, ‘within ȝone wallis ar my houſſ, my moder, my wifſ, and my barnis?’ Allace, had I neuer bene with childe, Rome had neuer bene segeit. war noct⁴ I haue ane son, I mycht haue deit in my fre cuntry. And now þare may na thing 15 be sa miserabil to me bot þe samyn is als schamefull to þe; bot I wil noct⁴ leif lang (as I am now) ane Vnhappy creature. ȝit haue piete of þir, thy wifſ & barnis, quhilkis sal noct⁴ fale, gif þow procedis ony forthir, owtir to be haistelie slane Or ellis to leif in lang miserie and servitude.” * Throw þir wourdis Martius (168).

20 embrasit⁵ his moder, his wife & barnis, and was finalie sa brokin be þare continual teris, and be commiseratioun of his native cuntry, þat he rasit his campe fra þe sege of rome & departit. Sum allegis fra he had rasit his campe fra þe sege, he come in sic haterent to his army þat he was slane. Vtheris allegit 25 þat he deceissit in ane vthir maner; ȝit fabius þe richt autentik autor sayis he levit quhill he come to extreme age, And usit ane proverb,⁶ Saying, “Na thing may be sa displesand to ane agit man as to be exilit.”⁷ | The romane faderis Invyit [nocht] þe p. 184 loving of⁸ þir women deseruit; for Ilk man leiffit⁹ in þai dais 30 but ony detractioun or paring of þare nyghtbouris glore. Ane tempill was noct⁴ onelie biggit, bot als dedicate to remane in perpetual renoun & memorie of þir wemen; ȝit nochtwithstanding þe departing of martius, þe Equis and Wolchis returnit with new incursiouns. bot þir equis wald noct⁴ suffir atti¹⁰ Tullius to

¹ sait.³ minissing.⁵ Imbrassit.⁷ exild.⁹ lewit.² in.⁴ asuagit.⁶ proveirb.⁸ þat.

be ony langare capitane or empior¹ of þare armye ; throw quhilk raiß haistelie ane odious¹ seditioun betuix þir two pepil, quhilk of þame suld cheiße þe capitane to governe baith þe armyis. This seditioun was endit be þe swerd ; for It movit baith þe pepill to Inavid vthir *with* batall. In þe mene tyme þe romanis come ⁵ *with* displayit baner, and vincust þame baith *with* na les dangerus þan obstinate batall.

(169). how Cassius was slane becaus he wald haue conquest
 þe croun ; how þe faderis & smal pepell fel at grete
 contencioun for þe law agrarie ; how þe tempil of ¹⁰
 Castor was dedicate ; how fabius dantit baith þe
 tribunis & pepil, & was continewit mony ȝeris in þe
 consulate. Ca. xvij.²

Efter this victorie Titus sicinius and gneus Aquillius war made Consulis. ¹⁵ sicinius was send *with* ane army aganis þe Wolchis, and Aquillius was send aganis þe hernikis ; for baith þir pepill war redy *with* grete armyis to Inavid þe romanis. In þis ȝere þe hernikis war Vincust, bot þe batall aganis þe wolchis was fochtin ³ *with* equale chance, throw quhilk þai war constrenit ⁴ to sevir on athir side but ony Victory. (XLI) In þe ȝere following ²⁰ procunus⁵ Virginius and spurius Cassius war made consulis. In þis ȝere pece was made *with* hernikis, and þe twa parte of þare landis ekit to romane empire. Be avise of Cassius, þe half of ²⁵ þir landis now conquest war gevin | to Latynis, and þe tothir half equalie dividit amang þe pepill. Cassius als ekit to þir largitions sindri vthir landis, quhilk on þe *sammyn* maner war delt amang þe said pepill ; ffor he thocht þir landis vnworthehelie⁶ possedit be private men. þis liberalite of Cassius made sindri of þe faderis richt astonist for fere of þare gudis, specially þame

¹ a hodius.

² xl.

³ fouchtin.

⁴ constrainit.

⁵ protinus.

⁶ vnworthe (sic).

subyne bi grete noffynce of Ryndis tuk
ye captayn, hys manerlyne frunce of la/
teme come as t me reym in suppreste of so/
mane, hys herdomme flue fane in tall
his compleyn and ye captayn refornf^{ff} ^{ff}

C.

ye frument & prooff of ywo submyne lassie
hys re rute in re contynual exortacion & me aetyng
Reyns fforas in re fforas & submyne fulbys vider



quhilkis war possessouris of þir landis for þe tyme. Attour þe
 faderis war richt hevy in þare myndis, dredand Cassius be þir
 largitioȝns to conques sic favoure and riches þat myȝt be noy-
 sum to þare liberte. Than was þe law agrarie first promulgate,
 5 quhilk was neuer estir attemptate but motioun of grete troubil.
 Virginius þe tothir consul resistit to þe largitioȝns of Cassius, and
 had noȝt onelie þe faderis, bot als ane parte of þe pepill, of his
 opinioun; Be quham It was thocht richt Vnworthy þat þe
 public landis tane fra nobil citeȝ*anis and faderis suld be gevin (170).
 10 to private persouns. Attoure, þai herd oftymes virginius þe
 tothir consul say in his concionis, The gift and rewarde of
 Cassius his colleig was pestilencius; for þe samyn was noȝt
 onelie ane way to thirr þe pepil (þat gat þame) to seruitude, bot
 als was ane crafty slicht to mak him self king. “To quhat effect
 15 desiris Cassius þe assistance baith of latynis and companȝeounis
 to his opinioun? to quhat fyne has he sufferit þe hernikis to
 reiose þe thrid parte of þare landis, quhilkis war conquest be þe
 victorie made latelie on þame, bot alanelie þat he may be maid
 Capitane to þame, as martius Corilianus was afore to þe
 20 Wolchis?” Cassius, abone all þir donatiounis, set him, as he
 had bene ane private man, to cauȝt þe law agrarie haue place
 and effect amangis þe pepill. finalie baith þe consulis gaif þare
 myndis to conqueȝ all favoure & benevolence þai myȝt afore þe
 pepill. Virginius said he was content þat þe landis conquest be
 25 þare weris war delt to nane vthir bot amang þe cieteȝanis of
 Rome. Cassius was repute ambitious for parting of þir landis
 amang companȝeounis, and was of na estimacioun afore þe
 cieteȝanis; & for þat cauȝt he | sett his mynde be sum vthir
 way¹ to be recounsellit² witȝ þe pepil, And commandit al þe
 30 money þat was tane for selling of þe vittalis of sicil fra þe pepil
 to be frelie deliuerit to þame agane but ony tary. Bot þe pepill
 refusit It, na les þan It had bene bot ane trane to haue conquest
 þare consentis to mak him king. finalie þai tuke sic suspicioȝn
 aganis him, becaus his giftis war gevin sa haboundantly, þat þai
 35 detestit all his largitioȝns atanis, and declarit þame but force or

¹ wayis.

² recounsalit.

effect. It is sade, als sone as he past out of þe consulate he was condampnate and slane. Sum allegis his fader was þe slaar of him; for als sone as his fader herde he desirit to conquerre þe croun, he straik him sa cruelly quhil he was slane, Syne consecrate all his gudis to Cereß þe goddis. In memorie hereof It 5
 was Ingravin in hir templi: 'Thir ar þe gudis gevin be þe houß of cassius.'¹ ȝit sum allegeis ane thing þat is mare approcheand to þe verite, saying Ane day of perduellioun was sett to þe said Cassius be Ceso fabius and lucius Valerius, Iugis criminall, and nocth alanerlie condampnit afore þame be Iugement of pepill, 10
 bot als his houß² opinlie evertit to þe ground. The places quhare his houß³ stude Is now þe waist rovme standing before 4
 (171) þe tempill of tellus þe goddes. * In quhatsumeir way þis Cassius was condampnit, treuth Is, he was condampnit in þe tyme of Cornelius seruilius & quintius fabius consulis. (XLII) 15
 ȝit þe Ire of pepill continewit nocth lang aganis Cassius, ffor þe swetenes of þe law agrarie was deiplie prentit in þare myndis, howbeit þe first autoure þareof was condampnit. This avarice was þe more inflammyt be malice of þe faderis, becaus þai defraudit þe men of armes of all pray and gudis conquest in þis last bataill; for all þe proffitt þareof was ekit to þe tresoure of þe ciete, Throw quhilk þe name of fabius was richt odius to þe small pepill, speciallie throw liberalite of Cassius þare last Consul. The faderis for þe samyn cauß continewit fabius in 20
 p. 187. þe dignite | consulare, and gaif to him ane new college Namit 25
 Amulius Ceso, be quhilk way þe pepill war armyt with new discorde aganis þe faderis. finalie þis seditioun intestyne gaif occasioun to Vncouth Inemyis to Invade þe ciete, howbeit þe samyn be cummyn of batall was sum parte slokynnyt;⁴ for sone estir þe faderis and pepill, howbeit þare myndis war rebel- 30
 land to vthir, faucht with grete felicite aganis þe Wolchis and equis, Amulius beand consul, and put þame baith to flicht. the horsmen followit sa feirslie, þat mare slauchter was maid in þe chaisß þan in þe first bataill. In þis zere was þe tempill of (þe) god namyt Castor dedicate in þe Idis of quintilis. This tempill 35

¹ fabius, *A.*; fabius, *B.* ² housis. ³ houß. ⁴ afoir. ⁵ sloknit.

was Votit to þe said god Castor in þe batall fochtin¹ aganis
 þe latynis at þe louch of regill, quhen posthumius was dictator,
 And for þat cauþ his son was ordand² to dedicate þe samyn.
 In þe ȝere following þe myndis of small pepill war gretumlie
 5 tane be sweitnes of þe law agrarie. The tribunis of pepill
 defendit þe auctorite populare be þe law populare. The faderis,
 beleving þe pepill to haue yneuch³ and oure mekil of Wilfull⁴
 furie, wald noct⁵ suffir þame to reiose ony largitionis, or vthir
 thingis þat mycht persuade þame to folie. Attoure, þe faderis war
 10 sa weil supportit⁶ be þe consulis, þat þai gat þare entent abone
 þe pepill. The houſ of fabius reiosit noct⁷ onelie þe dignite
 consulare for þat present ȝere, Bot als for þe ȝere following; for
 martius fabius, brother to Ceso fabius, was maid consull, and
 lucius Valerius made his colleig; bot he was gretumlie hatit be
 15 þe pepill becaus he was ac*cusare of spurius Cassius. The (172).
 sammyn tyme was ane debait betuix þe faderis and tribunis,
 6 ffor þe faderis allegit þe law of tribunis was vane, and baith þe
 auctouris and doaris þareof vane. The name of fabius was fra
 thens of grete renovne, for þai reiosit þe consulat iii⁸ ȝeris con-
 20 tinually estir following, all of ane opinioun⁸ grete Inemye to the
 auctorite of tribunis. And þarefore na litill honour & loving
 succedit lang tyme to þat houſ, as It wele deseruit.

¹ fouchtin.

⁴ wilsum.

⁷ thre.

² ordanit.

⁵ support.

⁸ oppinȝeoun.

³ eneuch.

⁶ *The fourth hand in B. resumes here (p. 209).*

p. 188. | Off new rebellioun made aganis the romanis be
 the Wolchis and equis ; how new seditioun raiß
 betuix þe faderis and pepil for þe law agrarie ;
 how oppia þe Virgin Vestal for hir Incest was
 buryit quyk ; how fabius vincust þe veanis con- 5
 trare þe myndis of his army ; And how þe princes
 of ethrurie come¹ in support of Veanis.

Ca. xix.²

Followit þe batall aganis þe Veanis, and belive followit new
 rebellioun of Wolchis. The romanis, howbeit þai³ had super- 10
 flew nowmer⁴ of pepill to abandoun þe rage of vncouth
 Inemyis, abusit al þare pussance *with* ciuil contentiounis ; &
 suppois þai war [rycht] drery and pensive in þare myndis for
 þir contenciounis afore rehersit, ȝit abone þat troubil apperit
 certane hevinlie⁵ prodigis to þe daly⁶ terroure and mynassing 15
 of pepill, als wele to burgh⁷ as land. þe divinouris, in seirche-
 ing quhy þe goddis had sic wraith aganis þe pepil, could fynd
 na vthir cauȝt be þare private & public consultaciounis, baith 20
 of foulis & bowellis of beistis, bot alanerlie þat þare sacrifices
 war nocht done with dew reurence and honouris to þare
 goddis. Thir terrouris movit þe pepil to sic poynt, þat þai⁸ 25
 condampnit Oppia þe virgine vestal⁸ for hir Incest, and berijt
 hir quyk. (XLIII) In þe ȝere following quintius fabius and
 gneus tullius war maid Consulis. The romanis had in þis ȝere
 na leȝt weris aganis⁹ Vncouth Inemyis þarfurth þan Civile dis-

(173). sensioun at hame amang *þame self ; ffor baith þe equis and
 Veanis come armit *with* terribil Incursiounis in þare landis.
 The furie of þir pepill Ilkday more Increasing causit Ceso
 fabius and spurius furius to be made consulis. The equis
 segeit Artona ane toun of latynis, and þe Veanis waistit sa lang 30

¹ cum.

² xli.

³ þa.

⁴ nvmer.

⁵ havinly.

⁶ daylie.

⁷ brugh.

⁸ wirgen vestiall.

⁹ with.

þe romane landis | without resistance, þat þai¹ made þare p. 189.
 avant² with grete mynassing to sege rome; ȝit þe romane
 pepill war more rasit to curage þan astonis be þir terrouris.
 And howbeit þai refusit to gif þare names in writh, ȝit
 5 þe samyn procedit noct³ be þare awne myndis bot erare
 be persuasioun of þir tribunis. ffor spurius lucinius,⁴ tribune
 of pepill, traisting the tyme cumming to constrene þe faderis
 be extreme necessite to appreve⁵ and ratifie þe law agrarie,
 held abak þe pepil fra ony assemblance in armyes.⁶ Nocht⁶
 10 þeles þe haill Invie of tribuniciane auctorite⁷ was turnit
 to þe displeasur of þe said latinius.⁸ ffor þe consulis Invait
 noct⁶ sa cruelly aganis him as did his awne collegis; and be
 þare supporte þe consulis gat ane armye rasit of þe pepill,
 & dividit þe samyn in twa batallis, Of quhilk þe tane was
 15 [delyuerit] to quintius fabius to pas aganis þe veanis & the
 tothir deliuerit to spurius furius to Invaid þe equis. ⁹ȝit na
 thing was done aganis þe equis⁹ in þis ȝere wourthy to haue
 memorie. fabius þe tothir¹⁰ consull had mare besines ado
 aganis his awne [cetezeanis thane aganis his] Inemyis; Nocht-
 20 þeles he defendit þe public weil be his onelie manhede and
 prudence, howbeit his armye, sa fer as was in þare power, for
 þe Invy þat þai¹ bure aganis him, wald haue tressonably
 randrit þame self to þare Innemyis. This nobil consul fabius,
 abone mony his Imperiall Vertewis in leding & exhorting his
 25 army for þe tyme, arrayit þe samyn¹¹ in sic wise¹² þat he vin-
 cust his Inemyis, and put þame to flicht be support alanerlie
 of his horsmen. his Oist of futemen (howbeit þare Inemyis
 gaif bakkis) wald noct¹³ follow¹⁴ nor ȝit persewe þe chace; for
 þai¹ war sa repugnant¹⁴ to þare awne honoure, þat nowthir
 30 wald þai¹ haisty þare ganging be hortatioun of þare capitane,
 quhom þai Invyit for þe tyme; Nor ȝit wald þai haisty¹⁵ þame
 to eschew þare private or public schame; nor ȝit mycht move¹⁶

¹ þa.⁵ armis.^{9—9} om.¹³ fallow.² want.⁶ Noth.¹⁰ vþair.¹⁴ repugnant.³ Latynius.⁷ auctorite.¹¹ sam.¹⁵ wald no^t haiste.⁴ appryve.⁸ lucinius.¹² wyf.¹⁶ wald mofe.

þame þare awne damage,¹ quhilk suld nocht haue falit² to haue cummyn, gif þare Inemyis had returnit with new curage.

p. 190. forthir³ þai war sa fer | rebelland to þe arte of chevelrie, þat þai wald nocht do samekill for þare capitane as to stand arrayit (174). in gude ordoure; bot in his hie contempcioun⁴ þai * direcket⁵ 5 þare baneris, with na leß hevy & drery contenance þan þai had bene miserably vincust; syne returnit with grete displeſſer to þare tentis, wariand baith þare capitane and þe felicite following be his prudence. ȝit to⁶ þir pestilentius dissensiouns na remede⁷ could be fundin be þis nobil campioun; for þocht he 10 was dotate with maist souerane Ingyne, ȝit he lakit erare prudence to governe⁸ his cetežanis þan to vincuſ his Inemyis. The consul estir þis victorie returnit to rome, with na leß glore of batall þan haterent of his army ekit aganis him; ȝit nochtwithstanding þare haterent þe faderis causit þe dignite consulare to remane as afore with þe houſ of fabius, for martius fabius was maid consul and gneus manlius his college. (XLIV) The samyn ȝere titus pontificius, tribune of pepill, made him to fortifye⁹ þe law Agrarie; and be þe samyn way þat licinius¹⁰ past afore made him to stop þe faderis, þat þai gat na armye¹¹ 20 quhil þe foresaid law agrarie was auctorist. Appius Claudius, seand þe faderis richt perturbit, said þat all auctorite of tribunis was vincust in þe ȝere afore In presens¹² of þe public wele; And sen þe said auctorite¹³ was dissoluit be þare awne strenþ, It suld be in tymes cummyng perpetualy abrogate. "Sikkirly," 25 said appius, "It sal neuer fail bot ane sal be found ay amang þe tribunis, nocht onelie to desire victorie abone his collegis, bot als to assist to þe faderis and best parte of þe ciete for þe proffitt of þe commoun weill. And nocht onelie sal þe consulis fynd ane, bot als sindri, amang þe tribunis to assist 30 (gif nede beis) to þare opinioun,¹⁴ howbeit ane tribune Is sufficient ynewch¹⁵ aganis þe auctorite¹⁶ of þe laif; sa þat þe

¹ damage.

² failȝeit.

³ farthar.

⁴ contempcioun.

⁵ dieekkit.

⁶ be, *A.*

⁷ ramed.

⁸ gvberne.

⁹ fortyfe.

¹⁰ lucinius.

¹¹ no armi.

¹² precence.

¹³ auctorite.

¹⁴ oppinȝeoun.

¹⁵ eneuch.

¹⁶ auctorite.

faderis and consulis lauboure, gif þai may nocht purchesß euery
ane of þe tribunis of þare opinioun,¹ to be recounself² ay with
ane certane | thareof." The faderis, admonist in þis maner be p. 191.
appius, callit afore þame plesandlie baith þe consullis and
5 tribunis; And becaus Ilkane of þame had ay sum private Iuris
to confound³ þe auctorite⁴ of þe tothir, Thay purchest, sum
parte be favoure & sum parte be auctorite,⁴ þat þe power of
tribunitiane auctorite⁴ suld be exercit alanelrie for þe proffitt
of þe commoun weill. And sa be supporte of nyne tribunis þe
10 consullis rasit ane army, contrare þe auctorite⁴ & ⁵mynde of
ane tribune þat war postponare⁶ of þe public weill. Sic thingis
done, the consullis past with this army to mak were *aganis (175).
þe veanis; ffor sindri princis war cumin out of Ethruria, nocht
onelie to þare supporte and favoure, Bot als traisting þe finale
15 end cumin of Romane empire be Intestyne dissencions þan
ringand amang þame for þe tyme. Attoure, It was dispute⁷ in
sindri counsalis amang þe princis of Ethrurie, The romanis had
sa eternall pissance þat gif þai ragit nocht on þame self be
civill⁸ seditiouns, þare empire culd nocht be distroyit; ffor
20 civil seditioun is þe onelie poisson and rewyne⁹ of all riche
cieteis; ¹⁰ & be þe samyn¹⁰ all hie empire & kingdomes apperis
fragil & caduke in þe self. "This odius kingdome" (sade þir
princis of Ethrurie) "had bene sum parte sustenit be counsell
of wise faderis, And sum parte be pacience of þe pepill; bot
25 as now It is cumin to extreme rewyne. for now twa cieteis
ar made of ane, and euery ane of þame severit fra vthir be
þare awne lawis, auctoriteis, & officis. sum tyme the Romanis
vsit to rage aganis vtheris in gadering þare armyis; Nochtþeles
þai obeyit weill estir to þare capitaniis þe¹¹ tyme of batall. In
30 quhatsumeuir way þe romane state was, It mycht nevir be Vin-
cuct sa lang as It was governit be ressoun militare; bot now
þe romane army followis nocht þe command of þare capitane

¹ oppinȝeoun.

² reconsule (l)

³ confund.

⁴ auctorite.

⁵ The next few pages (213-220) are misplaced in B.

⁶ was posponar.

⁷ disputit.

⁸ cieill.

⁹ poysoun and ruyne.

¹⁰⁻¹¹ be quhilkis,

¹¹ in.

quhen þai ar campit for batall, as wele apperit be þare last armye; for in þe tyme of batall þe victorie be consent of þe army was gevin wilfully to þe equis, how beit þai war vincust.

p. 192. for þe said armye left baith þare capitane & þe banerman In myddis of þe campe, & returnit but ony command of þare 5 capitane to þare tentis. herefore apperit, rome may be tane be seditioun of þare awne knichtis, gif we persew; ffor na vthir difficulte¹ nor lauboure restis now to be done, bot alanelry to denunce battall. All vthir chargis sall be plesandlie offerit to ws be þe goddis." 10

(176). how the romane army was movit to batall be derisioun² made on þame be Veanis and Etruschis; how quintius fabius & manilius consul war slane; how þe Etruschis and Veanis war discomfist;³ how marcius fabius refusit þe glore of tryumph⁴ 15 for þe dede of his freyndis. Ca. xx.⁴ 5

The vane beleif of þir and siclike consatis armyt the Etruschis aganis þe romanis, for þai war be sindry chancis sum tymes vincust & sum tymes victouris.⁶ (XLV) on þe tothir⁷ side The consullis dred na thing sa mekill as þe strenth and pussance of þare awne armye; ffor þe memorie of þe wikkit⁸ exemplill schewin in þe last batall made þame sa astonist þai durst nocth Ieoperde þame to sa doutsum chance, quhare twa armyis occurrit to þare huge dredoure. And becaus þai war astonist be þis maist dangerus case, thay held þame clois⁹ within þare tentis to 20 eschewe euery trubill appering; for þai belevit þare awne army within schorte tyme suld soft¹⁰ þare haterent, & Ingener¹¹ sum hele in þare myndis. The veanis & Etruschis, seand þe romanis 25

. 1 diffeculte. 4 tryhumphe. 7 vþair. 10 schorte, A.
 2 deresioun. 5 xlij. 8 wekit. 11 Ingerner.
 3 disconphist. 6 wictorius. 9 clois.

wald noch^t Ische out of þare campe, war þe more fervent in desire of batall; And to provoik¹ þare Inemyis þareto, þai prekit afore þare tentis. At last, persaving² sic doingis mycht noch^t move þe consull nor ȝit þare army, þai³ began to reproch þame 5 with maist schamefull wourdis,⁴ saying þe feynzeing of civil dissensions was noch^t bot ane new remede found⁵ amang þame to covir þare febill cowarty. Attour, þai⁶ knew weil how þe consullis had nothir | traist nor ȝit confidence in þare knichtis. p. 193.

Apperit þarefore It was ane new maner of seditioun to kepe eiß 10 and silence amang þare men of armes. to þe more schame and blasphemacioun of romane lynnage Thay rehersit mony vile & abhomizabil wordis, of quhilkis sum parte war trew & vtheris falß. *The consullis war na litil reiosit þat thir odious de- (177). tractionis⁶ war said pertlie sa nere þare portis and trinschis of 15 þare armye; ffor Incontinent þe said armye (howbeit þare myndis war rebelland to þe consullis) sum tyme thoch^t schame of þe dispitfull detractions said be þare Inemyis, and sum tymes war movit to maist violent Ire for þe samyn, And sum tymes de- testit þe dammage⁷ following be þare intestyne dissencions;

20 quhil at last þai war sa flowand in þare myndis, þat þai eschamyt þat þare Inemyis suld departe for þare detractions Vnpunyst, and thoch^t evill þat ony felicite suld succede to þe faderis & consullis be þare vassalege or victorye, throw quhilk þai war vncertane quhidder þai suld be erare revengit on þe faderis or 25 on þare fais; quhil at last þai war extremelie resoluit to revenge þare haitrent on þare Inemyis for þe derisioun sa proudly rehersit in þe face of þare army. Incontinent þai convenit with frequent cumpanyis to þe tentis, quhare þe consulis war, and with inflammyt myndis desirit batall and signe⁸ of Ionyng.

30 Than þe consulis (as þai had bene ful of musing) gaderit al þe capitanis afore þame with lang commonyng; and howbeit þai desirit na thing sa mekil as þare armye maist ernistlie⁹ to fecht, ȝit þai thoch^t best to tary þe samyn, þat be desire þareof þare

¹ provoke.

⁴ wurdis.

⁷ dammage.

² laist parsauing.

⁵ fundin.

⁸ syng.

³ þa.

⁶ detractouris, A.

⁹ ernistfulli.

army suld be þe more ardently inflammyt to batal. And finally þe consulis gaif ansuere, þat nowthir was þe mater reddy nor ȝit þe tyme ganand to gif batall; And commanding þame for þat cauȝt to hald þame within þare tentis and abstene fra batall, and quha faucht and war rebelland to þare command suld be punyst 5

p. 194. na | leȝ þan he war Inemye to þare army. The men of armes, repulsit¹ fra þare petitoun² on þis maner, grewe ay þe more desirus of batall þat þai belevit þe counsilis repugnand þareto. Attoȝt, þare Inemyis war inflammyt þe more feirslie to Invade þame, þat þai herde Inhibitoun made be þe consulis to fecht; for þai belevit to do quhat þai plesit but ony punytioun or resistance following. And becaus na confidence was betuix þe faderis and þe romane armye, þai belevit sic seditioun³ suld rise in þare (178). armye, þat ane finale end suld be put to romane empire. * The Inemyis, confidinc in þare vane consatis, come pertly afore þe portis of þe romane campe, blasphemand þe romanis with maist schamefull Inuriis, and mycht skairslie be severit fra oppugnatioun of þare tentis. Throw quhilk þe romane armye war sa commovit,⁴ þai mycht na langare sustene þare dispitis, bot ran haistely afore þe consulis; for þai wald nocht send (as þai did 15 afore) the princes of þir centurionis to desire batall, but ruschit all atanis with vehement noysis & clamoure desiring batall, Saying þe tyme was than expedient yneuch to þe samyn; ȝit þe consulis denyis⁵ þare desiris. At last fabius consul, seand þe noysis and clamour rysing with sic dyn in þe army, becaus he 20 dred ȝit sum seditioun, gart blaw ane trumpet, be consent of his colleig manilius, and said, "O manilius, I knew weil þis army may vincuȝt þare Inemyis; bot þai haue borne þame self sa wikitlie⁶ in tymes bigane, þat I wate nocht gif þai haue ony desire of victorie. 7 And þarefore I wil gif na signe of Ionyng 30 to þe sade armye, quhil þe samyn be sworne neuer to returne out of þe feild quhil þai haue victorie⁷ of þare Inemyis. This army has dissauit anis þe Romane consul, bot þai⁸ can nocht dissauie þe goddis." The principall centurioun of þe army was martius

¹ repulsat.

³ sedetioun.

⁵ denyit.

^{7—7} om.

² petetioun.

⁴ commovit.

⁶ vikitlye.

⁸ þa.

flauoleus, quhilk abone þe romane princes of þis army was sa
 desirus of batall, þat he was þe first | made his aith as followis:¹ p. 195.
 "I sall nocth returne out of þe feild but victorie, And gif I
 failȝe, I tak þe, fader Iupiter, mars, & vtheris þe remanent goddis
 5 in witnes to punys me." þan þe remanent army made þare
 aithis² in þe samyn maner. Incontinent fabius be sound³ of
 trumpet gaif signe of Ioynyng. þe army þan tuke þare wapynnys
 & went fordwart ful of Ire and hope of victorie, desiring now þe
 Etruschis to mak þare hething and to mete þame in arrayit
 10 batall. abone euery vassalege done þis day owther be þe faderis
 or [be þe] pepil Apperit maist þe souerane manhede of þe houȝt
 of fabius; ffor þir fabis sett þame þis day be singulare vertew to
 conqueȝt þe hartis of þe pepill, quhilk stude lang Inemye to þame
 be civell⁴ contentiouns. (XLVI) The romanis war arrayit in
 15 gude ordoure, Bot þe Veanis and Etruschis na thing schrinkit
 nor eschewit þare cummyng; ffor *þai beleuit nocth onelie þe (179).
 said romanis to fecht nane vthir wayis⁵ aganis þame þan þai
 faucht afore aganis þe equis, bot als belevit, throw þare boldin
 myndis and dissentiouns amang þame self, sum notabil myscheif
 20 haistelie to follow.⁶ howbeit þe mater succedit fer contrare þare
 opinioun⁷; ffor þe romanis war neuer mare feirȝ nor cruell
 aganis⁸ þare Inemyis þan þai war at þis tyme, becaus þare
 myndis war Inflammyt and boldin baith be Iniure of Inemyis
 and tary of þe consulis. skarȝ lasere was gevin to þe Etruschis
 25 to array þare Oist, quhen þe dartis war left vncastin⁹ on athir
 side, and Ionit hand for hand togiddir¹⁰ with scharp and grundin
 swerdis to þe deith. Amang all vthir princis of romanis the
 houȝt of fabius was þis day ane notable sicht and exemplill of
 provin vassalege to þe cieteȝanis; of quhilkis ane, quintius fabius,
 30 quhilk was consull in þe thrid ȝere afore, come feirȝlie quhare
 maist confluence of Veanis war, And Incontinent ane of þe
 Etruschis, na leȝ feirȝ in strenth of body þan craft of chevelrie,
 tuke him vnwarly at avantage¹¹ and persit him throw | the body p. 196.

¹ fallowis.

⁴ ciwile.

⁷ opinȝeoun.

⁹ wncassin.

² ethis.

⁵ na vþir vise.

⁸ fers and crewell

¹⁰ þe gidder.

³ sond.

⁶ fallow.

contrar.

¹¹ ane vantage.

with ane swerde. Als sone as þe swerd was pullit furth, he fell dede¹ on his wound to þe ground.² baith þe armyis persauit weill the fall of þis nobil man, bot þe romane army was sa³ astonist þarewith þai fled sum parte abak. Than marcus fabius lap on þe body of his dede brother,⁴ and huvand vp his targe formentis his 5 knichtis, said ; " Is this þe aith ȝe made, my luffit⁵ men [of armis], to returne fleand to ȝoure tentis? Dredre ȝe more ȝoure febill Inemyis þan þe Ire of goddis, be quhilkis ȝe ar deiplie sworne? be contrare I am nocht⁶ sworne to þe goddis, and ȝit I sal owtir returne Victoure, or ellis I sall here end my life with my brother 10 quintius fabius." Than gneus fabius (quhilk was Consul in þe last ȝere) said to marcus fabius consul : " belevis þow, brothir, to persuade⁷ þis armye to fecht with þi wordis⁸ Lat þe goddis persuade þame, be quham þai ar sa depelie sworne ; And latt ws, as accordis to þe houȝ of fabius and vthir nobill men, exhorte 15 oure armye to batall erare be Imitacioun and exampill of oure manhede þan be ony patent⁹ wordis." Incontinent þir twa fabis ruschit fordwart on þe first man þat stude aduersare to þame, (180). and be þare feirȝ curage movit all þe * army to paȝ fordwart on þe sammyȝ¹⁰ maner. (XLVII) The batall beand in ane parte renewit, 20 manilius Consul faucht na leȝ Valeȝeantlie þan he did in ane vthir weyng, quhare almaist siclike fortoun happynnyt as afore. ffor as quintius fabius was slane in þe tothir weyng,¹¹ sa manilius, chasing his Inemyis here & þare with ane cumpany of feirȝ knichtis following on him, was sa sare woundit¹² þat he was 25 constrenit to departe, as quintius fabius did, out of þe feild. The romanis stude astonist but ony forthir moving, And but dout þai had gevin bakkis, war nocht marcus fabius þe tothir p. 197. consul come on ane speedy horȝ with ane certane | turmys of horsmen, schawand his colleig levand and him self Victorious 30 abone his Inemyis. Attoure manilius (howbeit he was sa woundit¹³) schew him self present¹⁴ to þe army for þare conforte.

¹ doun.² grond.³ sumthing (!).⁴ bruȝair.⁵ luvit.⁶ noth.⁷ parsuaid.⁸ wurdis.⁹ painit.¹⁰ sam.¹¹ ving.¹² vondit.¹³ wondit.¹⁴ precent.

The *presens*¹ of þe twa consulis rasit þe armye to new curage ; And als þe oist of þare Inemyis was mare thyn þan afore, ffor þai confidit sa mekill in þe multitude of þare pepill, Thay send ane large nowmer þareof² to sege þe tentis of romanis. Als sone 5 as þe Inemyis war Enterit with small difficulte within þe tentis and palȝeouns of romanis, þai waistit mare tyme be spuleȝe þan be ony honest vassalege ; And Incontinent þe triaris, quhilk mycht nocth resist þis feirþ Irruption of Inemyis, send þare messengeris to aduertise þe consulis of þe huge perrell In quhilk 10 þai *presentlie*³ stude, Syne gaderit with grete cumpanyis to þe pretorie, and be þare awne curage renewit bataill. belive was manilius Consul brocht to þe tentis, and at his *cummyng*⁴ he put mony garnisouns⁵ of armyt men to þe portis of þare trinschis, quhare þai war *presentlie*⁶ campit, to stop þe Inemyis fra ony out- 15 passage or Isching. The desperacioun movit þe Inemyis mare to rage and furie þan to ony hardynes, for quhen þai had assaileȝeit to gett ane out-passage, ay ruscheand⁷ here and þare quhare ony esperance þareof apperit, thay⁸ had laborit certane tyme in vane, ane knott of feirþ men cruelly Invadit þe said 20 Consul schynand with his burnist armour. The first bront of Inemyis was schot by him be freyndis for þe tyme standing þan about him, bot þe secund dynt þareof mycht nocth be resistit ; for he was sa woundit þarewith, he fell dede to þe ground. Than war euery ane about him sa effrayit [þat] Thay gaif bakkis, throw 25 quhilkis raiþ nocth alanelie hie curage to þe Etruschis, bot als | * ane terroure to þe romanis throw all þare tentis. ffinalie p. 198. þai had *cummyng* to vtir discomfitoure,⁹ war nocth þe legatis tuke (181). away þe body of þe slane consull, and oppynnyt ane porte þat þare Inemyis mycht departe. The Inemyis departing at þis 30 porte come be aventure on þe tothir Consull fabius, quhilk was victorius for þe tyme, be quham þe Inemyis was discomfist¹⁰ as afore. This was ane gloriouſ Victorie succeding to romanis, howbeit It was richt sorowfull throw deith of quintius fabius & manilius consul. At last quhen þe senate had decernit ane

¹ *precens.* ³ *presentli.* ⁵ *garysonis.* ⁷ *ruschant.* ⁹ *discomforting.*
² *of þame.* ⁴ *cussin.* ⁶ *precen[t]ly.* ⁸ *and.* ¹⁰ *discomphist.*

tryumphe¹ to be gevin to marcius fabius consul, for þe victorie conquest sa valeȝeantlie be him, he gaif ansuere, saying he wald glaidly ressaue þe glore of tryumphe,¹ gif sic thingis mycht be þat his army mycht tryumphe¹ quhen þai had loist þare emprioure & maister. herefore, sen his houȝt was soroufull in þe deith of 5 quintius fabius, and þe commoun weill desolate be deith of manilius consul, he wald nocht ressaue þe croun of laureir² to haue þe samyn deformaty with sic public doloure. The deniying of tryumphe³ was more honest to þe consull þan ony vthir tryumphe³ þat was made afore þai dais; for glore ay aboundis⁴ 10 þe more þat it Is refusit in dew tyme.

how the woundit knichtis war gevin to the fabis and vthir faderis of þe ciete quhil þai war curit of þare woundis; how þe surname of fabis furnist the batail aganis þe Veanis on þare awne expensis; how þe ethruschis war vincust be lucius Amulius, And how 15 iij^e & ⁵ vj fabis war slane. Ca. xxj.⁶

Sic thingis done, marcus fabius made him to bery⁷ þe bodyis p. 199. of manilius consul, his colleig, and of | quintius fabius his brother, and was gretumlie lovit for þe honoure þat he had⁸ to 20 þame; ⁹ffor þoche he gaif to þame⁹ all þe loving þat he desirit,¹⁰ þit þe maist parte þareof succedit to him self. Attoure, þis fabius was nocht vnmyndefull of þe purpoȝt þat he tuke in þe begyn- (182). nyng of his consulate, þat is to say, to re*counsel¹¹ the myndis of small pepill to þe faderis. & to conqueȝt þe more favoure 25 þareof, he tuke þe maist parte of þe knichtis quhilkis war woundit in þis last batal, and dividit þame amang þe faderis to be nurist on þare expensis quhil þai war curit of þare

¹ trihumpf.

⁴ abundis.

⁶ xluij.

^{8—9} om.

² laurer, *B.*; laurew, *A.*

⁵ thre hundredth

⁷ bury.

¹⁰ disseruit.

³ trihumpf.

and.

⁸ did.

¹¹ recounsale.

woundis. mony of þir woundit knichtis war ordorit on þe samin maner amang þe fabis, throw quhilk þe fabis began to conques þe favoure populare; howbeit þare sicht was ay maist direckit¹ to þe commodite of public wel. (XLVIII)

5 Be þis way Ceso fabius and titus Virginius war made consulis, als mekle be desire of faderis as be desire of pepil. the consulis thocht nowthir batallis nor rasing of armyis nor ȝit vthir² besines to be done, quhil þe faderis and pepill war recounsalit togiddir³ be sum concorde.⁴ And for þat cauß
 10 þai decernit at þe begynnyng of þe nixt ȝere, afore ony tribune was autoure of þe law agrarie, to conques the favoure of þe small pepill be sum liberalite, and to devide equalie amang þame all þe landis quhilkis war laitlie conquest fra þare Inemyis. ffor þai thocht na thing mare respondent to resson and equite,
 15 þan þe pepill to reiose þe landis quhilkis war conquest be þare blude and Ieoperdie of batall. ȝit þe faderis refusit þir desiris of the consulis, and lamentit hevily þe quyk Ingyne of Ceso fabius began to evanis, growand Insolent be superhabundant⁵ glore. mony ȝeris estir na Civill factiouns war
 20 in þe ciete. At þis tyme þe latynis war vexit with frequent Incursiouns of þe equis, Be quhilk occasioun Ceso fabius was send with ane army to waist þare landis. | At his cummyn þe p. 200. equis held þame clois within þare wallis and townis, throw quhilk na thing mycht be done aganis þame wourthy to haue
 25 memorie. On þe tothir side titus Virgineus was send aganis þe Veanis, quhare he fell in sic troubil be his fulich hardines þat his army had bene aluterlie perist, war nocth þe tothir consul Ceso fabius happynnyt to cum þe more haistelie to his support. mony ȝeris estir nothir was were nor ȝit pece with
 30 Veanis, ffor the Vassalage followit⁶ mare like thift and Rubry⁷ þan ony honest Ieoperdijs. for als sone as þe Veanis fand þe romanis enterit in þare landis, þai returnit haistelie to þare mvnitiouns and townis; And fra þe romanis war departit, þai made ythand hereschippis⁸ in þare landis, scornand þare weris

¹ derect.

² no wþer.

³ þe gidder.

⁴ accord.

⁵ superhabundand.

⁶ ester apperit.

⁷ rubery.

⁸ hirschippis.

with pece and þare pece *with* weris. Thus mycht nowthir þare weris be supersedit nor ȝit clerely dantit. Attoure, mony (183) vthir ba*tallis presentlie apperit aganis þe romanis; ffor þe equis and Wolschis wald supersede þare batall na langare¹ bot quhil¹ þe recent doloure of þare last discomfitoure war ~~oure~~ 5 past. On þe samyn maner þe sabynis, quhilkis war ay feirþ Inemyis to romanis, war nocht alanelie reddy for batall, bot als had drawin al þe pepil of ethrurie to þare supporte. forthir, the Veanis, quhilkis war ay mare continual than scharpe Inemyis, assailȝeit oft tymes þe myndis of romanis, mare with 10 dispitfull Iniures þan ony Ieoperdy of armes; throw quhilk þe romanis war drawin in sic sollicitude & fere, þat þai mycht nocht transport this batall fra þe veanis on vthir pepill. The houȝt of fabis, movit be þir displeseris, past to þe Senate & made Ceso fabius consul to be forespekkare² for þame, quhilk 15 said as followis: "O faderis conscript, þe batall³ of Veanis (as ȝe knew) nedis mare ane ythand and continuall garnisoun þan ony multitude of pepill to were aganis þame. herefore | We desire þat ȝe, [þe] faderis foresaid, sustene þe chargis of all vthir batallis, quhilkis ar movit agane youre commoun weill [and 20 ceite], and suffir [ws], þe surname and houȝt of fabis, to were aganis þe veanis. & beleif⁴ þe maieste of romanis salbe sufficientlie garnist be ws in þat mater; ffor we Intend to lede þis batall with oure awne⁵ expens and surname alanelie. Thus sall ȝoure public weill nocht be travellit with ony public⁶ 25 expensis or armyis for ony besines þat now presentlie occurris." grete thankis war gevin to þe fabis for þir offeris. Sone eftir þe consull departit fra þe courte with þe remanent freyndis of his houȝt, and returnyt to his lugeing. At his returnyng, he commandit all his freyndis & surname foresaid to mete him 30 on þe nixt morow at his said lugeing, armit on þare best avise. (XLIX) Als sone as þe pepill war aduertist of þir tythingis, þai extollit þe houȝt of fabis to þe hevin, saying ane private houȝt has tane on þare bakkis þe charge quhilk þe hale ciete suld haue

^{1—1} nor.² foirsaid spekar (!).³ battallis.⁴ beleve.^{5—5} om.

sustenit. The batall of Veanis was convertit in ane private cure and private armye. gif þai¹ war two vthir houssis in the ciete of siclike manhede and curage as þe fabis war, þat ane mycht be send aganis þe Wolchis and þis vthir aganis þe equis; and 5 sa þe romane pepill mycht leif² in sikkir tranquillite, & be dantouris of all pepill liand þame about. On þe day following the³ fabis tuke þare armoure and wappynnys, and con*venit (184). to þe samyn place þat was to þame assignit. Sone estir þare cummyng, þe consull, clothit in his cote armour and habit 10 Imperiall, departit fra his houſs and vesyt⁴ all his surname and lynnage, arrayit in gudelie maner afore him. Als sone as he was enterit in myddis of þame, he gart display his baner. Suthlie þare was never ane armye sene afore þai dayis, beand of sa few nowmer,⁵ þat was of mare rehovne & admiratioun 15 to þe pepill þan was þis foresaid cumpany of fabis; for | þai p. 202. war iij^c and vj knichtis in schynyngh⁶ armoure, all patricianis, all of ane houſs, and euery ane of þame wourthy to haue bene governoure⁷ of ony nobill army abone the romanis. Thir feirſ and Illustir campions, all of ane houſs, went fordwart mynassing 20 grete myscheif⁸ and sorow to Veane pepill.⁸ ffollowit on þame ane cumpany of companȝeouns & freyndis, quhilkis had na esperance nor sollicitude of small materis, Bot erare beleiving mare glore to succede to þame be knichtlie Vassalege þan euer was herd in ony warld afore. Ane vthir cumpany followit on 25 þame, quhilkis war rasit be sollicitude of public⁹ weill, And als war richt astonist be favoure and admiratioun þat þai¹⁰ had to þir¹⁰ nobill men; and bad þame pas fordwart as happy and lusty gallandis¹¹ with gude werde, þat þe end of þare vayage mycht be respondent to þare begynnyng, quharethrow Ilk ane 30 of þame mycht beleif nocht alanelie to be cled with all honouris

¹ þa.⁷ gvbernour.¹¹ With -andis a new hand² laif.⁸—⁸ to þe romane

(No. 6), very cramped

³ thir.

pepill and

and inelegant, begins in

⁴ vyseit.

weane (?).

B., on p. 225, and con-

⁵ nomer.⁹ commone.

tinues only to the foot of

⁶ schinand.¹⁰ þa.

p. 226.

and digniteis of þare ciete, bot als maist excellent tryumph to succede for þare laubouris. Thir cumpanyis made þare prayeris to þe goddis, quhen þir fabis war passand by þe capitoll & vthir divyne tempillis of þare goddis, to grant þame sic perdoun bat þai mycht hele¹ & fere returne haistely agane to þare cuntr⁵ & freyndis; bot þare prayeris war nocht herde. Than þe fabis departit out² of þe ciete at ane vnchancy porte namyt Carmen-tall, levand þe templ of Ianus on þare ryght hand, quhill þai come to þe river of Cremera, quhare þai fand [ane] ganand place to garnys ane munitioun of armit men aganis þare Inemyis. 10 quhil þe fabis war gevin to frequent³ direptions in all partis quhare þai come, Thay apperit nocht onelie sufficient to defend þame self be þare mvniciooun foresaid, bot als throw euery boundis (quhare þe tuskane landis lay conionit to romanis) Thay made al placis quhare þai come, pocht þe samyn war 15 p. 203. noysum and | dangerus, Richt sikkir to þame self be þare frequent⁽¹⁸⁵⁾ incursiounis. Nochtþeles *sic thingis war sufferit bot ane schorte tyme, for þe Veanis brocht ane army out of Ethrurie, and belive assailȝete þis garnisoun, liand for þe tyme at Cremera. In þe mene tyme Lucius Amulius consul past with certane 20 romane legiounis, and faucht aganis þir Ethruschis; howbeit þe saidis Ethruschis had skarȝ space to array þare Oistis, ffor at the first assemblance, fra þe baneris war displayit and þe ordoure of armit knichtis enterit in batall, and ane buschement made ready to cum in þare supporte, ane weyng of horȝ men 25 come sidlingis þe batall of Veanis, throw quhilk þai war sa astonist, þai had nowthir lasere to begyn batall nor ȝit place to abide, bot war constrenit⁴ to flee abak to þe rede stanis quhare þare campe lay. The Veanis estir þis discomfitoure petuusly desirit peace, quhilk⁵ wes grantit to þame. Nochtþeles, 30 be natural inconstance and lichtnes of þare myndis, þai wer sone estir penitent of þare peace contractit afore the fabis rasit þare campe fra þe rivere of Cremera. (L) Than followit⁶ sone þe batall of fabis aganis þe Veanis, but ony preparatioun of

¹ haill.² furth.³ frequent.⁴ constrainit.⁵ quhilkis, *A.*⁶ fallowit.

grete weris; ffor noct̄ alanelie war frequent¹ direptiouns on athir side, bot als sum tymes baith þir armyis met togiddir with equale batal and arrayit ansenȝeis; howbeit þe fabis war ay Victorius of Veos, þe maist riche & pussant ciete þat was 5 in þai dais amang þe Etruschis. The Veanis war movit to grete Ire and Indignatioun for þir frequent feliciteis falling to fabis, and þarefore tuke degest avisement be quhat hie slichtis þai mycht best confound þare feirß Inemyis; ffor þai allegit þe fabis grewe Ilk day more and more in ferocite & hardymient be 10 þir frequent victoryis. herefore, to dissauie þe said fabis, as þe samyn had happynnyt alanelie be aventure, þai draif ane nowmer of bestial in þare gate, specialy quhare þai hantit maist incursiouns. Als þai causit þe landwart pepill to fle oft tymes be 15 þare crafty slichtis, throw quhilk mony of þare landis, as It had | p. 204. bene throw fere of þe fabis, war left desert. sic thingis done, þir Veanis laid ane strang garnison of armyt men in secrete glennys to recounter þe fabis quhen ony awantage occurrit. now was þe fabis sa proude for þir sindri victoryis fallin to þame, þat þai contemnit² þare Inemyis, & belevit þare Invinc-

¹ *With* -quent begins p. 227 and a new hand (No. 7) in B.

Quent direptionis on wþer side, Bot als sum tyme baith þir armyis met togidar with equale bataill and arrayit ansenȝeis; howbeit þe fabis war ay wictoryus of weris (!), þe maist riche & pussant ciete þat was in þai dayis amang þe ethruschis. þe weanis war mowit to grit Ire and Indignation ffor þe frequent filiciteis falling to þe fabis, & þairfoir tuk degist avisement be quhat hie slychtis þai mycht best confound þair feirs ennymeis; for þai allegit þe fabis grew Ilk day more and more in ferocite and hardymient be þir frequent victoryus (!). Heirfoir to dissauie þe said fabis, as þe samyn had happinnit allanelie be aventure, þai draif ane novmer of beistiall in þair gait, specialie quhair þai hantit maist Incursyonis. Als þai caussit þe landwart . . . to fle oftymis be þair crafty slychtis, Throⁿ quhilk mony of þir landis, as It had bene throw feir of þe fabis, war left decert. sic thingis done, thir weanis laid ane strange garnisoun off armyt men in secrete gleznis to recounter þe fabis Quhen ony awantage occurrit. Now war the fabis sa proude for þir sindry wictoryis fallin to þame, that thayⁿ contenynt thair Ennymeis, and belewit þir vnvictaible armoure

² continewit, A.

cibill armoure & wapynnys mycht nowthir be vincust nor zit
 (186). resistit in ony tymes cummyng. This vane esperance movit þe
 fabis to de*parte ane lang way fra þare munitioun at cremera,
 for wynnyng of certane beistis quhilkis apperit to þare sicht on
 ane montane, with few nowmer of knichtis laid for þare defence. 5
 At last, quhen þai war cummyn Vmprovisitlie and skatterit, as þe
 vse Is, to drive away þe gudis conquest be þare Incursiouns, thir
 buschementis quhilkis war laid vnder covert raiſ hastelie on
 euery hand about þame; and throw noyis and clamoure rising
 be þir buschementis þe fabis war gretumlie astonist. Incontinent 10
 ane thik schoure of dartis Invadit þame on euery hand. now
 war þe fabis be fast rusching of þe ethruschis Inclusit but ony
 out-passage, & þe more þe Inemyis thristit in on þame, þe more
 straitlie war þai drawin togiddir; and ay þe more þe fabis semyt
 of few nowmer, þe more þe Ethruschis apperit of huge multitude. 15
 Than þe fabis, howbeit Ilkane of þame was equalie debating with
 þare Inemyis, left þe chance þareof, and made þame all attanis
 perforce to mak ane out-passage throw þare Inemyis. ffinalie,
 be force of al þare bodyis and wapynnys at anys concurrand,
 þai made ane slop throw þare Inemyis, at þe samyn place quhare 20
 þai made þis first onset. Als sone as þai war departit in þis
 maner, þai fled vp throw ane strate montane, and be straitnes
 þareof made þame to new defence and batall. And becaus þai
 war montit abone þare Inemyis, and sum parte deliuerit, as

and wappinnyss mycht nother Be winccust nor zit resistit In ony tymys
 cumyng. This vane esperance mowit the fabis to depart ane lang
 way fra thir Munitioun at cremera, ffor wynnyng off certane beistis
 quhilkis apperit to thair sicht On ane montane, with few nowmer of
 knychtis Laid for þair defence. At last quhen þai war cummyn wn-
 promissitlie and scatterit, as þe vse Is, to drywe away þe gudis con-
 quest be þair Incursyonis, thir buchmentis quhilkis war laid vnder
 cowart raiſ haistelie on every hand about þame; and thro^a noyſ &
 clamour rysing be þir buschementis þe fabis war grittumly astonist.
 Incontinent ane thik schoure of dartis Invadit þaim on every side.
 now war þe fabis be fast rusching of þe ethruschis Inclusit but ony
 out passage, & þe more þe Ennymeis thristit in on þaim, þe more
 straitlie war þai drawin to gidar; And ay þe more þe fabis semyt of
 few nowmer, þe moire þe ethruschis appeirrit of huge multitude.

appert, of þe sorowfull chance In quhilke þai war presentlie
 falling, þai began to draw new curage and are;¹ syne straik
 doun þare Inemyis [ay] as þai | be force ascendit. throw quhilk p. 205.
 þir few knichtis had vincust and oure thrawin þare Inemyis be
 5 straitnes of ground, war nocht þe Veanis kest þame about the
 montane; and als sone as þai had won² þe hede þareof, þai dis-
 cendit with grete violence on þare bakkis; throw quhilk þe nobill
 fabis, inclusit baith on bak & afore, fechtand *with* perseverant³
 manhede to þe deith, war al slane but ony exceptioune, and þare
 10 mvnitions made at Cremera tane. Treuth is iij^o & vj fabis all
 perist at þis tyme, & nane of þare surname left on life Except
 ane young childe, quhilk was left at hame, preseruit be favoure
 of goddis to be ane stok of þare houſ, þat þe samyn mycht
 be ane beild to romanis in tymes cummyn⁴ aganis Inemyis
 15 baith in were & pece, quhen maist necessite occurrit.

Of the variant chance of batall succeding betuix (187).
 romanis and Veanis; how Mininius⁵ deceissit for
 þe schame done to him; how Servilius deliuerit him
 self fra þe Iugement of pepill; how þe veanis &
 20 Sabinis war discomfist be romanis; how þe Wolchis
 & equis war vincust be latynis, And how þe veanis
 war made tributaris to romanis. Ca. xxij.⁶

(LI) Quhen þis lamentabil myscheif was cumin to þe hous of
 fabis, gneus horacius & titus Mininius war made consullis.
 25 Mininius was send haistelie aganis þir Etruschis, quhilke war
 richt pridefull & reiosing of þis victorie; ⁷ howbeit he faucht
 with litill bettir fortoun þan did þe fabis. The Etruschis estir
 þis victorie⁷ tuke mont Ianicle,⁸ & purposit to sege rome, quhilk
 was for þat tyme heavily trublit with penurite & derth of vittalis.

¹ aire.³ perseuerand.⁵ Minius.⁷—⁷ om.² wyn.⁴ cuming.⁶ xluiij.⁸ Ianeckle (*and so below*).

In þe mene tyme þir Ethruschis come oure tyber, and but dout
 þai had tane Rome, war nocht horacius þe tothir consull, quhilk
 was send aganis þe Wolchis, was brocht þe more haistelie agane
 to resist þe samyn. This batall was fochten sa nere þe wallis of
 rome That Is was first fochtin beside þe tempill of þe goddes 5
 p. 206. namyt spes, with equale chance | of victorie, and estir þat cruelly
 fochtin at porte collyne. And nocht þe romanis at þis last
 Ieoperdy had bot smal avantage, ȝit þe samyn restorit þame to
 þare curage, ffor þarethrow þai war þe more bald estirwartis in
 batall. sic thingis done, Aulus Virginius and spurius Servilius 10
 war made consullis. The Veanis estir þis last discomfitoure
 absteneit fra ony sett batell; Nochtþeles followit mony here-
 schippis¹ be sindry Incursiouns. and first þai come with sa huge
 preis & mynassing in þe romane landis, þat na thing was saiff,
 for baith landwart pepill and bestiall war made pray to þame. 15
 Nochtþeles þai war ay tane be þe sammyn slichtis of hid busch-
 (188). mentis as þe fabis war tane be þame * afore. ffor the romanis
 drew þare beisteis oft tymes in þe sicht of veanis, and lay
 with grete buschementis hid vnder covert. All wayis þe greter
 multitude of veanis come to þare² Incursiouns, followit ay þe 20
 more slauchter on þame. Throw þir harmes raiß sic Ire and
 haterent, þat the samyn was occasioun & begynnyng of ane grete
 myscheif. for þe said Veanis come our tiber within þe nycht,
 & assaleȝit³ þe tentis of Servilius consull; bot þai war sone
 discomfist, & nocht but grete slauchter returnit to þare tentis. 25
 The consul estir þis victorie past haistelie oure tiber, & satt doun
 with his garnist campe in mont Ianicle. On þe nixt morow (als
 sone as þe licht apperit), howbeit he was richt feirß throw þis
 last victorie, ȝit he tuke consultacioun mare how his armye
 mycht be relevit of þe myserabill derth within þe samyn þan of 30
 ony vthir besines; And becaus þe samyn requirit sa properant
 & haisty releve,⁴ he rasit his army & come fulichly vp þe said
 montane of Ianikill quhare his Inemyis lay, & was doung doun
 with mare shame & displeſſer þan war þe Ethruschis⁵ doung
 doun be him in þe day afore.⁶ Nochtþeles his army was sauffit⁶ 35

¹ hirschippis.² þir.³ sailȝit.⁴ releif.⁵—⁶ om.⁶ saiffit.

be Intervention of his colleig. The Ethruschis, inclusit on euery hand betuix [þe] twa armyis, gaif bakkis & war discomfist *with* grete slauchter. Thus was þe batell led aganis þe Veanis *with* ane happy folie. (LII) At þe returnyng of þe consullis | to p. 207.

5 rome nocth allanerlie followit gude peace, bot als grete fouth of vittalis, for ane huge haboundance¹ þareof was brocht baith out of champany; ² and als fra þe dredoure of derth was tane away, all vthir vittalis (³quhilkis war hid in þe ciete) war brocht to licht. the pepill throw eiß & fouth of victualis³ began to be

10 Insolent as afore, Returnyng to þare auld haitrent and displeseris, & seirchit⁴ to Invaid þame self with Iniuris at hame, becaus na vncouth Inemyis apperit þarefurth. ffirst þe trib[un]jis began to move þe pepill be evill counsell and be þe law Agrarie aganis þe faderis; ȝit þe said faderis nocth alanerlie resistit þame

15 in generall, bot als resistit euery ane of þame in speciall. Quintus Causidius & Titus genutius, autouris of þe law agrarie, assignit ane day to Titus meninius to here him self punyst be Iugement of pepill; becaus, as þai allegit, þe garnisoun þat was laid be þe fabis at Cremera was tynt alanerlie be his sleuth; for

20 he was nocth fer distant fra þe samyn (quhen he was consul) *with* ane grete armye, and * mycht haue recoursit⁵ þe samyn gif (189). he had plesit. At last quhen þe day of Iugement was cummyn the pepill condampnit þis Meninius, howbeit þe faderis lauborit na leß for him þan þai did afore for martius Corilianus, for þe

25 singulare meritis done be agrippa Meninius his fader was nocth as þan out of þare myndis. Nochtþeles þe tribunis war richt merciful in his punytioun; ffor þocht he was condampnit be Iugement of pepill to be hedit, ȝit þai assoleȝeit him þareof, And gart him pay be general edict ij^m brasin pennyis. Meninius tuke

30 sic displeser for þe schame done to him, þat he fell be malancoly In Irremediabil⁶ infirmitie, & sone eftir deceissit. Sic thingis done, Caius nautius and publius Valerius war made consulis. In þe begynnyng of þis ȝere lucius seditius & Titus statius tribunis of pepill assignit ane day to | seruilius this last consull, p. 208.

¹ abundance.³⁻⁵ om.⁵ resscoursit.² champanȝe.⁴ seirsit.⁶ irremedyable.

to here him punyst be Iugement of pepill. This seruilius wald nowthir defend him be requeist & prayeris of faderis as *Meninius* did afore, bot confiding stoutlie In his Innocence and gude dedis, sustenit al þe preiſ¹ and accusatiouns of tribunis led aganis him. The cryme þat was Imput to him was þe fulich rasing of 5 his armye aganis þe straitnes of mont Ianicle, bot he had na leſ sprete þis day in his awne private actioun þan he had afore in public chargis; ffor noct̄ allanerlie he reprochit þe tribunis bot als reprevit þe pepill with feirſ wourdis, Saying þai wrangwislie² condampnit meninius afore rehersit, and was þe cauſ of his 10 deith.³ Considering his fader Agrippa sa prudently reconsalit þame to þe faderis, and als purchest to þe said pepill all þir lawis, auctoriteis, and priuilegis of tribunis, quhilkis makis þame presentlie sa Insolent & proude. Seruilius be þir feirſ and hardy wourdis deliuerit him self honestlie of all dangere. Als 15 Virginius (quhilk was his colleig for þe tyme) noct̄ onelie stude in testimoniall of his meritis and loving, bot als supportit him mony vthir wayis; ȝit na thing changeit þe myndis of pepill, nor ȝit causit þame sa mekill to desist fra his accusatioun, as þe reproching made to þame for dampnatioun of þis Innocent man 20 meninius foresaid. (LIII) Thus war all þe civill contentiouns finissit in þe ciete. Nocht lang eftir raiſ ane new rebellioun of veanis be supporte of Sabinis, quhilkis war confederit⁴ to þare (190). supporte. And for þat cauſ * publius Valerius consul rasit ane army baith of romanis, latinis, and hernikis, to fecht aganis þir 25 Veanis. And at his first cummyng he assaleȝit þe tentis of Sabinis, for þai war campit to be ane were-wall for defence of p. 209. Veanis þare | freynd[is], and made þir sabynis be scharp⁵ assalt sa astonist þat þai ran skatterit in sindri buschementis to resist his feirſ Irrupcioun. Incontinent þai tuke þe porte of þe sabyne 30 campe, quhare þe ensenȝe was erekkit, and enterand feirſ within þe samyn made ane huge slauchter but ony debate or resistence. The fray and noyis was broȝt haistely fra þe tentis of Sabynis to þe ciete of Veos, & causit þe Veanis to rusche with maist preiſ to harnes. for þai war na leſ abasit þan þare ciete 35

¹ preſ.² wrangwislie.³ deid.⁴ confidarat.⁵ schairp.

had bene tane, and parte of þir Veanis haistely Ischit of þare ciete to support þir sabinis, and þe residew þareoef ran *with* all þare force on þe romanis, quhilkis war þan feirslie occupijt with slauchter and spuleȝe baith of þe Sabynis and þare tentis, throw 5 quhilkis þe said romanis war gretelie trublit & sum parte put abak; ȝit fra þare baneris war displait, þai resistit baith þe army of Veanis & Sabynis. quhil baith þir armyis war fechtand maist ernistlie in þis wise, ane cumpany of horsmen come haistelie be command of þe consul to þare supporte, throw quhais terroure 10 þir twa maist pussant & confederate pepill war baith atanis discomfist & chaist. schort tyme eftir þis victorie the Wolchis & equis sat doun with campit Oistis in þe latyne landis, and made na litill hereschippis in þe samyn. Nochtþeles þe latynis but ony capitane, supporte, or ansenȝe of romanis, Vincust 15 baith þe foresaid pepill allanerlie be supporte of þame self and hernikis, & wan þare campe. The said latynis conquest be þis victorie ane Incredibil pray, abone al þare awne gudis quhilkis war tynt of before and recouerit at þis tyme, ȝit nochtwithstanding þir victoryis gneus nautius consul was send out of rome 20 *with* ane army aganis þe Wolchis; for þe romanis war na thing content þat þe latinis (quhilkis war þare colonyis & confederate freyndis) suld lede batall aganis þare Inemyis alanelie be þare awne wayis, but ony avise of romane capitaniis. Alwayis na calamyte na kynde of miserie was left vndone to Wolchis; how- 25 beit na thing mycht | persuade þame to batall. (LIV) Eftir þis p. 210. lucius furius & gneus manilius war made consulis. Manilius was send aganis þe Veanis; howbeit he faucht nocht *with* * þame, for (191). þai gat peace be þare awne desire, paying ȝerelie ane tribute of victualis and monye¹ to þe romane empire.

¹ money.

how genutius tribune arreistit furius and manilius¹
 consulis afore þe pepil, and of his slauchter; how
 volero,² ane of þe commoun pepill, rebellit aganis
 þe faderis; and of þe grete trubill & *terroure* þat
 raiß þarethrow amang þe faderis. Ca. xxijj.³ 5

Als sone as peace was made with vncouth Inemyis, followit
 civil contencions at hame amang þe romanis; for the tribunis
 made þe pepill to rage aganis the faderis be Impulsoun of þe
 law agrarie; and howbeit meninius was condampnit afore be
 Iugement of pepill, And als⁴ seruilius eschaping narouly fra 10
 huge dangere in the samyn maner,ȝit þe consulis, þat is to say,
 furius and manilius afore rehersit,⁵ war na thing effrayit be
 exemplil þareof, bot made þame with all authorite and power
 þai mycht to resist⁶ þe desire of pepill. Als sone as þare
 auctorite was experit,⁷ þai war baith arreistit be genucius, tribune 15
 of pepill. In þe menetyme lucius Amulius and opiter Virginius
 war made consulis. bot I fynd in vthir cronikillis⁸ þat Vobiscus
 Iulius was consul in þe place of Virginius. And nochtwithstand-
 ing quhatsumeir consullis war in þis ȝere, treuth Is baith þir twa
 last consullis, lucius furius and gneus manilius, war haldin as 20
 cryminabill⁹ afore þe pepil; And for [þe] suspitioun (quhilk was
 consauit aganis þame) þai past throw þe ciete In vile and funerall
 habit, Exhorting nocht alanelie the pepill bot als euery ane of
 þe ȝoung faderis to abstene in tyme cummyng fra administratioun
 of al public honouris, and fra sic thingis as concernit the public 25
 p. 211. weil. And made þame be mony resouns vnþerstand þe orna-
 mentis consulare, þat is to say, þe axis, the sadill curall, the
 pretext govne, with all vthir honouris and digniteis pertenyng
 þareto, war nocht bot ane pompe of schynand glore afore þare
 deith. for sic men (as war decorit þarewith) war na leß adiugit 30

¹ mamicius, *A.* ³ xlvi. ⁵ raheirssit. ⁷ exypyrit. ⁹ crimynaile.
² walerio. ⁴ as, *A.* ⁶ sist. ⁸ cornicklis.

to þe deith þan ar¹ þe beistis quhilks^s * ar¹ to be offerit in sacrifice. The faderis may consider thus gif þe consulate be ane plesand office, sen It is² opprest and violate sa mony wayis be tribunitiane auctorite. for now þe consul Is sa thirllit þat he mon³ obey to all empire and charge of tribunis, as he war bot ane seriand and appar[a]toure þareto. gif þe consul be noct obeysant to þe tribune, or gif he haue⁴ ony respect to þe commoun weil, or desiris ony thing contrare þe commoun mynde of pepill, Nocht restis to him bot to remember the proscription of marcius corilianus, The dampnatioun of meninius, and sikker deith afore his ene. The faderis, movit to hie displeseris be þir persand woudis, held sindry dayis eftir mony private consultatiouns amang þame, sa quietlie þat na men bot þame self had cognyssance⁵ þareof: And eftir lang consultatioun þai war pro- foundly resoluit to deliuer þir two last consulis fra all fere and persecutioun of pepill, oþir be Iuste or Iniust way: þat is to say, be strang hand or be richt. And þocht þe attemptate þareof war never sa cruel, git It plesit þame weill; for mony persouns war found amang þame to put þe samyn to haisty executioun. quhen þe day was cummyn of Iugement, þe pepill stude lang in þe courte abiding þe cummynge of genucius, havand na litil admiracioun of his lang tary. And becaus þai saw þe houre peremptoure nere ourepast, and þare tribune nocth compere, They belevit him to be astonist, and be mynassing of þe faderis durst nocth compere to þe persute of þare actioun; throw quhilk þai began to lament, saying þare public cauþ was desert & betrasit. At last þe remanent tribunis, quhilks^s | stude in þe porchis p. 212. quhare þe courte was haldin, schew afore þe pepil how þai fand genucius þe tribune slane in his bed. Als sone as þe pepil herd the murthure of þare tribune, þai skalit here and þare in sindri partis, like ane army quhilk is suddenly discomfist fra þare capitane be slane. Amang þe pepil nane war sa astonist be þis troubil as war þe tribunis; for quhen þai saw þe haly autorite tribunitiane violate be slauchter of genucius þare colleig, they war disparit to mak ony helpe to þe pepil in þis present dangere.

¹ war.² was.³ may (*for* man).⁴ haif.⁵ cognosence.

On þe tothir side þe faderis reisit with Immoderate blyithnes
 for þe deith of genucius, and schew þame self þarethrow na thing
 (193). penitent for his deith ; for * he was punyst Iustlie as þai thocht.
 Apperit þus þe haly autorite tribuniciane to be distroyit be mani-
 fest tyranny. (LV) The faderis seand þame self victorius abone 5
 þe pepil be þis maisterful and wrangwus¹ maner, commandit ane
 army to be rasit, þat þe pepil mycht be þe mare eselie² dantit.
 And becaus þe tribunis war effrayit, The faderis put þare purpois
 to executioun but ony Impediment. Than þe small pepil raiß in
 grete Ire, And war na leß commovit aganis þe tribunis for ob- 10
 servacioun of silence in þare public actioun þan þai war for þe
 empire of consulis regnand abone þame, & said Thare liberte
 was endit but recovir ; ffor throw þe deith of genucius the haly³
 autorite tribuniciane was endit and buryit atanis. fforß⁴ was
 þarefore, ane thing to think and ane vthir thing to do for resisting 15
 þe faderis. Na thing was left bot þare last refuge, to defend
 þame self (as þai mycht), sen na supporte apperit to þame of
 vthir. "The consulis has xxiiij seriandis armit with axis to de-
 fend þare auctorite consulare, and estymeis⁵ na thing leß þan ws 20
 þat ar discendit of lynage populare ; ȝit war þare ony amang ws
 þat mycht resist or contempne þare auctorite, We suld suddanlie
 rise in grete terroure to þame." quhen þe pepill had movit þame
 self with þir and siclike vane woudis, ane seriand was send be
 p. 213. autorite | of þe consulis to tak ane man þat was amang þame for 25
 þe tyme, namyt publius Volero⁶; for he wald nocht obey þe
 auctorite of faderis, nor ȝit gif his name in writt, allegiand he
 was ane capitane afore sum vthir tyme in þe romane armyis, And
 for þis cauß he aucht nocht to be as ane private man but ony
 auctorite, bot suld haue bene erare ane capitane as he was afore.
 Alsone as Volero⁷ was teichit In þis maner be þe seriand, he 30
 appellit to þe tribunis, And becaus nane of þame assistit to his
 supporte, þe consulis commandit him to be tirvit⁸ nakit and
 skurgit with wandis. Than said Volero⁹ : "I appele to þe
 pepill ; for þe tribunis had levir¹⁰ ane citeȝane of rome war scurgit

¹ wrangus.² haill.³ estemys.⁷ waleryo.⁸ walero.² esalie.⁴ force.⁶ waleryus.⁸ tirrit.¹⁰ leware.

afore þare ene þan to haue þame self murdrist in þare beddis." The more þis man cryit, þe seriand made him to be þe more haistelie tirvit¹ of his clathis. all wayß þis Volero² was wicht and strong³ of body, and obtenit sic helpe that he deliuerit him 5 self be force out of þe seriandis handis ; syne thristit in sturdely quhare he herd maist * clamoure and noyes of pepil applying to (194). his opinioun,⁴ and cryit : " I appele to þe pepill, and askis þare assistance. cum here," (said he) " þe citeȝanis and nobil companȝeouns ; now Is na tyme to abide þe helpe of ȝoure tribunys, 10 ffor þai haue mare myster of ȝoure supporte þan ȝe haue of þaris." The pepill, inflammyt be þir wourdis, armyt þame with na leß Ire þan þai had bene to fecht aganis þare Inemyis. apperit sa grete troubil haistelie to follow, þat nowthir halynes, richt, nor ȝit private or public constitutioun apperit to haue place or reuerence 15 for þe tyme in þe ciete. The consulis, makand þame to resist the furye of pepill rising be þis haisty contentioun, gat sone experience Thare maieste was richt vnsikkir, quhare It was nocht sufficientlie garnist with strang power. ffor nocht alanelie war þare axis brokin, þare servandis violate and strikkin,⁵ bot als 20 þame self chasit fra the merket to þe courte, Nockt knawing to quhat fyne þis Volero² wald vse his victorie latelie conquest abone þame. At last, quhen þe noyes and clamoure rising be þis bergane was sum parte mesit, The consulis convenit þe senate | to ane counsell, and complenit þe hevy Iniuris done to p. 214. 25 þame be violence of small pepill, and þe hardy attemptatis of Volero.² eftir lang consultaciouns mony feirß sentence and opiniouns war found in þis mater, to dant the rebelliou and pride of small pepill ; ȝit be suffrage and votis of agit men | It was found vnpoffittabill⁶ þat þe Ire of faderis suld contend 30 aganis þe furie & wodnes of pepill.

¹ tyrit.² walero.³ strang.⁴ oppizȝeoun.⁵ weolait & straikin.⁶ vnpofyttable.

(195). . . how þe faderis opponyt¹ þame aganis þe law made
be Volero,² tribune of pepill; Of grete contentioun
betuix lectorius tribune and appius consul, And
how þe trubill appering þarethrow was mesit be
quintius consull, and þe nowmer of tribunys ekit. 5

Ca. xxiiij.³

(LVI) The pepill, havand victorie on þis wise, embrasit
volero⁴ and creat him tribune in þare nixt commitis. In þis
ȝere lucius pinarius and publius furius war made consulis, and
þoche Ilk man belevit þis volero⁵ suld exerce his office ala-
nerlie to troubill the consullis of þis last ȝere, ȝit contrare þe
opinioun of pepill, fra he was cled⁶ *with* public honouris, he
had sic private doloure þat⁶ he neuer movit ane displesant
worde aganis þe consulis, bot made ane law In favoure of
small pepill, þat all officis & digniteis pertenand to þame sall 15
be chosin in tymes cummyng be commitis alanelie of tribunis.
howbeit þis law apperit of litill force or effect in þe first face,
ȝit It made plane derogatioun to þe faderis to creat ony trib-
unis in tymes cummyng be votis of þare assessouris or clientis.
The faderis, knawing þe dammage thareof, opponit þame ferslie 20
with vtir⁷ power⁸ to resist þe said law; ȝit nane was found
amang þe faderis or consullis þat durst⁹ particularly oppone
þame þareto, nor ȝit stop þe sammyn. Nochtþeles the thing
þat was sa strang and pussant in þe self, be revolution of
p. 215. diuerß tretyis was¹⁰ differrit to þe begynnyng of | þe nixt ȝere. 25
the pepill at þe begynnyng þareof continewit Volero tribune
as afore. The faderis, seing grete trubill appere, and traisting
þe sammyn to be endit be þe swerde alanelie, chesit appius
Claudius afore rehersit to be consul, and made titus quintius
his colleig. This appius was hatit and evil luffit with þe small 30

¹ apponyt.

⁴ walero.

⁷ wter, *B.*; vthir,

⁹ *The second hand begins*

² walerio.

⁵ waleryo.

⁸ A.

again in B. (p. 241).

³ xlvj.

⁶—⁶ om.

⁸ poware.

¹⁰ wes, *B.*; war, *A.*

pepill, for¹ sindri contentionis | and debatis sustenit be his fader contrare þare auctorite. At þe begynnyng of þe nixt ȝere þe pepill tuke na sollicitude bot alanelie for sic thingis as mycht erast fortifie þis new law made be Volero in þare fav-
5 oure. This lectorius was mare feirþ² and afald * to put þis (196). new law to executioun þan was Volero þe first auctoure þareof. The huge fame and glore of batall (be quhilk he was gretum-
lie estymeit³) made him þe mare bald to follow his mater. This lectorius, seand Volero his colleig speik na thing bot
10 onelie of þe law foresaid, began to speke aganis þe houþ and familie of Ap. Claudius, saying þe faderis has create and ordanit þe said Appius nocht to be consul, bot erare to be ane flescheoure for vexacioun and troubil of small pepill. this lectorius was sa rude off his langage, as men of armes vsis to
15 be, þat he culd nocht declare perfitelie his mynde, and for þat cauþ he said to þe pepill: "O quiritis, sen sa Is I can nocht schaw my mynde vthir wayis þan I haue done, I pray ȝow be on þis nixt morow reddy, & oþthir sall I de in ȝoure sicht, or ellis I sall haue þe law establit." The tribunis on þe nixt
20 morow tuke þe tempill for establibg of þe said law, bot þe consullis and nobillis come to empesche þe sammyn. Incontinent þe tribune⁴ commandit Ilk man to deparre, Except sa mony as wald gif þare votis for confirmatioun of þe said law. mony of þe ȝoung nobillis wald gif na place, nor ȝit obey to
25 þe viator. þan lectorius commandit ane certane of þir ȝong⁵ nobillis to be tane be þe viator, bot Appius allegit the tribunis had na Iurisdiction bot onelie of þe plebeanis; for þe office of tribunis mycht nocht haue ony power abone þe pepill, bot onelie on þe plebeanis. Thus mycht þe tribunis haue na
30 power to remove þe ȝoung | nobillis fra⁶ ony assemblance or p. 216. conventioun. The tribunis mycht haue said, "O quiritis, deparre gif ȝe pleiþ out of þis place." The consul mycht haue eith perturbit⁷ þe tribune in decisioun of þe richt. Incontinent the tribune lectorius, Inflammyt with ire, send þe

¹ be, *A.*² estemit.³ ȝoung.⁷ perturbat.⁸ ferce.⁴ tribunis.⁶ for, *A.*

viator to tak þe consul, and þe consul send þe lictor to tak
 þe tribune, & cryit þe tribune was ane private man but
 empire or ony auctorite. thus had þe tribune bene violate
 and slane, war nocht þe pepill ruschit with huge effray out of
 all partis of þe ciete to þe merkett; and assistit with þe tribune 5
 aganis þe consull. ȝit Appius sustenit all þis debate &
 dangerus trubil sa stoutlie, þat þe batall had nocht ceissit but
 effusioun of blude, war nocht quintius þe tothir consull gaif
 command to þe faderis to bring Appius perforce out of þe
 merkett, gif þai mycht nocht bring him vthir wayis. this 10
 quintius began sum tyme to meis þe small pepil *witk* swete
 (197). wordis; * sum tyme he prayit þe tribunis to skaill þare *con-*
ventioun and supersede þare Ire, sen þe delaying of þare
 purpois for ane tyme mycht tak na pissance¹ fra þame, bot
 erare fortify þame *with* mare strenth. for as þe faderis war 15
 vnder power of þe pepill, sa war þe consullis vnder þe power
 of faderis. (LVII) The pepill was nocht mesit but grete
 difficulte be quintius, and with mare difficulte was appius
 mesit be þe faderis. Als sone as þe conventioun of pepill
 was skalit, the consullis convenit the senatouris; and becaus 20
 þai war inflammyt with huge Ire on þe ta parte, and had grete
 dredoure of þe pepill on þe tothir parte, þai war dividit in
 sindri opiniouns; and ay þe mare laser þai tuke for
 consultatioun in þis mater, The mare war þare myndis drawin
 fra all contentioun, and gaif þarefore na litill thankis to quintius
 25 consull, for þe discorde was mesit be his lauboure. Appius
 desirit þe maieste of consullis to be of na leſt estimatioun at
 þis tyme þan It mycht be in ony tymes² of concorde. quhil
 the ciete was drawin on þis wise be consullis & tribunis in
 p. 217. sindri opiniouns,³ Nocht onelie apperit na pussance⁴ | left in 30
 þe ciete, bot als þe commoun weill sa hurte and dividit in
 contrarius factiounis, þat It was ether to spere quha⁵ had þe
 gouernance of commoun weill þan to Inquire gif þe commoun
 wele was haill and weill gouernit. Be contrare Appius tuke
 baith þe goddis and men in witnes, The public weill was 35

¹ passance.² tyme.³ appinonis.⁴ passance.⁵ quhay.

deserit and cowartlie betrasit ; & þe cauß þareof was nocht þat þe consullis faleȝeit to þe senate, bot erare þat þe senate faleȝeit to þe consullis ; for at þat tyme war acceppit be þame may wikkit¹ & soroufull lawis þan evir war acceppit be 5 secessioun of pepill to þe sacrate montane. finalie Appius be requeist of faderis was vincust, and left his persute ; And Incontinent þe law was pronuncit. (LVIII) This was þe first tyme þat ony tribunis war create be commites tribuniciane. Thre tribunis war create at þis tyme to be ekit to þe two 10 tribunis þat war create afore, as piso historiographoure writis. The names of þir tribunis followis. G. sicinius, L. numitorius, M. duellius, spu. Illicius & lu. metilius.

how appius Claudius was sa vnplesand emprioure to (198).

15 his army, þat þai sufferit þame self to be vincust be þe wolchis ; And how he punist þame for þare fleing ; how quintius consul made grete hereschippis on þe equis, & returnit with grete honoure to rome.

Ca. xxv.²

This seditioun continewing betuix þe consullis and tribunis 20 gaif occasioun to þe wolchis to Inavid þe romanis with batall, and mak sindri Incursions in þare landis, with purpois gif þe small pepill departit as afore to þe sacrate montane, þai suld be plesandlie supportit and haue þare assistance. The Inemyis, seand all seditioun and trubil pecifyit in þe ciete, drew abak 25 þare tentis, & past hame. sone estir, be consultatioun of þe senate was commandit þat Appius consul sal pas aganis the Wolches, & quintius consull to pas | aganis þe equis. The samyn p. 218. cruelte þat Appius had in his chevelrie at hame remanit with him of feild ; for he apperit þe more cruell þat he was deliuerit 30 of all fere of tribunis. This Appius bure mare Implacabill

¹ mony wekit.

² xlviij.

haterent aganis þe pepill þan bure his fader, becaus he was ourethrawin at þis tyme be þe tribunis. Als he was þe more commovit þat he beand consul, alanerlie obiekkan aganis þe auctorite of tribunis, The law was pronuncit quhilk was empeschit be vthir consullis afore *with* leſt difficulte and lauboure. 5
This Ire & Indignatioun movit appius to greif¹ his armye *with* sa feirſ commandmentis, þat It mycht na wayis be mesit; for þe armye consauit na litill Ire and Indignatioun in þare myndis aganis him, and did all thingis sa thrawartlie be sleuth and negligence,² þat nowthir schame nor fere of þare Inemyis mycht 10
refrene þame. gif Appius desirit þame to haisty þare passage, þai past³ huly. gif he wald exhort þame to array, þai wilfully past³ sindri, & deiekkit þare ene to be erde. quhen he past³ by þame, þai waryit⁴ him þat his mynde (quhilk was sa Invinsibl⁵ *with* hatrent of plebeans) suld be sum tyme commovit. 15

(199). At last þis Appius, seand his bitter wourdis nocth ava⁶lit, and þat he mycht do na thing be þe sammyn, he said þe armye was corruppit be þe centurions, and callit þame sum tyme tribunys of pepill and sum tyme callit þame Voleronis. (LIX) The Wolchis knew weill⁶ all þir dissensiouns, and haistyit⁷ þame *with* 20
al diligence þai mycht, traistint þe armye to rebell aganis appius on þe samyn maner as þai did afore aganis Sabynis. howbeit fabius army desirit ay to be victouris⁸ and chace þare Inemyis, ȝit þis armye desirit nocth bot to be vincust. for als sone as þis armye was arrayit formentis⁹ þare Inemyis, þai fled schame- 25
fully but ony straik [to þair tentis], And schupe neuer to mak resistance, quhil þai saw þe ansenȝeis of Inemyis erekkit at þe trynschis of þare tentis, and þe vtir skirtis of þare armye dis-
p. 219. compist with grete slauchter. and ȝit þai desirit | na vthir victorie bot alanerlie þare tentis nocth to be tane be Inemyis. mony of 30
þame war glade¹⁰ for þe calamye and troubil falling to þame self; and ȝit þe feirſ spreit of Appius was na thing brokin be þir Iniuris, bot callit his army to ane concioune to haue reprochit þame of þare cowartry & febilnes; and in þe mene tyme þe

¹ greve. ³ ȝid. ⁵ Invincible. ⁷ haistit. ⁹ fornence.
² negligence. ⁴ warit. ⁶ vele. ⁸ victorius. ¹⁰ gled.

legatis and tribunys come to him, praying him to assaleȝe nocht þe power of his empire, for all þe vertew þareof stude alanelry in þe obedience of his subdittis.¹ Attoure þe armye denyit to convene to ony concioune at his command. thus was nocht herde 5 in þe army bot ane noyis and clamour desiring þame to be transportit out of þe wolchis landis in sum province of romanis; for nocht alanelrie was þe Inemyis almaist victor within þe trynschis and portis of þare tentis, bot throw þe sammyn² þai had ane suspition of ane greter schame and displesure following.

10 Appius, seand finalie his rigor³ and feirþ woudis nocht avail, and na furthir in his purpois bot alanelrie tynsell of tyme, left þe calling of his armye to ane concioune, and commandit þame on þe nixt morow to mak þame reddy to departe at þe first sound of trumpett.⁴ on þe morow arely, als sone as romanis war de-

15 parting, the wolchis, awalknit be sound of trumpett,⁴ followit feirly on þe lattir⁵ skirtis of þare armye. þe effray and noyis⁶ rissyn þarethrow come fra þe hyndmest parte of þe armye to þe formest bront⁶ þareof, and made sic troubill baith amang þe ordouris and þe ensenȝeis,⁷ þat nowthir mycht þe empire of þe

20 capitane be herd Nor ȝit mycht the battall be * put in dew array; (200). throw quhilk na man tuke sicht to ony vthir thing, bot alanelry to fle. Thus war þe romanis discomfitt⁸ & chasit sa continually, þat þe wolchis war first Irkit of þe chace or þe romanis ceissit of þare fleing. The consull, seing he mycht na way⁹ stop þe fleing

25 of his army, collectit þame eftir þare discomfitoure, and sett doun þare tentis within þe romane landis; & eftir | þat he had p. 220. callit þame to ane concioune, he began to reproche þame of þare fleing, and passing fra þe ordinance of chevalrie: synne demandit Ilkane of þame quhare was þare wappynnis,¹⁰ thare armoure, and

30 þare ansenȝeis, & Incontinent tuke all þe vnarmyt men þat he fand amang his army, with sindri vtheris, sic as wer banermen and had left þe ansenȝeis behynd þame, and first he gart skourge¹¹ þame with wandis & synne he gart¹² hede þame with ane ax. The

¹ subdettis.⁴ trumpatt.⁷ ansenȝeis.¹⁰ wappingis.² same.⁵ lettir.⁸ disconfist.¹¹ skairge.³ regourus.⁶ brount.⁹ wayis.¹² grat.

residew of al his discomfist armye war tane be him, and Ilk tent man hedit be cavil for þare fleing. (LX) The tothir consul Titus quintius (quhilk was send aganis þe equis) bure him in ane vþir sorte; for þocht þe said quintius was be natur of swete and plesand maneris, ȝit abone þe samyn The vnhappy cruelte of 5 his colleig gaif occasiou to him to reiose in his awne¹ Inigne and soft maneris. The equis, seand þis grete concorde betuix quintius and his armye, durst nocht aventure þame self to þe chance of batall, bot sufferit þare Inemyis to evaig² and pas but ony resistance in depopulation and hereschip of þare landis, 10 in sic wise³ þat neuer afore þai dayis was won mare pray of richeß be ony chance of batall; and al þe said pray was delt liberaly be quintius amang þe armye. abone all þir largitiouns þe consull⁴ gaif þame grete loving, In quhilk þe sprete and curage of men reiosis na leß than in largitiouns of gudis and 15 richeß. sone eftir, þis army returnit to rome, & was richt acceptabil to þe faderis for quintius saik, and to his grete loving þai said he bure him nocht as emprioure bot as fader abone þame, howbeit Appius Claudius bure him as ane maister abone the tothir armye. 20

(201). how ane day of Jugement was sett to Appius, and
 p. 221. of his deith; how Valerius and amilius consullis made grete hereschippis on þe equis and Sabinis; how þe sabynis and Wolchis war sindry tymes vincuste be romanis & þe toun of antium⁵ tane. 25

Ca. xxvj.⁶

(LXI) In the ȝere following L. valerius & ti[tus] Amilius⁶ war made consulis. this ȝere was richt notable, baith for þe contencioun of ordouris concernyng þe law Agrarie, and for þe Iugement of Appius Claudius; for he was grete aduersare to 30

¹ awyne. ² evage. ³ wyiſ. ⁴ consulis, A. ⁵ xlviij. ⁶ Amilius, A.

þe law agrarie, and debatit þe actioun of al þame þat possedit the public landis; and þarefore þe tribunys of pepil, namyt gneus siccus & M[arcus] duellius,¹ set ane day to þe said appius, to here him criminalie accusit afore þe pepil. treuth Is þat 5 neuer afore þai dayis was ony man summond to Iugement sa hatit *with* þe pepil; for þe pepil bure aganis him extreme Indignatioun and Ire, baith for his fader and for his awne saik. On þe tothir side þe faderis set þame stoutly to defend him; for he was *nocht* onelie defendoure of þe senate, bot als 10 couerare of þare maieste, ay feirslie opponyng him aganis all noyis & trubil of tribunys & pepill. This appius Claudius, beand allone amang þe faderis, sett baith þe tribunis, þe pepill, and all þare Iugement at *nocht*; and was sa stout in his opinioun² þat nouthir mycht þe mynassing³ of pepil, nor ȝit 15 þe prayeris of faderis, move him sa mekil as to change his habit, [or⁴ to meyne him petuslie to þe pepill], Or⁵ ȝit mycht move him quhen his actioun was to be discussit afore þe pepil to soft or humyl ony thing in seuerite of his orisoun. [ffor the same spreit wes in his orisone,] þe samyn⁶ contenance was in 20 his visage, The sammyn⁶ maner of saying was in him now, quhen he was private, as⁷ was afore quhen he was consul. he purgit⁸ bot anys⁹ him self⁹ afore þe pepill *with* maist awfull and constant sprete, & made þe tribunis & pepill sa astonist þat þai war glade¹⁰ to haue his day of Iugement als lang delayit as he 25 plesit. Nochtþeles, afore þe day come, he deceissit be | suddane p. 222. * infirmite; and how beit þe tribunis of pepill sett þame to em- (202). pesch þe loving þat was accustumate to be gevin to nobil men in þare deith, ȝit þe small pepil wald *nocht* suffir him to be defraudit¹¹ þareof, and hard þarefore þe blasonyng & predica- 30 tioun of his loving als plesandlie þan, quhen he was dede, as þai herd his loving afore quhen he was quyk; and did his funerale obsequies *with* grete solemnité. (LXII) In þis ȝere Valerius consul was send *with* ane army aganis þe equis; &

¹ duillius, *A.*

⁴ ȝit in MS.

⁷ at.

¹⁰ glede.

² apinioun.

⁵ nor.

⁸ scheuw.

¹¹ defraud.

³ manassing.

⁶ same.

⁹—⁹ his caus.

becaus he culd *nocht* *provoik*¹ þe Inemyis to batall, he sett him to assaile þare tentis, & Incontinent fell sa hevy tempest *with* slete and snawis out of þe are, þat he was empeschet; & to þe greter admiratioun and wounder, fra he had commandit his army to retere² abak fra þe tentis of Inemyis and come to 5 his standart, followit sic serenite þat *nocht* was traistit bot þe tentis of Inemyis defendit be sum divyne power. Thus was all þe preiß of batall convertit alanelie in depopulacion of þe landis of equis. The tothir consul Amylius led batell aganis þe Sabinis, and waistit þare landis becauß þai wald *nocht* gif batall, 10 bot held þame within þare strenthis. at last þe sabinis, seand þare landis and townis cruelly brynt, raiß in grete cumpanyis, and quhen þai had fochtin aganis þare Inemyis *with* vncertane victorie, Thay drew þare tentis abak to mare sikkir boundis. The consul thocħt he did his devore sufficientlie, sen he had 15 put his Inemyis abak and waistit þare landis. (LXIII) during þir batallis was grete discentioun at hame amang þe romanis, and in þe mene tyme ti. numicius³ & Au. Virginius war made consullis. apperit weill þe pepill wald suffir na langare þe delatioun of þe law agrarie; and quhen þai war maist forcelie 20 gevin to þe executioun þareof, Tithingis come þat þe Wolches war cument *with* strang armyis to Invaid þe ciete. The reik of village[s] & townis adiacent, and þe fleing of landwart⁴ pepil to þe ciete, schew weil þir novellis of verite. The sedition p. 223. | rising be mocioun of þe law foresade was suddanlie repressit 25 be þir novellis. the consullis departit haistely be command of þe senate with mony young and lusty gallandis of þe ciete, and made þe small pepil mare peciabil⁵ þan afore. The Inemyis did nane other thing bot astonist þe romanis with vane dredoure (203). & haistely departit. Numilius⁶ was send *aganis þe wolchis of 30 antium, and Virginius aganis þe equis; bot his army sufferit grete damage be Isching of hid buschmentis liand vnder wate. *Nochtþeles* þe manhede & wisdome of his knichtis recouerit þe thing þat was tynt be negligence of þe consul. The tothir con-

¹ prowoke.

² returne.

³ titull mimilius (!).

⁴ lanwart.

⁵ peaceable.

⁶ *So also in B.*

sul Numilius¹ prosperit bettir aganis þe Wolchis, for þai war
 discomfist & chasit to þe toun of antium, ²þe maist riche ciete
 amang þame in þai dayis; And becaus þe consull mycht nocht
 presentlie assege þe said toun of Antium,³ he tuke ane vthir small
 5 toun pertenand to þare dominiouen namit Cenon. quhil þe wolchis
 and equis on þis wise be þe romanis war Invadit, The sabinis
 come *with* maist auful Incursiouns to þe portis of rome.
 Nochtþeles þe two consullis met þame within few dayis estir,
 and opprest þame with more hereschippis⁴ and slaunchter þan
 10 þai did afore to romanis. (LXIV) In þe end of þe ȝere sum
 tranquillite & peace was. Nochtþeles þe samyn (as oft afore
 occurrit) was trublit be contentioun betuix þe faderis & smal
 pepil. Thus was þe small pepill sa commovit, þat þai wald
 nocht cum to þe commitis & eleccioun of consullis; & nocht-
 15 *withstanding* þare absence, ȝit be auctorite of þe faderis & þare
 clientis, pub. quintius & quintius seruilius war made consullis.
 This ȝere was nocht vnlike to þe ȝere afore, for all seditious
 rising in þe beginyng þareof war repressit be feir of Inemyis.
 The sabinis cum *with* ane haisty armye throw þe landis of
 20 Crustumianis; & estir þai had rasit fire with huge slaunchter
 beside þe river of Anien, þai come to porte collyne; & howbeit
 þai war doung fra þe said porte & wallis of Rome, ȝit þai drave⁴
 ane huge pray of men & gudis hame to þare cuntre. Incon-
 tinent seruilius consull followit on þame *with* ane army; bot he
 25 mycht nocht tak þame at ganand place, and þarefore he made sa
 cruel hereschip in þare landis þat na thing was left | Vnassail- p. 224.
 ȝeit be batall, and returnit hame *with* infinite pray. on þe samyn
 maner all thing was done with grete felicite aganis þe Wolchis,
 be wisdome of pub. quintius consul and his army. first It was
 30 fochtin⁵ in plane feild *with* displayit baneris, and grete slaunchter
 made on every side. The romanis (becaus þai war in fewe
 nowmer) had bene put abak, war nocht quixtius þe consul be
 ane proffittabil lesing cryit þat þe Inemyis war fleand on ane
 vthir weyng;⁶ throw quhilk the romanis ruschit on þare Inemyis

¹ So also in B.

²—³ om.

⁴ heirschippis.

⁴ draif.

⁵ focht.

⁶ wyng.

(204). *with* sic * preis, þat quhare þai belevit to haue bene vincust, þai war victori^{us}. The consul, dredand batall to be renewit gif his knichtis followit oure fer in þe chace, callit þame be sound of trumpett to þe standart. ffollowit certane dayis In quhil^{kis} baith þe armyis war at quiet, as certane trevis war takin betuix 5 þame; And in þe mene tyme come ane huge multitude of Wolchis and equis, and adionit þame to þe tentis of sabynis, and purposit (als sone as þe romanis war departing) to Inavid þare tentis at þe thrid Vigill. Als sone as quintius had mesit the noyi^s and trubil of þis effray, he commandit þe knichtis to 10 hald þame clois within þare tentis, and put furth ane buschment of hernik^{is} to kepe þe watche afore þe tentis; & causit horsmen with swasche,¹ and taberne² to play all nyght about þe trynschis, to hald þare Inemyis walkand to þe morow. The remanent of 15 þis nyght was in sic quiet with romanis, þat þai slepit at þare plesere. On þe tothir side þe Wolchis war effrayit be noyi^s of armit futemen, quham þai belevit in grete nowmer. Attoure, þe neyng of hors, becaus vncouth men war apoun þare bakkis, with 20 þe noyi^s of swasche¹ and tawberon,³ held þe wolchis ay on flocht, as þare Inemyis had bene cummyn on þame. (LXV) on 25 þe nixt morow arelie the romanis (eftir þai had slepit wele and war refreschit) went to array, and sett on þe wolchis wery & forwalkit, and put þame abak. ⁴howbeit It apperit þai went erare abak⁴ with þare awne will þan to be discomfist, for at þare bakkis was ane strait montane or cleuch; In quhil^{kis} þai war 30 surelie garnist with al þare ordouris. þe consul, seand þe place vnganand for batall, styntit his army, howbeit þe samyn mycht p. 225. nocht be haldin fra | batall but grete difficulte, Ay cryand and desirand to Inavid þare astonist Inemyis. The horsmen Incontinent ran feirslie about þare capitanis, cryand gif þai gatt na 35 licence, þai suld afore the sound of trumpett gif batell; and as þai cryit sa followit, for þai affixt⁵ haistelie þare dartis in þe erde, þat þai mycht be more lichtlie clym vp þe cleuch. Incontinent þe wolchis schot at þame all þare dartis atanis, & eftir schot doun grete stanis on þe fute men ay as þai clam vp, and with ythand 35

¹ swache.² taburn.³ tauburn.⁴—⁴ om.⁵ effexit.

strakis put þame fra þe hichtis. Thus was þe left wyng of þe romanis sa ouresett with dynt of stanys, þat þai had past abak, war nocht þe consul reprochit þame first of þare fule hardyment & * syne of þare cowarty,¹ and eschamit þame in sic wise þat he (205).
 5 put all þare dredoure aside. The romanis resistit first þare Inemyis with obstinate myndis; bot fra þare strenth and aynd was a litil refreshit, þai past² fordwart with gude will, and finalie wan þe difficillest³ and maist strate parte of þe said montane. Now war þe romanis cummyn to þe hicht of all þe montane,
 10 quhen þe Inemyis fled and gaif bakkis. Incontinent þe romanis followit on þame, in sic wise þat baith þe flearis and followaris wyde skatterit [and] vnder ane company come atanis to þe tentis. Thus war þe tentis of Inemyis tane. sa mony of þe wolchis (as mycht fle) ran feirslie to þe toun of *Antium*, On
 15 quham followit al þe romane armye; and eftir þat It was segeit certane dayis, It was tane but ony new violence, bot only becauſ þare curage was loist for taking of þare tentis throw þis vnhappy batall. And sa endis here þe secund buke of *Leuius*.⁴

¹ cowerte.² ȝeid.³ difficulest.⁴ Titus liuius.

how the debate rising betuix þe faderis and tribunys
of pepill concernyng the law agrarie was mesit be
prudence of fabius ; how þe equis was discomfist ;
and of þe nowmer of romane pepill within rome.

Ca. primum.¹ 5

Quhen the toun of **Antium** was tane in þis maner, Titus Amulus and quintus fabius war made consulis. This was þe samyn fabius þat was left onelie on live behind þe remenant surname of fabis slane at Cremera. Amulius in his first consulate lauborit stronglie þat þe landis conquest fra Inemyis ¹⁰ suld be dividit amang þe small pepill ; And þarefore in his secound consulate all þe fauoraris of þe said law agrarie rasit þare curage in esperance of þe said law. fforthir þe tribunis, beleving þat throw supporte of þe said consul þai mycht stabil þe said law, began to trete surelie þe mater þat was sa oft be þame afore ¹⁵ assailȝete. The consul Amulius stude constant at his purpois.
(207). In þe mene tyme baith ² þe possessouris of public landis and ane grete parte of þe faderis, seand þame self hevily ³ trublit be actiouns of tribunis, complenit þat þe prince ⁴ of þe ciete be largitiouns of vthir mennys landis and gudis war become ²⁰ populare ; And be þis lament þai turnit al Invy & haterent þat þai had afore aganis þe tribunis on þe said consul. Thus ⁴ grete seditioun and debate suld haue haistelie rissin, ⁵ war noct ⁶ þe samyn was pecifijt be prudence of þe nobill fabius, quhais counsel

¹ xl ix.

² hevaly.

³ prence.

⁴ This.

⁵ rysyn.

was sa moderate þat It was nouthir displesand to þe ta parte¹ nor þe tothir ; ffor he said his colleig Amulius mycht divide amang þe small pepil ane parte of þe landis pertenyng to þe toun of antium, quihilk was tane in þe ȝere afore fra þe wolchis 5 be victorie of lucius quintius. & becauþ þe toun of antium was nere approcheand to þame, & I stude stranglie² on þe p. 228. marchis, It mycht þarefore be made ane colonie of romanis; And be þis way nocth onelie mycht þe smal pepill reiose sum parte of new landis, but ony Impediment of þe possessouris, 10 bot als þe ciete mycht haue stand in pece & concorde. this sentence of fabius was plesand to al partis,³ and þarefore thre prudent men, namyt titus quintius, Aulus Virginius, and pub. furius, war chosin to parte þe said landis ; be quhais auctorite ane edict was made, commanding al persounis þat wald haue 15 ony of þir landis afore rehersit to gif þare names in writh. ȝit (as oft occurris) plente generis contemptiou. als sone as þe smal pepill saw þai mycht haue þir landis dividit at þare pleſſer, þai refusit to haue ony parte þareof. Thus war þe names of þame sa fewe þat desirit þir landis, þat sindri Wolchis was⁴ 20 brocht to duell within þe said toun of Antium ; for þe residew of romane pepill had lever (as þai confessit) ask landis in rome, howbeit þai gat na possessioun þareof, þan to possede landis in ony vthir parte. Sic thingis done, quintius fabius was send with ane armye aganis the equis, bot sone estir his cummyn þe 25 equis send to him þare legatis for peace ; and þocht þis pece was grantit It endurit nocth, for þe samyn was brokin be þare suddane Incursioun on þe latynis. (II) The nixt ȝere q[uintius] Seruilius and spurius posthumius war made consull[is]. seruilius was send aganis þe equis, and sat doun with his tentis in þe latyne 30 landis. Than fel sa mony infirmiteis amang his army, þat he was constrenit to tak rest. Thus was þe * batell þat was movit aganis (208). þe equis supersedit to þe thrid ȝere ; & in þe begynnyng þareof quintius fabius and titus quintius war made consullis. ffabius was ordanit to pas aganis þe equis, for he (as victorius emprioure) gaif 35 to þame pece afore. þis fabius, traistng fermelie þe maieste &

¹ party.² stranglie.³ partyis.⁴ wer.

renoun of his estate (becaus he was victorius afore) suld pecifye
 all trubill amang þe equis, send his legatis saying to þame as
 followis : "Quintius fabius dois ȝow vnderstand, he Is þe samyn
 man þat brocht pece afore fra þe equis to rome, and bringis
 p. 229. now battall fra rome | to þe equis, with þis samyn armit hand 5
 þat gaif peace to þame afore ; and takis¹ þe goddis In witnes
 to punys all þame þat has violate or brokin þare faith be periure.²
 In quhatsumeuir sorte þe mater standis, he desiris þe equis erare
 to be penitent of þare rebellioun aganis þe maieste and faith of
 goddis, þan to suffir ony vengeance following on þame be þe 10
 swerd. fforthir gif þe said equis will be penitent, þai sall be
 ressauit to his provin clemence ; and gif þai will continewe in
 þare periurie, force was to þame to fecht erare aganis þe wraith
 and Ire of goddis þan aganis his weris." The equis war sa
 inflammyt be þir wordis, þat skarslie mycht þai be refrenit fra 15
 violatioun of Romane legatis. belive ane army was send be þame
 aganis þe romanis, and sett doun þare tentis At Algidum. Als
 sone as þir novellis war brocht to rome, þe tothir consull Titus
 quintius departit with ane new armye, for he was more inflammyt
 for þe contemptioun done be his Inemyis þan for ony dangere 20
 be þame appering. Thus past þe twa consullis with two strang
 Oistis to gif batall to þe equis. At þare cummyng fornente þare
 Inemyis the licht was nere gane³; And in þe mene tyme ane
 of þe equis cryit skornefully, It was propir to romanis erare to
 mak ane vane manassing, þan to gif batall. "ȝe array ȝow" 25
 (said he) "now within þe nycht ; howbeit ȝe haue nede of more
 licht þan now apperis to perfurnes ȝoure batall. herefore array
 ȝow aganis þe nixt morow, and haue na dreddoour bot ȝe sall haue
 als⁴ mekil fechting as ȝe desire." The Romane armyis, in-
 flammyt to grete Ire be þir wourdis, returnit to þare tentis, 30
 thinkand þe nycht to lang þat made sic tary to þare batall,
 (209). and sone estir refreschit þare bodyis with mete and slepe. * Als
 sone as licht apperit on þe morow, the romanis come formost⁵ to
 þe feild, And noȝt lang estir þare cummyng come þe equis.

¹ takkes.³ gone.⁵ formaist.² periurie.⁴ sa.

followit haistelie ane batall cruelly fochtin ¹ on all sidis. The romanis faucht þe more stranglie, þat þai war Inflammyt *with* Ire & haterent of þare Inemyis; And þe equis, disparit to haue ony creditt *with* [þe] romanis in tymes cummyng (becaus þai failȝete 5 in tymes bigane), enforcit þame to assailȝe þe last chance & Ieoperdie *of* armes. finalie þai mycht nocht sustene þe preiß p. 230. of romanis, and war chasit *with* grete slaunchter quhil þai wer returnit within þare awne landis. And howbeit the equis war discomfist in þis wise, ȝit þai wald nowthir seik nor desire pece 10 of þare Inemyis; bot reprochit hevily þare capitanis, quhilkis Ieoperde þare commounȝ wele aganis þe romanis in arrayit and sett batall, Considering þe romanis war maist crafty in sic maner of fechtin; be contrare þai, þe saidis Equis, war maist crafty to distroye þare Inemyis be haisty & suddane Incursiouns, and 15 couth leid batall bettir quhen þai war skatterit in mony handis þan quhen þai war all Ionit togiddir vnder ane body. (III) for þir ressounȝ þe equis Ischit fra þare campe, levand behynd þame ane garisoun of armit men in defence þareof; Syne enterit *with* sic cruelte within þe bordouris of romane landis, þat þe tumult 20 and effray þareof was brocht to rome. Thir novellis made ane

¹ *The eighth hand in B. begins here (p. 257).*

On all sydis. þe Romanis faucht þe more stranglie, þat tha wer inflammyt *with* Ire and hatrent off þair ennymeis; And þe equis, disparit to haue ony credeit *with* þe Romanis in tymes cuming becaus þa failȝeit in tymes bigane, enforxit þame to assailȝe þe last chance and geoperdie of armes. finalie tha mycht nocht sustene þe press of Romanis, and wer chasyt *with* greit slaunchter quhill tha wer Returnyt *within* þair awin landis. And houbeit þe equis wer discomfist in þis wise, ȝit tha wald noþir seik nor desyre peace of þair ennymeis; bot reproche hevalie þair capitanis, quhilkis Ieoperdie þair commone weill aganis þe Romanis in arrayit and set battell, considering þe Romanis wer maist crafty in sic maner of fechting; be contrair þai, þe said equis, wer maist crafty to distroy þair ennymeis be haisty and suddane incursionys, and couth leid battell better quhen tha wer scatterit in mony handis þan quhen tha wer all loynit þe giddar vnder ane body. ffor þir resonis þe equis Ischit fro þair camp, levand behynd þame ane garesoun of armyt men in defence þair off; syne enterit *with* sic creualtie *within* þe bordouris of Romane landis þat þe tumult and affray þair off wes brocht to Rome. Thir novellis maid ane huge

huge terroure in þe ciete; for þe romanis belevit na thing leß þan þare Inemyis (quhilkis war vincust and nere spuleȝit of þare tentis) to resorte haistelie with new power witin þare landis. þe landwart pepill come richt effrayitlie to rome, augmentand euery thingis *with* vane terroure, and saying þe Inemyis war ap- 5 procheand to þe portis, nocht as afore to Inavid þe cuntrē with suddane Incursiouns, bot erare garnist with mony arrayit legiouns cummand with grete force to tak þe ciete. thus was þe ciete brocht in mare terroure þan afore be vane novellis, quhilkis 10 sprang sa fer be reporting of ane ¹ to ane vthir, þat þe dyn & clamoure þareof made Ilk man to ¹ rusche haistelie to harnes *with* na less dredoure ² þan þare ciete war Instantlie to be tane be Inemyis. quhill sic terroure was in rome, quintius fabius returnit with his army fra algidum; quhais cuming was grete comforting to þe effrayit ³ ciete. Als sone as he had mesit all troubill ⁴ 15 (210). þareof, he reprevit þe * romanis becaus þai tuke fere and dredoure of þare vincust Inemyis. Incontinent he lade ⁵ ane buschment of armit men to þe portis. Sic thingis done, he convenit þe senate, [And] be auctorite of þe faderis commandit all ministratioun of lawis to ⁶ ceiȝ; and past haistely *with* mony strang knychtis to 20 p. 231. defend þe fronteris & bordouris | of romane landis; and left quintius seruilius to be president of his ciete to his returnyng. At his cummyng he fand na Inemyis in þe feildis. The tothir consul wrocht his besines with souerane manhede and wisdome; for als sone as he vnderstude be quhat wayis ⁷ his Inemyis war 25 returnyng hame, ladin with sa Infinite pray of men and gudis þat þe samyn made na litill Impediment to þare viage, ⁸ he assailȝete þame *with* sa suddane batall þat he spuleȝete þame atanis baith of þare livis and gudis. few eschapit, and the pray was halely recoverit. At þe returnyng of quintius the administratioun of 30 lawis began agane as þai war wound ⁹; for þe vacance þareof

terrour in þe ciete; ffor þe Romanys belevit na thing les þan þair ennymeis, quhilkis wer vincust And neir spulȝeit of þair tentis, to resort haistely *with* new powar witin þair landis.

^{1—1} om.

² derdour.

³ affrayit.

⁴ tribill.

⁵ laid.

⁶ till.

⁷ way.

⁸ vayage.

⁹ wont.

endurit bot iiiij dayis.¹ Than war þe romane pepill nowmerit, and þe sacrifice lustrale made be quintius consul in þe honoūr of goddis. The romane citežanis being nowmerit in þis wise come to ane hundredth xxiiij^m² ij^c xxiiij persouns, Except pupillis and 5 wedois. Na thing was done be þe³ equis estir þis wourthy to haue memorie; for þai defendit þame self within þare mvnitiouns & strenthis, and sufferit al þare landis & gudis to paſt in direption & pray of Inemyis. At last quhen þe consul had lang tyme lyin⁴ in þare landis to þe vtir hereschip⁵ and confisking of 10 þare gudis, he returnit with grete honoure and pray of men & gudis to rome.

how þe hernikis aduertist þe romanis of þe batall (211).
 appering be wolchis & equis; how spurius furius
 15 consull was discomfist be þe wolchis and equis, &
 was rescoursit estir be quintius proconsul, & how
 þe wolchis & equis war discomfist. Ca. ij.⁶

(IV) In the nixt ȝere posthumius albus and spurius furius war made consullis. fabius with vthir writaris sais þe consullis of þis ȝere war namyt spuriij & fusij; ȝit howbeit þe namys be 20 changit, na alteratioun Is in þe persouns. na dout Is bot þir two consullis was to leid batall aganis þe equis, and for þat cauſ þe equis war constrenit to seik helpe fra þe wolchis namyt ecetranis; quhilk being richt plesantly grantit, | for all pepill p. 232. and townis liand about rome had extreme Invie and hattrent 25 aganis þe romanis, thir two pepill, þe wolchis and equis, maid þame to Invaid the romanis In maist awfull maner. als sone as þe hernikis war aduertist hereof, thay send þare messengeris to rome, schewand nocht onelie how the Ecetranis war rebellit and alliat with þe equis, bot als Antium þe colone of romanis

¹ four dais.

² thousand.

³ þis.

⁴ lying, A.

⁵ heirschep.

⁶ L.

was suspect; ffor quhen It was tane, mony of þe cieteneris¹ þareof fled to þe equis, and war ane scharpe Inemye to [þe] romanis, as was provin in þe last batall fochtin be þe equis In supporte of Wolchis. for estir þat þe said equis war vincust & drevin abak to þare townis, mony of þir Wolchis quhilkis fled 5 afore to þe equis returnit to antium, And be þare persuasious drew þe remanent² vnfaithful pepill þareof to þare opinioun, how beit þe mater succedit noct³ with felicite. Als sone as þare rebellioun was patent to þe senate, þe charge þareof was committit to þe consulis, commanding þame to bring þe princis 10 of Antium to rome, to be Inquirit of sic thingis as þe senate thocht expedient. Thir princis, estir [þat] þai war brocht finalie to rome with small difficulte,⁴ made sic ansuere to þe senate þat þai war repute mare suspiciois at þare departing þan þai (212). war * repute afore þare cummyn.⁴ Thus war þe consullis surelie 15 aduertist of batall appering. Than spurius furius consul, to quham þe province of equis fell, passand aganis þe said equis, fand þame makand direpcions & spuleȝe in þe hernyke landis; and becaus he knewe noct⁵ þe multitude and pussance of his Inemyis, for þare army apperit noct attanis to his sicht, he 20 gaif batall fulichlie,⁶ for at þe first Ioyning he was discomfist and chasit to his tentis. This discomfitoure put noct⁷ ane end to⁸ his trubill, for baith þe nyght & day following his tentis war sa strait environnyt⁷ be sege of Inemyis, þat he culd noct⁹ gett ane man furth of his army to aduertiȝ þe romanis of his 25 troubill.⁸ Nochtþeleȝ affray⁹ thareof was brocht to rome be p. 233. þe hernikis, for thay | schew þe consull discomfist, and baith his self & his army segeit be Inemyis. thir novellis made þe faderis sa astonist, þat þai vsit þe samyn deliuerance þat þai vsit in¹⁰ extreme necessite. þe charge of þis present¹¹ besines was 30 committit to posthumius consul, to sauf¹² þe public weill fra Iniure of Inemyis. thus was It found expedient þat posthumius consul remane in rome to put all þe names of þame in writt

¹ ceteȝanis.

⁴ cuming.

⁷ invironyt.

¹⁰ into þe.

² Romane (!).

⁵ fulischly.

⁸ tribill.

¹¹ extreme.

³ deficulte.

⁶ till.

⁹ effray.

¹² saif.

þat may bere wappynys and armoure, And als to send titus
 quintius proconsul *with* ane power baith of Romanis and vtheris
 þare confederate freyndis In support of spurius consul. to per-
 furnis þis batall, baith þe latynis, hernikis, and cietejanis of
 5 antium war commandit to gif þare maist reddy¹ support. (V)
 mony motiouns & grete assaltis war maid in þare dayis, baith
 on þe ta² parte and þe tothir; for þe Inemyis, confiding in þare
 multitude, assaleȝet be mony slichtis and wayis þe Romane
 puissance, as Insufficient³ to resist þare Invasions. for noct
 10 alanelie þaiassegeit⁴ þe romane tentis, bot als held baith ane
 power to spuleȝe ythandlie the romane landis, and sustenit ane
 garnisoun of armit men to tak þe ciete, gif ony gude fortoun
 had occurrit. Thus was lu. valerius left in rome to defend þe
 tovne, and posthumius consul send to⁵ resist þe Incursions of
 15 Inemyis; And sa na thing was pretermittit þat mycht proffitt or
 avaunce þe ciete be Ingyne and lauboure. within þe ciete was
 walking, and vtouth þe portis stude garnisouns of armyt men
 arrayit on þe wallis. Attowr, þe thing þat was necessare in sic
 effray, þat Is to say, þe vacance * of lawis was commandit. (213).
 20 quhill sic thingis occurrit, spurius furius þe consul held him
 quiet in þe begynnyng, and sufferit him to be segeit *with*
 Inemyis; bot at last he Ischit at þe grete porte of his tentis,
 and spuleȝete his Inemyis liand but ordoure. And howbeit he
 mycht haue diffait⁶ þame eselie, he tuke sic fere þat he persewit
 25 na forther, in aventure his tentis war left in dangere or tane be
 Inemyis. In þe mene tyme furius, legate and brothir to þe
 consul, followit sa feirslie on⁷ þe chace, þat he considerit
 nowthir | how his freyndis desisting fra þe chace war returnit p. 234.
 to þare tentis, Nor zit how Inemyis war following on his bak.
 30 ffurius, on þis wise excludit fra all supporte, eftir þat he had
 assailit mony wayis to returne to þe tentis, was slane fechtand
 with grete manhede to þe dede. Als sone as furius consul was
 aduertist of his brotheris slauchter, he enforcit him self to batall,
 and with mare folie þan⁸ wisdome Ieoperde him self amyd his

¹ Rady.
² tone.

³ vnsufficient.
⁴ segit.

⁵ till.
⁶ dissauit (!).

⁷ vpoun.
⁸ nor.

Inemyis ; for he was hurte at þis Ieoperde, and noct but grete difficulte¹ rescoursit. this mysaventure deieckit the curage of his army, and made his Inemyis mare feirß and bald þan afore. The Inemyis, enragit In maist furie be slauchter of þe legate and hurting of þe consul, mycht na wayis be resistit. thus þe 5 romanis, nowthir equale to þare Inemyis in curage nor pussance, war segeit agane with new violence ; and so þare commoun wele had cummyn² in extreme dangere, war nocth þai war rescoursit be titus quintius ; for he come to þame with ane army of latynis and hernikis. quintius estir his cummyn sett on þe bakkis of 10 þe equis, quhilkis war feirly segeand þe romane tentis, and schawin with grete derisioun þe hede of þe legate. finalie, throw ane signe þat quintius made ³on dreich, þe romanis Ischit fra þare tentis, and be haisty discomfitoure slew ane grete nowmer of Inemyis. In þe samyn tyme the equis liand for spuleȝe of þe 15 romane landis war discomfist with lang chace ; bot þe slauchter was litill ; for posthumius consul discomfist þame be sindri hid buschementis, quhilkis war laid ⁴in ganand place ⁴be him afore,⁴ estir þat þai war skatterit & drivand away grete pray of gudis. So quhen þir equis war skatterit here and þare in sindri cum- 20 panyis, þai come be aventure on quintius returnand estir his victorie fra þe woundit consul. Thus quintius revengeit lustelie (214). baith þe hurting of þe consul & [þe] *slauchter of þe legate and vthir cumpanȝeons slane with him for þe tyme. mony slauchteris, feirß fechting, & discomfitouris occurrit in þir dayis on athir 25 side. It is difficil til ⁵afferme with sikkir nowmer in sa anciant p. 235. historie | how mony war slane or tane. Ancias valerius historiographoure sayis þare was slane of romanis [in þe hernik landis] j^m iiiij^c,⁶ of equis þat spuleȝete þe romane landis slane be posthumius consul iiiij^c,⁷ and of þe said equis war slane be quintius 30 iiiij^m ij^cxxx.⁸

¹ deficulte.

² The rest of this quair in B. (pp. 261-272) is supplied by the writer of Books IV. and V. : see

the Introduction.

⁴—⁴ before him.

⁶ ane thowsand foure hundreth.

⁷ foure hundreth.

⁸ foure thowsand twa hundreth and thretty.

³ liand.

⁵ to.

5 Of sindry prodiges and of grete mortalite amang þe romanis; how the hernikis & latynis cūmmand in supporte of romanis aganis þe wolchis and equis war slane in grete nowmer, And of þe pietuous lament of romanis to þare goddis. Ca. iij.¹

At the returnyng of quintius to rome, the vacance of lawis ceissit. In þis tyme the hevynnys apperit birnand with mony flammys²; mony vncouth & strange mervellis apperit, terribill to þe sicht of man, and be vane mynassing made þe pepill astonist.
 10 to remove þir terrouris war institute þe feries continewing thre dayis togidder. the tempillis war replete with men and women makand humyll supplicatioun to þare goddis to gif pece and perdoun to þare offence. Eftir þis þe hernikis & latynis war plesandlie rewardit be þe senate for þare faithfull and honest
 15 vassalege³ done in defence of romanis, and returnit hame. the thowsand armyt men, quhilikis come fra *Antium* in supporte of romanis, war send hame with dishonour, for þai come to late.
 (VI) At þe begynnyng of þe nixt ȝere the comitis war haldin in kalendis of sextile. Lucius Ebucius and paulus seruilius war
 20 made consulis. the tyme was richt sorrowfull, & þe ȝere richt pestilentius baith to burgh & land, to na leß mortalite of man þan beist. The pest raiß in þe ciete throw fere of vncouth Inemyis, Invading þe cunte with * *continuall* Iniuris; for þe (215).
 25 landwart pepill for fere þareof come to duell within þe ciete with þare bestial & gudis. And sa þe corruptioun and filth of sindri beistis, quhilikis war walkit and kepit togiddir in narrow housß⁴ and stretis within þe ciete during þe hete of somer, opprest baith þe citeȝanis & landwart pepill with vncouth and Insufferabill odoure. als þare frequent and contagius cumpanyis,
 30 Ilkane be commixtioun | of vthir, spred þe Infirmiteis Ilk day p. 236. mare and mare. quhil þe romanis war soroufull, and of skarß

¹ om.² flambis.³ wassilaige.⁴ housis.

pussance to sustene þir Calamyeis, come haistelie þe legatis of hernykis, schewing how þe wolchis and equis war enterit with two strang armyis in þare landis, and has waistit þare fronteris & bordouris with grete cruelteis; and war nocht þe thyn convencioun of senate to consell was ane sikkir testimonial þat þe ciete was in troubil, thair ansuer¹ had bene more displesand þan It was. for be þe samyn ansuere baith þe hernykis and latynis war commandit to defend þare landis be þare awne² pussance; for the romanis be suddane Ire of goddis war afflikkit and trublit with maist sorrowfull infirmiteis. Nochtþeles, gif þe pest slakit ane litill, þai suld glaidly send support (as þai usit afore) to þe³ confederate freyndis. Thir legatis, departing fra þe hernikis and latynis with sorouful message, brocht ane mare sorouful ansuere, þat hernikis and latynis sall sustene be þare awne² pussance þe batall aganis þe wolchis and equis, quhilk þai mycht evil sustene, howbeit þe hale romane power war concurrand with þame. The Inemyis maid na tary in þe hernik landis, bot with awfull buschementis come in þe romane landis, and waistit þe samyn but ony Iniure of batall or resistance. The Inemyis, seand na man armit nor vnarmit⁴ to resist þame, & þe feildis desert, but ony garnisoun or manuring of landwart pepill, come to þe third stane in þe gabyne way. Than was Ebucius, ane of þe consullis, dede in þe ciete, and his colleig seruilius sa wery þat he mycht skarsly draw his aynd. the maist parte of all þe faderis & princis of þe ciete war dede in þe pest, and þe men of armes sa halelie distroyit, þat þai war nocht onelie Insufficient to raiß sic ane armye aganes⁵ þare Inemyis as⁶ þe danger presentlie requirit, bot als mycht skarsly mak quiet stacions in þe ciete. The senaturis bure þe (216). charge of walking * be þameself, specially sic as war ȝoung and p. 237. vnbrokin with infirmiteis. Thir⁷ circui|cioun and charge þat was wont to be gevin to the edilis war gevin to small pepill. Siclike þe maieste of þe office consulare was gevin to þe pepill. (VII) every thingis war desert In þe ciete but ony hede or pussance. Nochtþeles fortoun and vthir goddis of þe ciete made sic

¹ thir ansueris, A.

² avin.

³ þair.

⁴ onarmit.

⁵ as, A.

⁶ & as, A.

⁷ þe.

defence, þat þai made þe myndis of Wolchis and equis gevin
 erare to spuleȝe than to vther conquesȝ or knichtlie vassalege;¹
 for noct̄ onelie þe saidis wolchis & equis war disparit to tak
 the ciete be assalt, bot als had na curage to cum toward þe
 5 wallis. for þe nobill palacis and towris musturit so aufully
 within þe ciete, þat þai drewe þe myndis of equis and wolchis
 fra all segeing, In sic wise þat aне huge clamoure raiȝ amang
 þare tentis, Ilkane saying to vthir: “to quhat effect remane we
 here, waistand oure tyme amang vile carious of men and beistis,
 10 sen we may Invaid þe hale landis of tusculanis, quhilkis are
 aне pepil full of richeȝ and gudis?” Incontinent þai rasit þare
 baneris, & with thortour passage come throw þe labicanis to þe
 tusculane montanis. thus was all þe preis and ordinance of
 þare batall turnit fra þe romanis alanelie on þe tusculanis.
 15 The hernikis and latynis, no thing knawing þe departing of
 wolchis and equis fra rome, war movit noct̄ onelie with com-
 miseratioun and piete, bot als havand grete schame in þare
 myndis þat þai noct̄ resistit þe commoun Inemyis Invading þe
 romane ciete, nor ȝit made þame supporte quhen þai war segeit;
 20 & þarefore þai come with þare awfull armyis to rome, & finding
 na Inemyis at þare cummyng þare,² þai followit on þe said
 Inemyis in all partis quhare þare fame & futesteppis schew; and
 finalie met þame descending fra þe tusculane montanis to þe
 Albane vail. þoȝt þis batail was fochtyn with equale power
 25 on all sidis, ȝit þe felicite of latynis and hernikis was na thing
 fortunate to þare confederate freyndis. of romanis was na leȝ
 nowmer perist in þe ciete be þis soroufull pest, þan was slane
 of þare confederate freyndis in þis foresaid batall. The tothir
 consul seruilius | was also deceissit, with mony of all þe nobill p. 238.
 30 men in þe ciete, sic as marcius vallerius, Titus Virginius,
 divinouris; seruilius sulpitius, principale³ of þe courte; And of
 small estatis deceissit innumerabill. sa fer sprang þe rage of
 þis * mortalite, that þe senate was disparit of ony mortale remeid, (217).
 & þarefore commandit þe cieteyanis to pas with þare wyiffis &
 35 barnis to þe templis to convert þare hartis with suffrage and

¹ wassilaige.² cuming to rome.³ principalis, both.

votis to þare goddis, þat þai mycht be humyll suplicationun purches þe peace of goddis. to þis effect, becaus Ilk persoun was trublit *with* propri infirmite, þe pepill war sa halelie brocht out be public auctorite, þat all þe tempillis in þe ciete war replete. The soroufull moderis fell grufelingis to þe ground, 5 sowpand þe templis *with* þare hare, pietuously¹ desiring þe goddis to fyng þare celestiall wraith, and put ane end to þis pest. (VIII) fra thens þe pepill began Ilk day pece & pece² to convaleß in þare bodyis fra all maledyis,³ owther becaus þe peace of goddis was þan purchest, or ellis becaus [þe] venemuß⁴ are & 10 wikkis seson⁵ war ourepast. And þarefore þai sett þare myndis for administracioun of public materis. ffinaly quhen certane Interregnis war past, publius Valerius publicola, on þe thrid⁶ day estir þat he was made regent, was chosin consul, & publius lucresius tricipitinus made his colleig before þe thrid Idis of 15 textile.

how þe Wolchis war discomfist and slane in grete nowmer be Veturius and Lucresius, Romane consullis⁷; and how grete dissension raiß betuix þe tribunis & consullis of rome. Ca. iiiij.⁸ 20

Now was the romane ciete nocht onelie pussant enewch⁹ to resist, bot als to persew þare Inemyis *with* batell; and þarefore þai promittit haisty support to hernikis, quhilk schew þe Inemyis cummyng in þare landis. sone estir, baith þe consullis went *with* twa armyis. veturius was send to Invaid þe wolchis, and 25 tricipitinus was ordanit to resist þe Incursions made be Inemyis p. 239. on þe freyndis of romane pepil; | and for þat cauß he past na farther than þe hernik landis. Veturius at his first batall discomfist and chasit the Wolchis; Bot lucresius, quhilk abade

¹ petuily. ³ malideis. ⁵ vekit sessoun. ⁷ capitannis. ⁹ ynewch.
² peiſ and peiſ. ⁴ venomuſ. ⁶ ferd. ⁸ om.

with þe hernikis, was dissauit be ane cum*pany of thevis. Thir (218). thevis musturit so to his sicht, þat he followit on þame, quhil he was cummyn abone þe montanis namyt prenestyne; and eftir [þat] he was discendit in þe law valis, þai waistit þe landis 5 prenestyne and gabyne with Importabil hereschippis; And descending fra þe gabine landis, þai waistit þe montanis tusculanis on þe samyn maner. Thus was ane huge terroure brocht to rome; nocht þat romanis war Insufficient to resist þe Invasioun of Inemyis, bot erare throw þe suddane effray. quintius fabius, 10 quhilk was left president in þe ciete, be garnisouns of ȝoung Vailjeant men, weil arrayit for euery aventuris, made all thing sikkir with gude tranquillite in þe ciete. for fere hereof the Inemyis chargit þame full of pray and gudis reft from sindri landis adiacent, & durst nocht approche to þe ciete. ffinalie, 15 quhen þai war returnyng hame, chargit (as said Is) with infinite pray of riches, scatterit in sindri buschement[is], for ay þe ferrer þai war departit fra rome þai tuke þe leſt respect to þare array, þai come vnwerlie¹ on lucresius armye, quhilk was baith aduertist of all þare Iornayis² & weill arrayit to gif þame batall. And þoþt 20 lucresius was in few nowmer In compare of þe huge nowmer & multitude of Inemyis, ȝit becaus þai war astonisit be þis suddane affray, he assaleȝeit³ þame feirslie, & broȝt þame to sa hie discomfitoure, þat he chasit þame quhil þai war inclusit within 25 ane vale but ony esy outpassage, quhare þe name of wolchis was nere vterlie distroyit, for of þame was slane x^m iiiij^o lxx, þat is to say, baith in þe batall and chaif⁴, and j^m ij^e 1.⁵ tane presonaris. xiiij standartis war won, as sum autouris writis. alwayis, howbeit sum thing be ekit abone þe Iuste mesure, þe slauchter was grete. The consull eftir þis victorie returnit with huge pray of 30 riches to his tentis. Sone eftir, þe consullis met togiddir with baith þare armyis. The Wolchis & equis eftir þir afflictions collecket þe residew of þare pussance togiddir. This was the thrid | batall þat was strikkin be romanis in þe said ȝere, & þe p. 240. victorie succedit⁶ ay vnder ane fortoun, for þare Inemyis war ay

¹ onwarly.² Iornayis.³ assailȝet.⁴ chase.⁵ ane thowsand twa hundred and fyfty.⁶ succeding, A.

vincust and þare tentis tane. (IX) thus war þe romanis brocht to þare old estate. Thir feliciteis succeding continually amang þe romanis rasit haistelie grete seditioun in þe ciete. In þis ȝere gneus tarentillus was tribune of pepil, quhilk, traisting þe tyme ganand to dres all materis pertenand to þe actioun tribuniciane 5

(219). (becaus þe consullis war nocht * present in þe ciete), began sindri dayis to accuse þe pride of faderis afore þe pepill, oft tymes Invaying aganis þe empire of consullis, and said þare auctorite was oure hie & nocht to be sufferit in ony fre ciete; for þoȝt þe names of consullis war nocht sa odius as þe names of kingis,¹ ȝit 10 þare empire & auctorite was mare cruell þan is ony empire of kingis;¹ for afore was bot ane² king regnand abone þe pepill, bot þan rang two with sa Inmoderate and infinite power, þat becaus þai haue opin renȝeis at þare awne plessour,³ þai exerce þe lawis to þe grete dredoure, punytioun, and fere alanelie of þe small pepill. herefore þat þis superflew licence of consullis shall nocht remane perpetualy, nor ȝit noysum to þe pepill, he wald promulgate ane law be quhilk five men shall be create to lymyt þe power of consullis, with sic ressoun⁴ þat quhatsumeuir law þe pepil ordanis for þare commodite, þe samyn shall be vsit alanelie 20 be þe consulis, and sa þe will and licence of consullis sal nocht be repute in tymes cummyng for ony lawis to þe pepill. Als sone as þis law was promulgate, becaus þe faderis dred to ressaue ony ȝoik⁵ of seruitude in absence of þe consullis, quintius fabius, president of þe ciete, convenit þe senate, and in þare presence 25 Invayit sa cruelly baith aganis þe law foresaid and aganis þe makare þareof, þat na leſ manassing and ferefull terrouris was done to þis tribune be fabius him allane þan baith þe consullis had bene present. for he allegeit þis tribune lay in wait quhill he saw his tyme, and þan Invadit þe commoun weill. forthir, 30 p. 241. gif þe goddis in þare wraith had gevin⁶ ony sik seditious ane man⁶ (as he was) during the tyme þat þe ciete was Invadit baith with pest and externe weris, thare ciete mycht nocht haue bene of pussance to haue resist⁷ þare Inemyis; for quhen þare ciete

^{1—1} om.

³ plesir.

⁵ ȝoik.

⁷ resistit.

² a.

⁴ ressone.

^{6—6} als sedicious a man.

was opprest with contagius infirmiteis, & þare consulis deceissit,
 he mycht haue bene ane sikkir gide to þe wolchis & equis to
 haue segeit þe ciete. als he mycht haue made lawis in þat tyme
 at his pleasure¹ to haue abrogate the dignite consular. “fforthir
 5 as þe mater presently occurrit,² quhat thing is³ vnlefull to him?
 for gif þe consullis attempt ony thing throw arrogance or cruelte
 aganis ony ane of þe cieteȝanis, Than sall this tribune sett ane
 day to þe consull to accuse him criminably afore þe pepill. Thus
 sal þe pepill be Iuge in þare awne * mater, Nochtwithstanding (220).
 10 þat þe offence Is committit aganis sum of þame self. Thir and
 mony sic thingis ar odius and Importabill be superflew power
 of þe auctorite tribuniciane, & nocht be ony power of dignite
 consulare; for þoȝt þe trubil þat þe tribunis rasit afore be
 15 Intendis to bring þe samyn trubil In quhilk It was afore. Nocht-
 withstanding I will nocht require him to desist fra þe purpois
 þat he has assailȝeit, Bot I desire ȝow, þe residewe of tribunis”
 (said fabius) “first to considerre þis auctorite tribuniciane was
 devisit to þe vniuersall proffitt and supporte of þe ciete, and
 20 nocht to þe vniuersale dammage þareof. ȝe ar create tribunis to
 be supportaris of pepill, and nocht to be Inemyis to þe faderis.
 It is richt miserabil to ws, and odius to ȝow, to suffer oure public
 weill to be Invadit. herefore we desire ȝow nocht to miniȝ ȝour
 richtis, bot erare to mynys ȝoure Invy, and to concur sa with
 25 ȝoure colleig, þat þis mater þat Is be him attempt be deferrit to
 þe cummyng of consulis; to þat fyne þat þe Wolchis and equis
 oure perpetual Inemyis Invade ws nocht þe erare with feirȝ
 batall, þat oure consullis ar perrist in þe pest þe ȝere afore past.”
 Than þe remanent tribunis began to dreȝ þis mater with tirintillus
 30 þare colleig, & continewit þe samyn to þe cummyng of consulis.
 Sone eftir, bayth þe consullis returnit to rome. (X) lucresius
 returnit with | huge pray of gudis and Infinite honour. his glore p. 242.
 was þe more ekit, þat eftir his returnyng þe hale pray of gudis
 conquest be him was left thre dais in þe place callit campus
 35 martius, to þat fyne þat þe samyn beand patent to þe sicht of

¹ pleseir.

² occurrit.

³ thingis salbe finaly.

⁴ reconsellit.

pepill, Ilk man mycht haue knawlege of his awne gudis & tak away þe samyn. The residew of þe saidis gudis, quhilkis had na Iuste awnaris, war sold and þe proffitt þareof confiskit¹ to þe public tressoure. Ane tryumphe was decernit be generall consent to lucresius; Nochtþeles It was deferrit certane dayis throw 5 persute þat þe tribune made twiching þe law tirintill. thus was þe [said] law postponit ane quhill afore þe senate and pepill, Bot at last þe tribune gaif place to þe maieste of consulis. Sone estir þe glore of tryumphe was gevin baith to seruilius and his army; for he tryumphit of þe wolchis and equis, and mony 10 (221). legiouns followit him in þe said tryumphe. * It was grantit to þe tothir consul to pas reiosand throw þe ciete but ony band of armyt men in his cumpany.

Off vncouth and terribil prodiges, and of þe Interpretioun of þame be divinouris. Of feirþ contentiouns betuix þe consullis and tribunis concernyng þe law Tirintill, and rasing of armyis aganis þe wolchis and Equis; how Ceso quintius for his persute aganis þe pepill in fauoure of þe faderis was banist, and all his faderis gudis confiscate 20 amang þe tribunys. Ca. v.

In the ȝere following the law tirintill was renewit be consent of þe hale collegis² of tribunis, & made publius volumnius and seruilius sulpicius þe new consulis astonist. In þis ȝere þe hevynnis apperit birnand; The erde trymblit with grete motioun; men trowis ane kow spak, howbeit na credit was gevin [þairto], In þe ȝere afore. amang vthir prodiges mony lumpis of flesch fel out of þe are In maner of [ane] schoure. þe maist parte þareof war consumyt haistely be ane huge nowmer of p. 243. fowlis. The residew of þis flesch lay mony | dayis estir skatterit 30

¹ confiscat.

² colleige.

in¹ þe erde, but ony corruptioun or hevy odoure following. for fere of þir prodiges, the solemayne preistis, namyt the two men, war commandit to serche þe werkis of Cibil,² be quhilkis was foundin³ þat þe ciete sall ressaue damage be convention of 5 vncouth pepil. ffor thir responsis þe romane pepil war commandit to ceiſt fra all seditioun, to þat fyne þat na slauchter nor feirſ persute war made in þe hie partis of þe ciete. The tribunis belevit nocht bot þir doingis alanelie wrocht to empesch þare lawis; throw quhilk apperit na litil contentioun to 10 follow. And þat þe samyn trubil sall continew ȝere in ȝere, was schewin be ambassiatouris⁴ of hernikis þat þe equis & wolchis (howbeit þare pussance was latelie brokin) war makand new provisioun of batall, & has send þe maist parte of þare power to *Antium*. Als þe remanent anciatis and Inhabitantis 15 þareof made public consellis* and conventiounis amang þame (222). self, And þarefore *antium* was þe begynnyng of all rebellioune made be equis & wolchis aganis þe romanis. Sone estir þat þir wourdis war said afore the senate, ane army was rasit with diligence, & the charge of batall ressauit be þe consullis, þat 20 ane to pas aganis þe wolchis and þis vthir aganis þe Equis. on þe contrarie parte was allegit be þe tribunis þat þir novellis concernyng þe weris of wolchis war nocht bot vane fabillis, and þe hernikis war nocht bot subornate be þare affectioun. Apperit þarefore nocht onelie þe romane liberte to be depreſſit⁵ with 25 force of violence, bot als be crafty slichtis. It was forther nocht to be traistit þat þe wolchis and equis, sen sa huge slauchter bene recentlie made on þame, may frelie move ony were aganis þe romanis. Apperis þarefore na weris without þe romanis serche new Inemyis. It is nocht to be traistit þat 30 be wolchis and equis ony perrell may occur. It is þarefore grete Iniure to hald þe toun of *Antium* suspect and Infamit, It beand þare faithful and trewe Colonie. Thus has þe consullis denuzcit batell wrangwisly on þe Innocent anciatis, & ledis þarefore batall nocht aganis þare Inemyis bot aganis | the p. 244 35 romane pepill, and chasis þame be manifest violence out of

¹ one. ² bukis of sibill. ³ funding. ⁴ ambassatouris. ⁵ depreſſit.

þare ciete, to þat syne þat þe consullis may revenge þe haterent
 þat þai bare aganis þe tribunis be proscription onelie of romane
 cietejanis. forthir þe consullis gevis þame to na vthir besineß
 bot to empesch þe law tirintill, & þarefore prayit þe pepill sen
 þai stude Peciably¹ in þare awne houſß² with þare beltit govnis, 5
 to suffir nowthir þame self to be eieckit fra possessioun of þe
 ciete, nor ȝit ressaue þe ȝoik³ of seruitude. And gif þare curage
 war nocth decaid⁴ þai sall want na supporte; for all þe
 tribunis sall stand hale at þare opinioun. Na dangere nor
 perrell was appering be fere of vncouth Inemyis, for þe goddis 10
 made sic purviance in þe ȝere afore, þat þe romane liberte was
 surelie defendit. (XI) þus was said be þe tribunis. On þe
 tothir side war þe consullis sitting afore þe tribunis, and gaddring
 the knichtis for ane armye. than come þe tribunis with
 grete cumpanyis to empesch þe rasing of þir armyis. belive ane 15
 certane of þame war sumound be þe consulis to haue experie-
 nce of⁵ þe mater. followit sone ane deforcement, for euerу⁶
 (223). man þat was* tane be þe seriand at command of þe consullis
 was put to liberte be þe tribunis. Thus mycht Iustice haue na
 place, bot Ilkman castand him to execute his purpos alanelie 20
 be way of dede. All wayis, in sa fer as þe tribunis empeschit
 þe rasing of þe army, In safer þe consullis empeschit þe law
 tirintill during al þe committiall dayis. Thus began þe debate
 more feirß; for quhen the tribunis had commandit the pepill
 to departe, the consullis commandit þame to tary. Attoure, 25
 þe wise and agit faderis wald nocth mell with þis besines; for
 apperandlie It was nocth done be prudent consell, bot erare be
 fuliche audacite. Than þe consullis tuke diligent keping þat
 þare maieste within þis trubill suld nocth be patent to Iniuris.
 The sammyn tyme was in þe ciete ane feirß and hardy childe, 30
 namyt Ceso quintius, discending of Illuster lynnage, wicht of
 body and stout of curage; and beside mony his excellent giftis
 of nature, he did mony notabil and valeȝeant dedis with his
 p. 245. handis, | And had sic eloquence that nane vthir was mare

¹ peaceably.

² housis.

³ ȝoik.

⁴ dekayit.

⁵ Here a portion of the text is wanting
in B.: see the Introduction.

reddy of wit and hand to ony purpois in Iugement. Quhen þis nobill Ceso was enterit in þe courte amang þe agit faderis, he stude vp apperandlie of mare preemynence þan was ony of þe laif; for he semyt as he war berand all þe dictaturies and 5 digniteis consulare in his onelie voce & pussance, and be þe samyn sustenit baith all þe haterent of tribunis and þe preis of pepill. be vassalege of þis Illuster campioun oft tymes war þe tribunis doung out of Iugement, and þe small pepill chasit & put fra þare purpois. quhat euer he was þat met him (gif 10 he war of þe opinioun of tribunis or þe ¹ pepill) he departit weill basit,² and depuleȝet of his clething. Apperit þus, gif sic thingis war sufferit be him, þe law made latelie be þe tribune suld fynyȝ & expire. Aulus Virginius, þe principall man of þe colleig of tribunis, seand þe residewe of þe tribunis astonist & violentie 15 strikkin be Ceso,³ assignit ane day to þe said Ceso to be accusit criminably⁴ afore the pepill; And ȝit þe feirȝ sprete of Ceso was mare inflammyt þan affrayit be þir doingis. for he sett him þan mare feirslie þan afore to resist þe said law; And nocht allanerly he rebutit oft tymes þe small pepill, bot als persewit 20 þe tribunis as It had bene *with* Iust batall. Than þe tribunis sufferit him frelie to do quhat him list, That Ilk Iniure beand accumulate abone vthir mycht nuris ane mater of mare Invyn and haterent afore þe pepill; And in þe mene tyme þai be*gan (224). to publis þe law Tirintill, erare to provoik þe audacite⁵ of Ceso 25 to ma displesouris þan in ony esperance⁶ to pecify þe samyn. mony thingis war done and said be ȝoung men vnprudentlie aganis Ceso; ȝit þe law was resistit. þan said Aulus Virginius in þis wise: “ȝe may consider weill (O quirites), ⁷ȝe may nocht haue ȝoure law establit⁷ sa lang as Ceso Is ȝoure citeȝane. To 30 quhat purpois speik I of ony law? Se ȝe nocht how Ceso resistis to ȝour liberte, and passis þe terquinis in pride? Abide quhil he be create dictator or consull, and þan sal he be fundin richt noysum to ȝoure ciete, sen he now beand bot ane private

¹ *B. begins again (p. 273);
the hand is No. 3.*

² baist.

³ seso.
⁴ -abilie.
⁵ audicite.

⁶ asperance.
⁷—⁷ þat ȝoure law sall
never be astablit.

p. 246. man regnis now *with* sa proude | empire abone *ȝow*." mony of
 þe small pepill affirmit þir wourdis of þe tribune, compleynng
 þame self oft tymes violentlie strikin and rebutit be þis Ceso,
 and þarefore persuadit þe tribune þe more feirly to persew his
 accioun. (XII) now was þe day of Iugement þat was sett to 5
 ceso¹ cummyn. þan apperit to þe pepill þat þare liberte de-
 pendit onlie on þe dampnatioun of Ceso. Thus was Ceso¹ con-
 strenit to seik supporte of freyndis. mony grete princis of þe
 ciete assistit to him, amang quham was titus quintius capitol-
 inus, his tendir Cousing, quhilk was thryis consul afore. This 10
 ti. quint[i]us began to reherß afore þe pepill mony vailȝeant &
 wourthy² dedis done be ceso,¹ Affirmand eik þat in al þe
 lynage and houß of quintius nor ȝit in þe romane ciete was nane
 of sa hie and provin vertewe as þe said Ceso ; allegiand als þat
 þe said ceso was first made man of armis vnder him, & in his 15
 presence oft tymes has fochtin vailȝeantlie³ in defence of his
 armye. Attoure, þe said Ceso rescourxit be his singular man-
 hede spurius furius fra extreme Ieoperdie and dangere of Inemyis.
 fforther nane was amang all þe romane cietejanis þat has decorit
 þe commoun weill *with* mare honest vassalege þan has þe said 20
 Ceso. amang sindri vtheris (quhilkis assistit to Ceso) was pub-
 lius lucresius, consul in þe ȝere afore, schynand ȝit *with* recent
 glore of his tryumphe and victorie abone the wolchis. This
 lucresius began to gif ane parte of his loving to ceso, rehersand
 þe batallis and valeȝeand dedis done be him baith in þare ex- 25
 peditiouns and in þe front of batall ; and sen þe said Ceso was
 dotate *with* sa mony excellent giftis of fortoun and nature, he
 exhortit⁴ þe pepill to suffir him to be erar cietejanis of þare
 (225). ciete þan of ony vthir townis or landis adiacent ; * for he sal
 nocht fail to be ane sikkir targe to quhatsumeuir ciete or pepil 30
 quhare he cummys. Attoure, his grete audacite & feirß
 sprete (for þe quhilk he Is maist hatit afore þe pepil) sal ay
 decreß be cummyn of age, and in place of his ferocite sal rise
 p. 247. Ilk day gude counsel mare and mare, as | thing maist desirit to

¹ seso.² wailȝeand & worthy.³ fouchtin wailȝeandlie.⁴ exharttit.

þame; and sen vertew¹ euery day raiß mare and mare in him, and all vice evanissing,² he prayit þe pepill to suffir þis Ceso to leif in þe ciete quhil he war temperate be age. amang sindri vthir þat laborit for this Ceso was lu. quintius Citynnatus³ 5 his fader, quhilk wald noct̄ repeþe⁴ the vailȝeant dedis done be his son, in aventure þe samyn suld haue renewit more Indignacion⁵ afore þe pepill þan afore, bot desirit alanelie mercy and perdoun to his erroris⁶ and his þoutheid, and so to saif his liffe for his saik, sen he neuer offendit to þame in worde nor 10 dede. Nochtþeles þe haterent and dredour þat þai consauit aganis þis Ceso war sa Ingravit⁶ in þare myndis, þat þai war repugnant to his desiris, sum parte for schame, and sum parte for fere. mony of þame complenit baith þame self and þare freyndis violentlie strikkin be him, and þarefore desirit him to 15 be Iugeit to þe deith. (XIII) abone þe commoun Invie of pepill ane cryme was allegeit aganis him richt noysum, quhilk marcus wolchius,⁷ sum tyme tribune of pepill, testifyit, allegaand quhen þe grete rage of pest began to ceiþ in þe ciete, he come be aventure on ane cumpayne of þouȝt vndantit men, amang 20 quhom was Ceso, liand (as apperit) vnder wait for reif or ellis slauchter of passingeris in ane place namyt subura; and þis Ceso Incontinent with his curst cumpayne sett on him & his eldest brother, quhilk was noct̄ wele convalescit eftir his maladie, and straik him sa violentlie þat he within few dayis 25 eftir deceissit.⁸ howbeit þis wolchius durst noct̄ persew þis accioun for fere of þe consullis, quhilk[is] favorit þe said Ceso, This wolchius made þe pepill sa commovit be þir wordis, þat Ceso eschapit narrolie vnslane be þare furie. Incontinent Virgineus commandit the seriand to apprehend Ceso, and put 30 him in Irmis. Nochtþeles þe faderis and grete princis of þe ciete refusit. þan said ti[tus] quintius in þis maner. “Ane man to quham þe day of Jugement is sett suld noct̄ be violet⁹ quhill he war convickit and condampnit.” Virgineus ansuerit, “I

¹ wertu.⁴ repute.⁷ mertius Bolchius.² wise avanasing.⁵ aroris.⁸ desesit.³ citinnatis.⁶ Ingrame (!).⁹ wiolait.

wil noch^t slay him, becaus he Is noch^t condamnit ; bot I will
 (226). *kepe him in [ane] festynens, quhil þe day be cummyn þat he
 p. 248. may be punyst & slane afore þe pepill, as he | þat slew ane
 romane citeȝane." the residew of tribunis (quhilkis war as-
 semblit in þis mater) temperat þare sentence be ane mydway, 5
 defending þat Ceso suld be put in Irnys, bot þat he sall fynd
 plegeis vnder sowmes of monye to bring him agane to Iugement
 afore the pepill at þe day assignit. ȝit It was in dout how mekill
 þe sowme was þat þe pepill wald haue plege for ; bot at last It
 was referrit to þe senate. þus was Ceso kepit quhil þe faderis¹ 10
 war consultit. the faderis¹ commandit þat ane plege sal be
 gevin to þe tribunis to entir him at þe day assignit vnder pane of
 iij^m brasin pennyis ; [and] finalie þai ordanit x plegis to be takin
 for þis sovme. Ceso was þe first man þat euer gaif plegeis for
 ony offence in rome. Als sone as Ceso was deliuerit in þis 15
 maner fra Iugement of tribunis, he departit be avise of þe con-
 sullis in exile amang þe tuschis. quhen þe day of Iugement was
 cummyn, he was accusit Nocȝtwitȝstanding his absence ; and
 þoȝt his freyndis schew in Iugement þat he was frelie departit
 of his awne will in exile, ȝit þare excusacioun na thing avalit ; 20
 for virginius and þe remanent tribunis tuke þis money afore
 plegit sa halely² þat þai but ony mercy apprisit³ and sauld all
 þe gudis pertenand to lu[tius] quintius Citinnatus, fader to
 Ceso, throw quhilk þe said lu[tius] quintius was for pouerte
 constrainit⁴ to duell certane tyme beȝound tyber as ane banist 25
 man.

¹ fatherris.

² haistelie.

³ apricit.

⁴ proverte costranit (!).

how þe faderis postponit þe law tirintil be mony (227).

slichtis; how Appius herdonius¹ sabyne, with grete nowmer of servandis tuke þe capitoll; how mamilius, prince of latynis, come with ane army in 5 supporte of romanis; how herdonius¹ was slane with all his complicis, and þe capitoll rescoursit.

Ca. vj.²

(XIV) The Iugement & proceß of þir tribuniciane lawis held þe ciete in sic continuall exercicioun, þat na extern weris followit 10 in þis ȝere. the tribunis havand victorie | in þis maner, and p. 249. seand the faderis³ abasit be proscriptioun of Ceso, traistit þe tyme expedient to stabil eselie þe law tirintill; for þe maist parte of þe agit faderis has left (as apperit) þe possessioun of public landis. on þe tothir side, þe ȝoung faderis,⁴ sic as war 15 companȝeouns to Ceso, nowthir parit nor ȝit mynst þare curage. All wayis It came to þe grete proffitt of þe ciete, þat þai temperate⁴ in sum maner þe preis of þare violence. treuth Is, in þe begynnyng of þis ȝere, quhen þe law suld haue bene first pecifyit Eftir þe proscriptioun of Ceso, the ȝoung faderis⁵ war 20 armit with grete Oistis aganis þe tribunis, and assailȝit þame in sic wise þat nane of þe said tribunis mycht do ony thing þat was owther wourthy to haue grete glore, Or ȝit grete haterent afore þe pepil. the pepill complenit, sayand ane thowsand Cesois war rising⁶ in þe place of ane; ȝit mony dayis eftir (sa lang as na 25 mentioun was made of þe said law) na thing was mare soft nor plesand to þe pepill þan war þe faderis⁷; for þai baith salust þe pepill tendirly and tretit þame with grete humanite in þare lugeing, And noct onelie sufferit þe tribunis to pas to þe merket, bot als to hald baith þare public & private consultatiouns quhare 30 þai plesit but ony Interruption, and nowther schew þame cruel

¹ ardonius.

³ faderis.

⁵ fatherris.

⁷ fatheris.

² liij.

⁴ temperrit.

⁶ giffin.

nor malicius to ony of þe said tribunis, bot war favoraris of þe pepill sa lang as þai wald nocht speik ony thing concernyng þe said law. And nocht alanelie did þe tribunis all vthir besines (228). but ony trubill, bot als war continewit in þare officis * to þe nixt ȝere. The faderis¹ did nouthir Iniuris to the tribunis in 5 worde nor dede, & be swete behavingis² softit þe myndis of þe pepill. be þir and siclike slichtis þe law tirintill was postponit all þe ȝere following. (XV) In þe nixt ȝere þe ciete was in more tranquillite, and þan Cayus appius & pub[lius] valerius war made consullis. Na Nouellis occurrit in þis ȝere, þoþt þe pepill tuke 10 grete sollicitude & cure to pecifye þe said law. ȝit þe more þat þe ȝoung faderis humyllit þame to þe pepill, þe more feirslie raiß þe p. 250. tribunis aganis þame, to þat fyne þat be þare | criminal accusatioun þai suld mak þe said faderis þe more suspect to þe pepil; and said ane new conspiratioun was rissin, and Ceso was ressett 15 within þe ciete, and daly consellis³ haldin baith to slay þe tribunis and to distroy þe pepil, and charge gevin to þe ȝoung faderis be avise⁴ of þe agit faderis to abrogate and expell þe auctorite tribuniciane out of þe ciete, þat þe ciete may be brocht to þe samyn⁵ estate and gouernance as It was afore þe secessioun⁶ of 20 [þe] pepill to þe sacrate montane. and þoþt þe romanis dred þe batell of Wolchis and equis ȝerelie appering aganis þame with awful mannassing,⁶ ȝit þare was ane⁷ vthir new damage⁸ aprocheand, howbeit It was nocht belevit; for appius herdonius⁹ sabyne, wit¹⁰ ane cumpany of iiiij^m v^c servandis and 25 banist men, tuke þe Capitoll vnder nycht, and slew euery persouns fundin in þe samyn, specially sic men as wald nocht tak wappynns nor assist to his opinioun. mony pepil during þis effray ran sa effrayitlie to þe merkett, þat þe noyiß and tumult þareof raiß fra ane to other, Exhorting¹⁰ þe pepil to harnes, saying 30 þe Inemyis war in þe ciete. þe consulis durst nowthir arme þe pepill for defence of þe ciete, Nor ȝit durst leif thame vnarmyt; for þai knew nocht quhiddir¹¹ þis trubil was cummyn be externe

¹ faderis.⁴ awise, *B.*; avisit, *A.*⁷ a.¹⁰ exhorting.² havyngis.⁵ cesessioun.⁸ dampnage.¹¹ quheþer.³ dayly counsalis.⁶ minassing.⁹ ardonius.

and vncouth weris or be seditioun Intestyne, nor ȝit wist quhiddir¹ þare ciete was Invadit be haterent of þare awne pepill or dissate of servandis. at last þai made þame to meiȝ þis effray, bot þe troubil spred ay more and more be þare lauboure ;

5 for þe multitude of pepill was strikkin with sic dredoure þat It mycht noct be gouernit be ony empire. ȝit finalie þe pepill tuke þare wappynys, to þat fyne þat how beit þai knew noct þe sikkir nowmer of Inemyis, þai mycht haue sufficient garnisoun² of armit men aganis quhatsumeuir perrell occurring. The * con- (229).

10 sulis richt wery, and noct knawing quhat Inemyis þir war þan present in þe ciete, nor ȝit in quhat nowmer [þai var], past þe residew of þe nycht makand watching and garnisoun of armyt men in all partis ganand for þe sammyn. als sone as licht apperit, baith þe batall and capitane þareof war patent ; for | þan herdonius³ cryit p. 251.

15 furth of þe capitoll, calland þe servandis to þare liberte, and confessit him self to haue tane þe actioun of euery miserabill creature, þat all þe persouns quhilkis ar wranguisly exilit, may be recounself agane to þe ciete, and þe servandis on þe samyn maner brocht to þare liberte ; bot he wald þe sammyn war done

20 erare frelie be romanis þan ony vthir wayis. and gif he couth⁴ purches noct but repulȝ in þir desiris, he suld move þe wolchis and equis aganis þame, and assailȝe þame with extreme Ieoperdie. (XVI) the trubill of þis damage⁵ appering was ripelie considerit be þe faderis and consulis. forthir, abone thir thingis quhilkis

25 occurrit presentlie, þai dred þat þir Inemyis war cummyn in þe ciete be industrie of veanis & sabinis ; for sen sa grete nowmer of Inemyis war þan present in þe ciete, þai dred þat þe sabinis & hethruschis suld cum haistelie with mony armit legiouns, & in þe menetyme þe wolchis and equis (quhilkis bene þare perpetuale

30 Inemyis) suld cum noct as afore to waist þare marchis and fronteris, bot erare to tak þe ciete, quhilk for þe ta half Is nere tane ellis. mony and sindri terrouris raiȝ in þis mater. amang vtheris apperit maist þe terroure of servandis, Ilk man dredand to haue Inemye within his houȝs, to quham he mycht noct surelie

35 gif creditt ; and als he durst noct haue him in defiance, In

¹ quheþer. ² gernesene. ³ hardonius. ⁴ culd. ⁵ dampnage.

aventure he war mare noysum þan afore. apperit þis present
troubill mycht noct̄t be weill mesit be concorde. throw thir
and mony vthir dampnagis, Ilkane rising abone vthir, nowthir
was þe tribunys dred, nor þe pepill. Thir first dampnagis,¹ 5
rising ay mare and mare be tollerance of vthir evillis, apperit
nocht to be mesit bot alanerlie be externe weris; ȝit abone þir
displexeris Raiȝ ane vthir trubil mare Importabil and soroufull
to þe ciete. sic furie was in þe tribunis, þat þai belevit nocht ony
batall approcheand be Inemyis, bot alanerlie þe samyn to be
ane vane ymaginacioun of faderis, feneȝeand be þare dissate þat 10
Inemyis war enterit in þe capitoll, to draw away þe myndis of
(230). * pepill fra persute of þe law foresaid. fforthir gif þe patricianis²
with þare clientis and freyndis had fundis þis law afore rehersit
anis establit,³ and sene þat all þe trubil and lauboure þat þai
p. 252. made to empesche þe said law was in vane, þai suld departe 15
haistely with leȝt noysiȝ þan þai come. for þir ressouns þe
tribunis tuke counsell to estabill þe said law, & to draw þe pepill
fra harnes. quhil sic thingis war done be þe tribunis, þe con-
sallis convenit þe senate, for þai war mare astonist be þe tribunis
þan be ony affray þat come in þe nycht be vncouth Inemyis. 20
(XVII) als sone as It was schewin þat þe men of armes had left
þare wappynys and stacionis, publius valerius consul left his
colleig ca[yus] claudius to Intertenye⁴ þe senate, and departit
haistelie to þe tempillis quhare þe tribunis war, and said in þis
wise: "O tribunis, quhat besines is þis þat ȝe Intend? ar ȝe 25
sett to distroye the commoun weil be mocioun of publius her-
donius? Is he sa ganand to corrupt ȝow, þat has skarȝ⁵ power
to corrupt þe servandis? Is it plesand to ȝow to pronounce
lawis, and to paȝt fra ȝoure wappynnis now quhen ȝoure Inemyis
ar abone ȝoure hedis?" Eftir this he turnit his Orisoun fra þe 30
tribunis to þe pepil, and said: "O quirites, gif ȝe haue na cure
of ȝowr self nor of ȝoure ciete, at leist quhy ar ȝe noct̄t commovit
þat ȝoure goddis ar vincust and tane prisoneris be ȝoure Inemyis?
The richt hie and pussant Iupiter,⁶ þe souerane lady quene Iuno,

¹ dampnagis.² pitritianis.³ estabillit.⁴ Intertene.⁵ skers.⁶ Iubiter.

mynerva, and þe remanent goddis and goddefß¹ ar segeit. The tentis & garnisons of servandis occupijs ȝoure public houfß² ar þir signis of ane sickir ciete, quhen sa mony Inemyis ar noct allanerlie within ȝoure wallis, bot als garnist in ȝour touris abone 5 ȝoure merket and courtis? The commites ar haldin in þe merket, and þe senate sittis in þe courte reddy to gif sentence, as þe ciete war in pece.³ Ane vthir parte of [þe] pepill gevis⁴ þare consultacioun as þai wald support ws be þare suffragis and votis. war It noct bettir þat all þe power within þe ciete, þat is 10 to say, þe faderis, þe pepill, þe consulis, þe tribunis, þe goddis and men, ruschit armit atanis to þe capitoll for supporte þareof, to deliuer and pacifye⁵ þe Illuster houfß of Iupiter? O fader Romulus, gif to ws thy posterite, þe samyn curage and sprete, be quhilk þow sum tyme recoverite this houfß of goddis, quhen It 15 was tane with gold be sabynis. command ws to enter þe samyn⁶ | way as thow sum tyme enterit with * þi armye. I, lucretius p. 253. consul, sall be þe first sal follow þi futesteppis, sa fer as mortall (231). man may." þe last parte of his orisoun was þat he wald tak his wappynnys⁶ and call þe romanis to harness; and gif ony persoun 20 empeschis his purpoß, quhatsumeuir he be, he has nowthir sicht to þe maieste of þe consulis nor ȝit to power of tribunys, and is vnmyndfull of þe sacrate lawis. quhat euir he be þat dois þus, he sall be repute as Inemye of þe ciete. "quhy commandis nocth þe tribunis wappynnys⁷ to be rasit aganis herdonius þare 25 Inemye? beleif nocth bot I dar do þe samyn⁸ displesoure⁸ to þe tribunis þat þe prince of my houfß sum tyme did to the terquynis?" Apperit þus na thing bot extreme violence on athir side, and þe sediciooun of romanis to be in derisioun of Inemyis. Thus⁹ mycht nowthir þe law tyrintill be establit, Nor ȝit mycht 30 þe consuli pas to defend þe capitoll, quhil at last þe nycht put end to þare debate. the tribunis gaif place to the nycht for fere of þe consulis. Als sone as þe authouris of þis sediciooun war tane away, the faderis satt doun in maner of ane round cirkill,

¹ godessis.⁴ giffis.⁷ wappingis.² houfßis (*sic*).⁵ specify (!).⁸ displesar.³ pace.⁶ wappingis.⁹ þis.

and began to aduertiſſ þe pepill in quhat extreme dangere þai
haue brocht þare public weill; ffor þe trubil raiſſ nocht throw þe
contentioun þat was þan betuix þe faderis and pepill, bot erare
becaus þe faderis, the pepill, þe capitoll, þe tempill of goddis,
and baith þare public and private houſſ¹ war tressonably randerit 5
in þare Inemyis handis. quhil sic thingis war done in þe merket
to meiſſ all seditioun, The consullis past to þe portis and wallis
of þe ciete to resist þe veanis and sabinis, gif ony of þame wald
mufe² troubil for þe tyme. (XVIII) The samyn tyme come
messingeris to³ þe toun of tusculum, schawin[g] how þe capitoll 10
was tane and grete troubil rising in þe ciete. Than was lu[tiuſ]
manilius dictator abone þe tusculanis, quhilk herand þir novellis
assemblit his pepill to ane counsell, and quhen he had brocht
p. 254. afore þame thir messingeris, he | said It was nocht ganand to
tary quhil þe romane legatis war send fra rome to seik supporte 15
for the troubill occurring, sen baith þe perrell and dangere fore-
said, þare sociall goddis, þare faithfull alliance desiris þe samyn.
“Attoure, þe goddis sall neuir gif to ws in tymes cummyng sa
gude occasioun to conquer⁴ perpetuale amyte and kyndenes of
sa pussant and nere ciete to ws, as we may haue at þis tyme.” 20

(232). Thus war⁵ It decernit * to send haisty support to [þe] romanis.
Incontinent all þe young and lusty men of þe ciete went to
harnes, and on þe nixt morow come arelie to rome. At þare
first cummyng þe romanis belevit þame to be wolchis and equis,
cumand to tak þe ciete. fra þe vane terroure was put away, þai 25
enterit with grete buschementis in þe ciete, & come to þe merket,
quhare publius valerius was arrayand his Oistis, Eſtir þat he
had left his college to defend þe portis. The auctorite of
valerius movit gretumlie þe pepill; for he promittit, als sone as
þe capitoll was recoverit and þe ciete pecifyit,⁶ he suld nocht 30
empesche þe counsell of pepill, sa þai wald vnderstand quhat
hid tressoun and dissate was lurkand be tribunis in þis law þat
þai wald stabil. for It was native to him, as to his predeces-
souris, to persew þe pepill with all humanite & kyndenes

¹ houſſis.

² move.

³ fra, both.

⁴ con[qu]yre.

⁵ þis was.

⁶ pacifyit.

he mycht. The pepill, notwithstanding þe reclamacioun of tribunis, followit valerius as þare capitane to þe capitoll, & in þe law discence þareof rasit þare ensenȝeis¹ with gude array, & with þame² followit þe tusculanis. than contendit þe romanis 5 and þare confederate freyndis, quhilk of þame mycht conqueȝt maist honoure, Or do maist wourthely þare devore. Athir of þir capitanis exhortit þare knichtis feirly to batell. Than þare Inemyis began to be effrayit, havand þare confidence in na thing sa mekill as in þe strenthis of þe capitol. quhil þe Inemyis war 10 in þis effray, baith þe romanis and þare confederate freyndis come fordwart³ with ensenȝeis¹ and baneris. Now war þai enterit in the porchis of þe tempil, quhare pub[lius] valerius, fechtand in þe first bront amang þe preis of Inemyis, was | slane. p. 255.
 Als sone as Claudius, the tothir Consul, saw him fall he commandit his body to be coverit, & Incontinent lap in þe samyn place quhare he fell. the Ire and haterent of [þe] romanis and þare confederate freyndis, ruscheand feirslie in þe capitoll, was sa boldin and vehement þat þai gatt victorie or euir þai wist þat þare capitane was slane. mony of þe banist men war slane, & 15 20 defoulit þe tempile with þare blude; mony war tane quyk, and herdonius slane. Thus was þe capitoll recouerit. The residew of þame, quhilk war found in the capitoll, but ony defference (quhidder þai wer fremen or servandis) war slane.

¹ ansenȝeis.² schame (!).³ forthuart.

(233). Of the orisoun made be lu[tius] q[uintius] citumatus¹ aganis þe tribunis; of grete contenciou[n] betuix him and þe pepil for þe law tirintill; how þe tribunis war continewit in þare office contrare þe decree of [þe] senate, and how lu[tius] quintius 5 estir he was made consul renuncit his office.

Ca. vij.²

Grete thankis war gevin to þe tusculanis, & sone estir þe capitoll was purgit be þe sacrifice lustrale. It is said þat Ilk man went to Valerius houß, and left ane quadrent in 10 It, to cauß him be þe more richely buryit. (XIX) Als sone as þe ciete was brocht in quiet³ in þis maner, the tribunis requirit þe faderis to kepe þe promiss⁴ made to þame be valerius consul; and siclike requirit Claudiu[n] to deliuer þe saul of his colleig fra all falset, and to suffir þame to stabil þe law. 15 The consull denyit to do ony thing concernyng þe said law, quhil he had surrogate⁵ ane colleig in þe place of Valerius þat was deceissit. Thir contentiouns frustrate the tribunis to þe commitis and new election of consullis. In þe moneth of december nixt following, be grete lauboure and menys of þe 20 faderis, lu[tius] quintius Citumatus, fader to þe valeȝeant Ceso afore banist, was create consul In þe place of Valerius. Als sone as he began to vse his office, the pepill was richt effrayit, beleiving p. 256. him | armit with grete haterent aganis þame.; and seand him noȝt onelie richt pussant be favoure of þe faderis, bot als strang 25 baith throw his awne pussance & his barnis, for he had thre sonnys, wise & vallȝeand men, of na leß curage and manhede þan was Ceso his other son afore baȝnyst, baith reddy of wit and hand to gif þare consultacioun in euery mater quhare ony grete chargis occurrit. Als sone as quintius was made consull, he 30 sat doun in Iugement, and was richt vehement in his conciou[n],

¹ citimatus.

² [l]v.

³ quyete.

⁴ promeis.

⁵ suregat.

na les to dant þe pepil þan to chaistise¹ þe senate, saying throw
 þare perpetuale sleuth þe* tribunis of pepil rang with oure lang (234).
 auctorite in damage of þe common weil, reiosing in þare crymes
 & flurissing youngis. Apperit þus all vertew, all constance, & al
 5 honest vassalege of ȝoung lusty men banist & fled with Ceso his
 son out of þe ciete, And in þare placis left ane cumpany of
 clatterand tribunis, seditious lymmaris, sawaris of discorde, and
 regnand with mare odius empire abone þe pepill þan did euer
 þe kingis. “has Aulus Virginius tribune (howbeit he was nocht
 10 in þe capitoll with þe remanent conspiratouris) deseruit ony
 leſſ punyſſement þan herdonius? for quhay wil regarde his
 mater treulie sall fynd þat he deseruit mekil mare, for her-
 donius did na other thing bot denuncit batell as ȝoure con-
 fess Inemye, þat ȝe mycht tak ȝoure armouȝt and wapynnys.
 15 Be contrare, Virginius gart ȝow vnderstand na batell nor
 danger was occurring, & tuke fra ȝow baith ȝoure armoure
 and wapynnys.² To bring ȝow nakit and wapinles in ȝoure
 Inemyis handis. ffordeſ vnder [þe] reuerence of Claudius
 & Valerius, now deceiſſit,³ I say ȝe war enterit with
 20 torius enſenȝeis in þe capitoll, or euir ȝoure Inemyis war
 doung fra þe merket. Is it nocht ſchame to þe goddis and
 men, þat Inemyis beand baith in þe toure and Capitoll of
 rome, and herdonius, þe capitane of banist men, duelling
 25 prouidie in þe templi of Jupiter, polluviȝ⁴ and defouling
 euery thing in It? þat þe tusculanis ſuld raiſ þare wap-
 pynnys and come ſoner þan þe romanis to þe defence of
 rome? It is in dout quhid[der]⁵ the capitoll was recoverit p. 257.
 more be lu. manilius, prince of tusculanis, or be claudius or
 Valerius consulis. [And] how beit we mycht nocht ſupport
 30 þe latynis afore, quhen þai war Invadit be Inemyis, ȝit þe
 latynis of þare only benevolence ſa plesandlie come to oure
 ſupporte, þat we had bene aluterly diſtroyit gif þai had
 nocht cummyn. Attoure, þe ſupple þat þe tribunis makis to
 þe pepil Is to Ieoperd and expone þame nakit but wapynnys⁶

¹ chaify (I).

² wappingis.

³ diſſeſſit.

⁴ polloving.

⁵ quheþar.

⁶ vappingis.

to be slane *with* þare Inemyis. suthlie þare Is na man sa
vile in þis ciete, havand his houß segeit *with* men of armes,
bot þe wald haue made him supporte. Is þan Iubiter, þe
maist excellent and mychty god, quhen he was segeit with
banist men and *servandis*, [*un*]wourthy to tak ony supporte 5
of man? fforthir, þir tribunis desiris þame to be haldin in
reuerence¹ as haly creaturis, howbeit þe goddis ar *nächt*
(235). haldin in halynes nor *venera**cioun afore þame." And þan
turnand his orisoun to þe senatouris he said: "þe say þe
wil promitte in þis ȝere ane law in plane oppressioun to þe 10
law of goddis and men. Soithlie þe public weill was evil
gouernit þat day þat I was create consul; and gif ȝe publis
þe said law, It sall be wer gouernit þan It was quhen pub-
lius valerius consul deceissit. Vnderstand herefore, O quirites,²
It is now þe mynde of me and my colleig, abone ony vthir 15
besines, to pas *with* legiouns of armit men aganis þe wol-
chis & equis. It is vncertane to knaw be quhat fortoun
It is þat we haue þe goddis mare propiciant to ws quhen
we ar fechtand þan quhen we ar pecifyit. Bettir Is to ws
to conjecture in oure myndis quhat damage mycht haue 20
followit in þe ciete, gif oure Inemyis had knawin the capi-
toll takin be *servandis* and banist men, þan to haue experi-
ence þareof in dede." (XX) This orisoun of þe consul movit
þe pepill. Than þe faderis war erekit in sic esperance, þat
þai belevit þe commoun weill restorit. Claudius þe toþir 25
consul, ane man mare pussant in curage þan in dede, suf-
ferit eselie quintius his colleig to bere þe charge of þis
difficil besines, and made himself appere doing all vthir
chargis pertenyng to þe office consulare. þan the tribunis
began to mak þe wourdis of þe consul as þai had bene in 30
vane, and Inquirit be quhat maner þai mycht lede ony army,
sen na man wald gif þare names nor ȝit suffir þe samyn to
p. 258. be gevin in writh. þan said | quintius: "It is *nächt* neces-
sare to ws to haue þare names in writh; for þe samyn tyme
þat publius Valerius gaif wapynnys to þe pepilli to recovir 35

¹ reuerentlie.² quyreteis.

þe capitoll, all þe pepill war sworne vnder ane mynde to
 assembil togiddir *with* armoure and wappynys at þe con-
 sullis command; and siclike war all sworne *nocht* to departe
 but his licence and conditt. and þarefore we command þat
 5 euery ane of ȝow (quhilkis wer sworne on þis wise to þe
 consul) to convene þe nixt morow at þe loch¹ of regill."
 þan the tribunis² sett þame be galenȝeis³ to exoner & dis-
 charge þe pepill of þe aith be þame made, and allegit þat
 Valerius was bot ane private man in þe tyme þat þis aith
 10 was maid, and be þat ressoun þai⁴ aucht *nocht* be astrikit
 to him. bot þir ressouns *nocht* avalit, for þe pepil war
*nocht*⁵ sa negligent in þai dayis (as þai ar * now) to man- (236).
 swere þare goddis, or to fals þare worde. And als þai wald
nocht þan Interpret þare aithis, nor ȝit draw þe law con-
 15 forme to þare maneris, bot erare conforme þare maneris and
 leving to þe lawis. The tribunis, seand þare laubouris frus-
 trate, began to lauboure for þe rasing of þe armye, þe more
 ferventlie þat þe divinouris (as þe fame was) war commandit
 to hallow & consecrate þe place foresaid, þat all thingis
 20 mycht be dressin⁶ in grete felicite to⁷ þe pepill; ffor Ilk
 thing þat was afore done in rome be violence of tribunis
 mycht þan be abrogate and revocate be public commites.
 Attoȝt, the tribunis knewe þe pepill eftir þare conventioun
 to þe louch of regill wald obey euery chargis commandit be
 25 þe consull; and eftir þare conventioun to þe said louch all
 þe appellatioun war fryvole, becaus þe auctorite tribuniciane
 Is of na valoure nor effect bot alanerly within þe ciete, or
 ellis vtouth þe ciete j^m paſſ. Thus fra þe tribunis war
 cummyn to þe said loch, þai behuvit to obey þe empire of
 30 consullis. þoȝt þir and mony vthir thingis made the tribunis
 effrayit, ȝit ane thing was þat effrayit þame mare, becaus þai
 herd quintius oft tymes say he wald mak na commites for
 new electiouns of consullis, for þe ciete was *nocht* sa wery
 þat It mycht be dantit *with* sic remedis as It was wont to

¹ louch.² consullis, *both*.³ galenȝeiris.⁴ he, *both*.⁵ noucht.⁶ dressit.⁷ fyletite wich (!).

be. Necessare was þarefore to create ane dictator to governe
 þe commoun weil, to þat fyne gif ony persoun wald attempt
 p. 259. ony troubil he | soll vndirstand, fra þe dictator Is na pro-
 vocatioun. (XXI) the senate at þis tyme was convenit in
 þe capitoll, & to þame come haistely the tribunis *with* mony 5
 effrayit cumpanyis of pepill, *with* grete noysiſ and clamoure,
 sum tyme makand Intercessioun to consullis, & sum tyme
 to þe faderis, to create na dictator. ȝit þe consul wald nocht
 change his purpois, quhil þe tribunis war sworne to be sub-
 mittit to þe auctorite of þe faderis. Als sone as þir desiris 10
 of þe tribunis war rehersit afore þe pepill, It was concludit
 be avise of þe senate, þat nowthir soll þe tribunys pronounce
 þe law tirintil for þis ȝere, nor ȝit soll þe consullis within
 þe samyn leid ony armye vtouth þe ciete. It was decernit
 be þe senate, þe continuation of consullis and tribunis in 15
 þare office for þat ȝere was aganis þe commoun weil. þe
 consullis obeyit þe constitucioun of senate, bot þe tribunis
 (237). notwithstanding ony reclamatioun of con*sullis war continewit
 in þare office. Than þe faderis (þat þai suld nocht gif place
 to þe pepill) continuit lu[tius] quintius in þe consulate. There 20
 was na actioun sa vehement in all þis ȝere as þe continu-
 atioun of quintius in his office. “I mervel nocht, O faderis
 conscripti” (saide quintius) “nocht ȝoure authorite be vane
 and of litil estimatioun afore þe pepill. ȝe extoll and mag-
 nifis þe pepill the more þat þai ar rebelland and brekis 25
 ȝoure constitutiouns. Apperis ȝe desire ȝoure decree wil-
 fully brokin, þat na power suld be to ȝow abone þe pepil,
 as It war lefull he þat mycht maist vsurpe be violence &
 force suld be maist authorist. It is mare facil to ony pepill
 to brek þare awne constitutiouns and lawis than to brek þe 30
 lawis of vthir pepill. ȝe, faderis conscripti, ¹ar like ane vane
 cumpany of pepill Inconsultit and fuliche. ȝe, þat suld be
 ane myrroure of doctrine to vthir, ȝe decline forthir fra gude
 dedis be evil exemplil of vtheris þan vtheris ar rasit be

¹ A new hand (No. 10) begins in B. (p. 289); the orthography is much the same as in A.

þour Imitatioun to do gude. As for my self I wil nowthir follow þe tribunis in þare constitutionis, Nor ȝit wil I suffir my self to be maid consul aganis þe decree of senate. herefore I exhorte þe, ca. claudius, to refrene þe romane pepill fra þis besines þai seik on me. for I am to ressaue þe consulate in sic wise þat my honoure sal na wayis be empeschit be the, bot erare þat | my glore, becaus I refusit p. 260. honoure, soll be þe more ekit; and al Invie þat mycht haue followit be continuation of me in þe office soll be þe more 10 Iniuste." þan was It constitute þat na man gif þare votis to create lu[cius] quintius consul; and gif ony votis war gevin, þe samyn to haue nane¹ effect.

how the tribunis continewit in þare contentioun, (238).

15 persewing þe law terintill; how þe equis war discomfist be q[uintius] fabius, & brocht to grete miserie; and of þe contentioun of tribunis aganis þe consulis and faderis. Ca. viij.²

(XXII) At the nixt commites³ quintus fabius and lu[cius] Cornelius war made consullis. the pepill was nowmerit in þis 20 ȝere, and þe sacrifice lustrale was maid in þe samyn ȝere, becaus þe capitoll was tane and þe consull slane. At þe begynnyng of þis nixt ȝere raiß sindri trublis, for baith þe tribunis movit þe pepill to persew þe law tirintill, and þe messengeris of hernikis & latynis schew ane maist dangerus battell approcheing be þe 25 wolchis and equis. the romanis war richt astonist, & dred, becaus mony legiouns of wolchis war liand at Antium, þat It suld þarefore be randerit to Inemyis. the consulis purchest nocht but grete difficulte at þe tribunis to raiß ane army. þan was It commandit be þe senate þat fabius soll pas with sindri 30 legiouns to Antium, and Cornelius his colleig soll remane at

¹ na.

² lvj.

³ Comices.

hame for defence of þe ciete, & to resist þe equis fra direption of þe cunte as þai war accustumate. the hernikis and latinis be tenoure of þare alliance war commandit to supporte fabius *with* armitt knichtis. the thrid parte of þis batall was rasit of romane cietejanis, and þe twa parte þareof was of þare confederate 5 freyndis. Alssone as þe hernikis & latinis war cumming to þe day assignit, þe consul sat doun with his tentis beþond porte Capene, & quhen he had purgit þame be [þe] sacrifice lustrale, he past to Antium and campit him nocth fer fra [þe] sicht of Inemyis. the wolchis (beþaus þe equis war nocth as þan 10 cummyn to þare supporte) durst nocth gif batell, and þarefore defendit þame within þare tentis. ffabius on þe nixt morow p. 261. assailȝit nocth his Inemyis onelie *with* ane army, | bot come (239). with thre armyis of thre sindri pepill * seuerit fra vther, and beltit 15 on euery side þe tentis of wolchis; and in þe myddis of þir thre armyis was himself with þe romane legiouns. than gaif he þame command to obserue ane signne of trumpet; and als sone as þai herde the signne, to assailȝe þare Inemyis atanis; and to fle to þare tentis gif he made þame ony signne þareof be blast of trumpet. sic thingis done, he arrayit certane nowmer of horsmen 20 behynd Ilk cumpayne. Thus on sindri wise assaleȝit he þe tentis of wolchis with sic force þat þai mycht nocth sustene þe preis þareof. Incontinent þe romanis come oure all þare mynicioun and trinchis, & eftir þat þai had won þare tentis, followit haistelie on þame þe horsmen; and howbeit þai had na 25 litil Impediment to ourepaß þe fowsyis and trinchis, ȝit fra þai gat þe wolchis fleand on þe plane, þai made slauchter but ony recounter. þus was grete slauchter made on þe wolchis baith in þe chace and in þe batall. The pray of gudis was mekil, for þe wolchis war sa wery þai mycht skarsly turſ *with* þame þare 30 wappynys, throw quhilk þai had bene aluterlie discomfist war nocth þai war hid in þe woddis. (XXIII) sic thingis done At Antium, þe equis send within þe nycht ane cumpayne of ȝoung men, and tuke þe castell of tusculanis, and campit þe residew of þare armye nere þe wallis þareof, to resist þe Incursioun of 35 Inemyis, gif ony occurrit. Thir novellis war brockt haistelie

to rome, and fra rome war brocht haistelie to þe campe of romanis (quhilk was liand for þat tyme at *Antium*). The romanis war na les movit for þis offence done to *tusculanis*, þan þare capitol had bene tane; for þe grete humanite and 5 kyndenes done afore be *tusculanis* was ȝit recent and grene in to þare myndis, and requirit supporte on þe samyn wise as þai did þame afore. þan *fabius* left all his other besines, and brocht þe hail pray of men & gudis þat was conquest in þis last batall to *Antium*, & quhen he had put ane *sobir*¹ garnisoun to þe 10 defence þareof, he past sa diligentlie to rescourþ þe castell of *tusculanis*, that he sufferit nocht his armye to turfþ ony thing p. 262. *with* þame, bot alanelie þare wappynnys *with* ane smal portioum of *victalis*² quhilkis war reddiest for þe time. ȝit to supporte his armye come *vittalis*² in grete plente, send be *cornelius* fra rome. 15 *sindri skarmissingis* war at þis tyme beside þe castell of *tusculum*. *fabius* Consul segeit þe tentis of * *equis* with ane parte of his (240). army; syne left þe residew þareof to þe *tusculanis* to recover þare castell. ȝit he culd neuer dant þe *equis* be force, bot alanelie be hunger; & quhen þai war cummyn to þe vter miserie þareof, þai 20 randerit þame self; Syne come nakit and wapinles vnder ȝoik of *tuscalanis*. ffinalie þe romane consul followit on þame at *Algidum*, quhen þai war returnand hame *with* shameful flicht, and left nane of þame on life.³ The consul estir þis victorie campit his army on ane place namyt *Columen*. The tothir consul, 25 *cornelius*, seing his *Inemyis* vincust, and na danger appering, come fra rome to *fabius*. þan enterit baith þir consullis *with* doubl armis in þare *Inemyis* landis, and *with* huge battellis waistit & hery[i]t sum tyme þe landis of *equis*, and sum tyme þe landis of wolchis. I fynd be mony authouris þe anciates rebellit 30 in þis ȝere. Nochtþeles þai war dantit, and þare ciete recouerit be *cornelius*; bot I will na thing afferme þareintill, becaus na sickir mencioum is made þareof be autentik authouris. (XXIV) þis batell beand endit in þis wise, the tribunis began to move domestic batall aganis þe faderis, cryand þe army was haldin out 35 of þe ciete be tressoun and falset alanelie of þe consullis, to

¹ *souer.*² *victualis.*³ *liwe.*

frustrate þe law tirintill ; and said nochtwiþstanding þe absence of consullis þai wald execute þare purpois. ȝit nochtwiþstanding þare Inoportune debate, pub[lius] lucresius consul, president in þe ciete, purchest þat al actiouns of tribunis suld be deferrit to þe cummyng of þe consullis. In þe mene tyme raiß ane new trubil ; 5 for A. Cornelius & q[uintius] servilius, questouris, assignit ane day to marchus Wolchius, sum tyme tribune of pepill, for his fals deposition in [con]dampnatioun of Ceso. for It apperit be p. 263. mony | evident signes, þat the brother of þis Wolchius, fra he fel anys in infirmitie, was neuer sene in public place, nor [ȝit] 10 raiß neuer estir þe first takin[g] of his maladie, bot lay bedderell¹ fra þe first taking þareof quhil he deceissit. Attoure, It was provin be mony famous men þat Ceso was nocht in rome in þe tyme þat þis Wolchius allegit his brothir strikin. Attoure, sindri men of armes quhilkis war with him vnder ane banar testifyit 15 Ceso was with þame at þe said tyme, but ony congey or pasport to depart. at þe day assignit, howbeit Wolchius nocht apperit, all þe witnes quhilkis war brocht þat day aganis him testifyit als (241). clere*lie his dampnacioun as he testifyt afore þe dampnacioun of Ceso ; bot ȝit the tribunis stoppit þare Iugement, for þai wald 20 nocht suffir þe questouris to haue ony commites for Iugement of wolchius quhil þare law war first astablit.² thus war baith þir³ materis deferrit to þe cummyn of consullis. als sone as þe consulis enterit with þare victoriis oistis in þe ciete, sindri belevit þe tribunis effrayit. nochtþeles þe tribunis (becaus It was 25 þan þe Ischey⁴ of þe ȝere) desirit þame to be continewit þe fourt tyme in þare auctorite. Thus was all contentioun concernyng þe said law postponit to þe desceptatioun of commites ; and howbeit þe consullis resistit na les þe continuacion of tribunis þan þe law sa oft be þame desirit had bene establit, ȝit þe victorie stude all 30 wayis with þe tribunis. The samyn ȝere þe equis send þare legatis to þe romanis, and purchest peace.⁵ þe nowmeration of pepill (quhilk was begunyn in þe ȝere afore) was endit in þis ȝere, and was þe tent lustir fra þe begynnyng of rome ; for all þe cieteȝanis of rome war nowmerit, & extendit to j^c xxxij^m iiiij^e xix 35

¹ bedderall.² establit.³ þare, A.⁴ Ische.⁵ pace.

persouns. þe consullis war in þis ȝere of hie renoun and glore,
baith at hame & at feild. Thay gat baith victorie and peace of
Inemyis. And how beit þai mycht nocht trete sikkir pece and
concorde at hame, ȝit be ciete was in leſt troubill þan afore.

5 how Clelius prince of equis Invadit þe latynis and (242).
tusculanis; Of þe message send to him be
romanis, & of his ansuere; | how naucius consull p. 264.
10 waistit þe equis; how minucius his colleig was
segeit be equis, and rescoursit be lucius quincius
dictator, and of þe said quincius tryumphe in þe
ciete. Ca. ix.¹

(XXV) At þe nixt commites 1[utius] minutius and 1[uciis]
nautius war made consullis, before quham war brocht haistely
þir two actiouns afore depending, twiching þe law tirintil
15 and Iugement of Wolchius; and as þe consullis stoppit þe
law tirintill, sa þe tribunis stoppit þe Iugement of Wolchius.
The new questouris war in þis ȝere of mare auctorite þan
afore; for t[utus] q[uintius] capitolinus, quhilk was thryis cons-
sull afore, and M.² Valerius, þe son of Valesus, war made
20 consullis. þis ti[tus] quintius, seand þat nowther mycht his
cousing Ceso be restorit to þe houſ of quintius (Of quhilk
he was discendent), nor ȝit reiose ony authorite within þe ciete,
kest him þe more feirslie³ to persewe þis Wolchius, quhilk
be fals depositioun was occasioun to condampne þe Inno-
25 cent man ceso. quhen A. Virginius, tribune, was dressing
him to procede in þis law, he gaif to þe consullis twa
monethis lasere⁴ to serche and ripe þe samyn, to þat fyne
þat quhen þai had schewin to þe pepill quhat dissate or
fraude was in þe said law, the said pepill suld be sufferit
30 to mak þare suffrage as þai plesit. þis dilatioun of twa

1 Lvij.

2 maister (!).

• freslie.

4 lasar.

monethis brocht þe ciete in quiete; ȝit It endurit schort tyme, ffor þe equis, *Noȝtwithȝstanding þare band of confederatioun made in þe ȝere afore with romanis, rebellit and chesit Clelius graccus, þe gretest prince of þare cuntre, to be gouernoure.* This Clelius, sone eftir his electioun, come 5 *with* maist awful Incursiouns baith in þe landis of latynis and tusculanis, and sett doun his¹ tentis, ful of pray and (243). richeſ, at Algidum. *In þe mene tyme come to him thre legatis out of rome, þat is to say, q[uintius] fabius, p[ublius] Volumnius, A[ulus] posthumius, first complenyng þe Iniuris 10 done be the Equis; syne desiring þare gudis eftir þe tenoure of þare band of pece to be restorit. Clelius commandit þir p. 265. legatis (gif þai had ony chargis fra þe romane | senate) to schaw þe samyn to ane aik, for he wald do sum vthir besines for þe tyme. than stude ane huge aik noȝt fer distant fra þe tentis of Clelius, quhais schaddow² made þe place about þe samyn sum parte dirk and obscure. Incontinent ane of þir legatis past to þis aik and said in þis wise: “þis haly aik and all þe goddis of hevin may here now, how þe pece Is brokin be ȝow equis, beseking herefore þe goddis first to be favorabil to oure complante, & syne to oure army; for we will persew our richt to tak pvnicioun on þame þat has violate baith þe law of god & man.” Thir woudis being said, Thir legatis returnit to rome. sone eftir was commandit be þe senate, þat þe ta consull 25 suld pas *with* ane army aganis þis Clelius to Algidum, and þe tothir consul to mak Incursiouns in þe landis of equis. þe tribunis (as þai war ay accustumate) made þame to stop þe rasing of þir armyis; and perchance þai had stoppit þe samyn be way of dede, war noȝt ane new trubil haistelie 30 followit. (XXVI) The sabynis come *with* mony arrayit legiounis, in grete cruelte baith of fyre and swerde, nere þe wallis of rome. throw slauchter[is] and hereschippis haistelie be þame committit, ane huge terroure was brocht to rome, and constrenit þe pepil to tak gladelie þare wappynnys. Noȝt- 35

¹ þare, A.² schaddo.

wit/standing ony reclamacioun of tribunis, twa strang armyis
 belive war rasit. Nausius consul past with þe tane to were
 aganis þe sabinis, and sett doun his tentis At Eretum; And
 finalie be frequent and werelie Incursiouns he waistit sa
 5 vterlie þe landis of equis, þat þe fronteris and bordouris of
 romanis gat litill or ellis na dammage In compare of þe
 hevy dammage & hereschippis made on þe said ¹equis. The
 tothir consul Minutius had nowthir sa gude fortoun, nor zit
 sa gude curage in leding his army as had naucius. Alssone
 10 as þir thingis war patent, þai raiß (as oft occurris) in grete
 audacite and sprete be febilness of þare Inemyis, And Incon-
 tinent assailzit to tak þe tentis of Minutius perforce; zit
 seing þare opin violence² na thing proffittit,³ þai beltit þe
 tentis of romanis on þe nixt morrow * on euery side with (244).
 15 strong sege. | Nochtþeles afore þe romanis war Inclusit in þis p. 266.
 wise, Ischit fra þare tentis five horsmen, and with grete
 diligence schew at rome how þe consul and his armye war
 segeit. Na thing mycht haue happyȝnit þat was les beleivit
 þan þe samyn, And þarefore followit na les dredoure amang
 20 þe romanis þan Inemyis had nocht bene⁴ segeand þare tentis,
 bot erare reddy to tak þe ciete. Naucius consul was broȝt
 þan afore þe senate, and becaus litill helpe apperit in him,
 na thing was found sa proffitable to mete þis haisty troubil
 as to create ane dictator; and sa be generale consent
 25 l[utius] q[uintius] cincinnatus⁵ was made dictator. Now is
 ganand þat þis historie following war notit⁶ with sic per-
 sons þat contempnis all wardly thingis in compare of riches,
 traistning na place to hie honoure or vertew bot onelie quhare
 richeß aboundis. l[utius] q[uintius] cincinnatus, ane pure
 30 man havand na richeß bot onelie foure oxin gang of land
 beȝound tyber fornens þe commoun havin, was at þis tyme
 þe onelie esperance of romane empire. þe romane legatis
 (quhilkis war send to [þis] lu[cius] quincius) fand him owhir
 makand ane sewch⁷ or ellis haldand þe pleuch. In quhat-

¹ The third hand resumes
in B. (p. 295, line 15).

² veolence.
³ profet.

⁴ beand, both.
⁵ citimatus.

⁶ notat.
⁷ a seuch.

sumeuir sorte It happynnyt, treuth is, he was gevin to landwart besynes. als sone as þe salutacions war made on athir side, þe legatis desirit him to put on his govne, and here þe command of þe senate, praying to þe goddis þat þe samyn may turne to the weill of him and þe commoun weill. 5 Quintius, havand na litill admiracioun, Inquirit gif all thingis war saif in þe ciete; and sone estir commandit Racilia his wiffe to bring his govne¹ fra þe somer schele quhare he duelt. Als sone as his govne¹ was dicht fra suete² and duste of pow[ð]er, he clothit him þarewith, and went ford- 10 wert. Than þe legatis salust him dictator, and desirit him to pas to þe ciete, schawand quhat effray and trubil was in þe samyn. Believe ane bait was brocht to rome to bring him oure tyber. At his oure cummyng met him his thre sonnys

p. 267. with³ mony⁴ vtheris his gude-willaris and | freyndis; and estir 15 ⁴ all met him⁴ þe maist parte of þe senate. Quintius was convoyit with this cumpany, and þe seriandis passand afore him, quhil he come to his houſ. grete buschementis of pepill come out of all partis of þe ciete to vesy him, na thing glade of his cummyng, and traisting þat he suld be 20

(245). baith oure feirſ in his aucto*rite, and oure desirus of em- pire. Na thing was done in þe nycht following Except⁵ onelie þe pepill walkit in all partis of þe ciete. (XXVII) On þe nixt morow, afore þe licht, þe consul come to þe merket, and made lu[cius] terquinius maister of chevelrie, for 25 he was discendent of þe lynnage patriciane, how beit he was in sic pouerte for þe tyme þat he tuke bot ane fute mannis place; ȝit he passit all þe ȝoung men in rome in manhede and proveſ. Sone estir þe dictator come with þe maister of chevelry to þe concioun, and commandit þe ministracioun 30 of lawis to ceiſ, and na buthis to be opynnyt⁶ to his returnyng, þat na private besines suld be done, bot alanelry sic thingis as concernis þe ordinance of battale. Sic thingis done, he commandit all þe ȝoung & lusty men of þe ciete, and all vtheris þat mycht weild ony wappynys, to mete 35

¹—¹ om. ² sute, both. ³ may. ⁴ met him all. ⁵ excep. ⁶ opnit.

him in campus martius afore þe son ganging to, Ilk man havand with him five dayis vittalis¹ and ane stake of xij fute lang. vtheris (quhilkis war past þe date of weiris) war commandit to remane at hame, to mak provisioun for vtit⁵ talis and vtheris necessare² thingis for þe army. belive all þe young men of þe ciete ran to þe nixt wod, and cuttit doun þe staikis bot ony Impediment, and at þe oure affixt³ war all reddy at þe dictatoris command. The army beand þus weill arrayit, Na les to travell⁴ and Iornay þan to batell,
 10 The dictator past fordwart with his legiouns, & þe maister of chevelrie with his horsmen. eueri ane of þare cumpanyis made hortacioun to þare knichtis (as þe tyme requirit) to haisty þare passage, þat þai mycht cum þat samdyn nycht to þare Inemyis; for þat was þe thrid day sen | the con- p. 268.
 15 sull and his army was segeit, and vncertane quhat was done, for oft tymes grete materis ar turnit vp and doun in ane moment. thus passit fordwarte⁵ þe armye, Criand in plesere of þare capitanis: "thow banerman, haist þi passage, & þow man of armes, fast follow." At mydnycht þai come to Alg-
 20 dum, and sett doun þare tentis in sicht of Inemyis. (XXVIII) than þe dictator (sa fer as he mycht behald within þe nycht) rade about þe army of equis, and vesvit baith þare tentis, þare trenschis, and mvniciou of þare campe. Syne com-
 mandit the tribunis militare to cauß þe burdingis and cariage
 25 of romane armye to be laid togiddir, þat þe army mycht cum to array with þare wappynnys. And as þe dictator commandit all was done. þan þe dictator arrayit his oist endlang þe tentis of equis, on þe * samyn maner as þai (246). come in þare viage⁶; syne commandit þame, (als sone as þai
 30 herd þe sound of trumpet) to cry all attanis, and within þe said cry Ilk man to mak ane fowsy afore him self, & to affix his staik fast behynd þe said fowsie. belive was þe signe gevin, and Incontinent was Ilk thing done as was commandit. The cry come throw þe tentis of equis to þe

¹ vittalis.² assignit.³ forwart.² vþer necesarris.⁴ trewell.⁶ weaige.

tentis of Minucius in diuerß maneris; for It effrayit þe equis, and maid þe romanis reiosit. The romanis, knawing weill þis clamoure rasit be þare freyndis, reiosit amang þame self in esperance of supporte; and be wilfull eruptiouns fra þare statiouns and vigilis¹ effrayit þe equis. The consull thocht nocth proffittabill to tary, for be þis cry nocth only apperit þe cummyn of his army, bot als þe batell begvn: grete mervell was þarefore gif þe tentis of Inemyis war nocth segeit at þare vtemaist² partis. Incontinent þe dictator commandit Ilk man to tak þare wappynnyß, and follow him. 10

The batall beand on þis wise begvn within þe nycht, The romanis legiouns schew be þare huge clamour and noyis þe parte in grete dangere quhare þai assailȝeit. Now war þe equis gevand extreme besines | to saif þame self fra Closing of romanis on þare outmest side, quhen þai war feirslie. 15

p. 269. Invaidit be þe consull in þare Inwarte partis, throw quhilk þe equis war enforcit³ to leif al resistance þat þai made afore aganis þe dictatouris army to resist þe consulis armye. þus spendit þai þe nycht fechtand aganis þe consul quhil þe morow; and in þe menetyme þe dictator inclusit þame on 20 euery side with fowsyis; and howbeit þai mycht scarslie resist þe consul, þai war nocthþeles Invaidit be þe dictator. the equis beand thus finalie inclusit & seand sa mony dangeris approcheing, war convertit fra batal to maist humyll prayeris, sum tyme requiring þe dictator and sum tyme þe consul to 25 vse nocth þis present victorie to þare vter destructioun, bot erare suffir þame departe wappynles. þe consul referrit þe mater to the dictator. þe dictator ekit þare dishonoure with more schame, for he commandit Clelius prince of equis, with [þe] remanent capitanis of þare army, to be brocht to 30 him bvnd,⁴ & þe toun of Corbio to be randerit. Sic thingis beand done, he wald nocth be desirus of þare blude nor slauchter, bot wald suffir þame to departe vnder ȝoik,⁵ To mak It knawin þai war subdewit. This ȝoik⁶ was made of (247). thre speris, * of quhilkiß twa war dentit in þe erde, and þe 35

¹ wigelis. ² maist ovt. ³ Inforcit. ⁴ bound. ⁵ ȝoik. ⁶ ȝoke.

thrid laid thortoure þare hedis. Vnder þis ȝoik¹ departit the equis, (XXIX) and eftir þare departing þe dictator ressauit þare tentis full of richeſ & gudis, and dividit² þe pray þareof Alanerlie amang his avne army, and said to þe consul: 5 “þow sal ressauie na parte of þis pray, becaus þow had almaist bene ane pray to þi Inemyis. And þow l[utius] minutius for þi vnprudence³ may noct̄ reiose þe office of consul. þow sal be þarefore bot legate⁴ abone þe legiouns, quhil þe tyme þow haue sic curage as requiris to þe consul.” þan Minu- 10 tius exonerit him self of þe consulat, and was made legate⁴ of þe armye. The curage of knichtis was sa obesant⁵ in þai dayis to al empire & command of þare capitane,⁶ þat þai remembrit erare þe honorabill dedis done be him þan to remember ony thingis þat mycht reproche his honoure. The 15 army gaif to þe dictator ane croun of gold weyand jli⁷ wecht, and callit | him þare patroun in all partis quhare þai come. p. 270. afore his cummyn to rome q[uintius] fabius convenit þe senate, be quham was decernit þat þe dictator sal enter try- umphand with his armye in þe ciete, on þe samyn maner 20 as þai past⁸ be þe gate. þe capitaniis and princis of equis (quhilk war takin be him in þe said batall) with þare banaris and ensenȝeis, war led afore him. Than followit his army, ladin with riche pray of men and gudis. The tabillis war coverit afore þe nobill houſſ⁹ of þe ciete, ful of mete and 25 wynes. þan followit þe cieteȝanis, etand delicius metis or ellis singand melodius sangis. On þe samyn day l[utius] manilius, prince of tusculanis, was made cieteȝane of rome. þe dictator eftir þir feliciteis had left his office, war noct̄ the commites of Wolchius, þe fals witnes aganis Ceso, war 30 cumin. The tribunis durst noct̄ empesche þe said commites for fere of þe dictator. in þir commites Wolchius was condamnite, and past to lavinium in exile. l[utius] q[uintius] left þe dictatoury¹⁰ on þe xvij day eftir his creatioun, howbeit It was gevin to him for vj monethis.

¹ ȝoke.

² dewydit.

³ Inp-.

⁴ ligat.

⁵ obeysant.

⁶ capitaniis.

⁷ a ti.

⁸ ȝeid.

⁹ houſſis.

¹⁰ dictatourry.

(248). How þe pepil purchest ten tribunis to be ȝerelie create
 in defence of þare accions aganis þe faderis and
 consullis; how þe equis war sindri tymes vincust;
 how þe romanis send þare legatis to Athenis to
 bring lawis to governe þame in Iustice. 5

Ca. x.¹

The consul nautius faucht vailȝeantlie in þis dayis aganis þe
 sabinis, for nocht onelie war þe sabynis dantit with grete
 slaunchter, bot als þare landis waistit with sindri incursiouns.
 q[uintius] fabius was surrogate in þe place of minutius, and was 10
 send with ane army to algidum in þe lattir parte of þis ȝere.
 the tribunis lauborit as afore for þe law tirintill; ȝit becaus two
 armyis of romanis war furth of þare ciete, the faderis wald suffir
 na alteratioun to be done to þare returnyng. The small pepill
 purchest in þe begynnyng of þis ȝere þe sam² tribunis þat war 15
 afore to be continewit to³ þe fiste ȝere. Mony wolfis⁴ war sene
 þis ȝere in þe capitoll, and chasit away with houndis. for fere of
 þis prodigie þe capitoll was purgit be the sacrifice lustrale.

p. 271. (XXX) In þe ȝere following, q[uintius] Minutius | and M.
 horacius puluillus war made consullis. howbeit þe begynnyng 20
 of þis ȝere was in quiet, but ony externe weris, ȝit þe tribunis
 with þe law afore rehersit made na litil seditioun in þe ciete. so
 fer war þe myndis of þir tribunis inflammyt with haterent, þat
 þare Iniuris had procedit forthir, war nocht þai war Impeschit be
 sindri novellis, quhilk schew þat þe equis with huge fere and 25
 violence of armes had tane þe toun of Corbio, and slane þe men
 of armes quhilkis war left in defence þareof. for fere of þis
 trubill þe consullis convenit þe senate, and war commandit to
 pas with ane haisty army to Algidum. now has þe tribunis left
 þare debate⁵ concernyng þe law tirintill, quhen þai began ane 30
 new debait⁶ concernyng þe rasing of þis army. alwayis þe

¹ lvijj.

² small, A.

³ in.

⁴ wolfis (!).

^{5—6} om.

empire of consullis had bene aluterlie vincust be authorite of tribunis, war *nocht* ane new effray come haistelie, saying þe sabinis war *cumbyn* with grete incursiouns in þe romane landis, * and purposit to tak þe ciete. for fere of þis trubill þe tribunis (249).

5 sufferit ane armye to be rasit vnder þis condition, sen þai war frustrate v¹ ȝeris continually of þare purpois, and sa few in nowmer þat þai mycht *nocht* support þe pepill in þare public actiouns, Ilk ȝere þarefore in tymes *cummyng* sal be create ten tribunis. The faderis thocht þe trubill occurring sa grete, þat

10 It war necessare to admitt þir desiris, vndir sic conditioun þat þir tribunis sal *nocht* be continewit, bot ȝerelie changit in þare office; and þat þis promiss new made be þe faderis sal *nocht* be in vane estir þe returnyng of þe army fra batal, as was oft tymes provin afore, Thir commites of tribunis war instantlie haldin.

15 In þis ȝere (quhilk was fra þe first creatioun of tribunis xxxvj ȝeris) war create x tribunis of pepill, þat Is to say, two tribunis of Ilk class. It was ordanit þat þir x tribunis sall be ȝerelie create on þe samyn maner. þe army beand rasit on þis wise, Minutius past aganis þe sabinis; bot þai war fled afore his

20 *cummyng*. the tothir consul, horacius, past aganis þe equis, estir þat þai had tane þe toun namyt hortana, & slane þe garnesoun of romanis laid [at] Corbio. Nochtþeles he met p. 272. þame at Algidum, and slew be set batell *nocht* onelie ane huge nowmer of þame, bot als chasit þe remanent baith out of hortana

25 and Corbio; syne kest doun þe tovne of Corbio (becaus þe garnisoun quhilk was laid for defence þareof was distroyit). (XXXI) In þe nixt ȝere M. valerius and Spu. virginius war made consulis. This ȝere was in quiet, baith at hame and of feild. In It was grete penurite and derth of victalis, quhilk come

30 throw Intemperate, & excessive wetis.² Than was ane law made þat mont aventyne sall be publist and dividit amang þe pepill; and ȝit þe tribunis war continewit as afore in þare authorite, Nochtwithstanding þe Actis made be þe faderis. In þe nixt ȝere A. Romulus and C. Veturius war made consullis.

35 In þe mene tyme thir tribunis afore rehersit rase with grete fywe.

² weytis.

power of pepill, & purposit to estabil þe law tirintil; for *sen*
 þare power was ekit *with* grete nowmer, þai thocht na litill *dis-*
honour was to þame, þat þare purpois come to na mare effect
 In þir two last ȝeris Than It did afore in thir vthir ȝeris. quhil
 þe tribunis war dressing þis mater *with* maist Craftynes, come 5

(250). certane effrayit messin*geris fra Tusculum, schewing þe equis
cummyng with ferefull Incursions in þare landis. The humanite
 and kyndenes latelie done be þe tusculanis movit þe romanis to
 haisty þare supporte. Incontinent baith þe consulis war send
with ane armye to *Algidum*, quhare þare Inemyis war campit 10
 afore þare cuming, and gaif batall. in þis batall vij^m Inemyis war
 slane, and þe residew discomfist *with* lang chase. grete pray of
 riches war gottin in þis battell; bot It was said be þe consulis, ffor
 þe tressoure of Rome was pure. The selling of þis pray brokþt þe
 consulis in grete haterent of þare army, and gaif occasion to þe 15
 tribunis to persew þe consullis criminaly afore þe pepill. At þe
 nixt *commites* spu. tarpeus & A. Eter[m]ius war made consulis.
 in þe tyme of þir consullis ane day of Jugement was set to ti.
 Romulus be Clau. cicero, tribune of pepill, and siclike ane day
 p. 273. was sett to | Veturius be L. halienus, edile of pepill, and þai 20
 war baith condampnit *with* grete Indignatioun of þe faderis.
 Romulus was condamnit in x^m brasin d.¹ and Veturius in xij^m.
 This Iniure and cruelte done to þe auld consullis made nocht þe
 new consullis þe leſt vigilant, for þai allegit It was possibl to
 þame to be condamnit as þare predecessouris; jit nowthir þe 25
 tribunis nor small pepill had power to mak lawis. The tribunis
 herand þir wourdis left all molestacioun and trubill concernyng
 þe law tirintil, & began to be þe more curtaſ to þe faderis;
 and said gif þe lawis made be þe pepill war odius and dis-
 plesand to þe faderis, þai sall put ane finale² end þareto, 30
 sa þat certane persouns war chosin be consent of þe faderis
 and pepill to mak lawis proffittable for þame baith, to defend
 equalie baith þare liberteis. The faderis wald nocht contempne
 þir offeris of smal pepill, bot þai wald suffir nane to execute³
 nor minister the lawis bot þameself, and becaus þai culd nocht 35

¹ pennyis.

² small (!).

³ exerse.

aggre quha suld be þe ministeris þareof, þai send thre nobil men namyt spu. posthumius, A. manlius, and p. sulpicius as ambassiatouris to Athenis to write þe lawis [of Solon vith þe maneris, lawis] & Institutiouns of vthir noble townis in grece.

5 (XXXII) The residew of þis ȝere was in quiet, but ony vncouth¹ weris, and þe ȝere nixt following was more quiet, In quhilk p. sulpicius & sextus quintilius war made consulis. the tribunis put perpetuale si*lence to all þare lawis, and abaid anerlie on þir (251). vncouth¹ and strange lawis, quhilkis war to cum out of athenis.

10 In þe mene tyme raiß two sorowful harmes, þat Is to say hunger and pestilence in perditoun baith of man and beist, Throw quhilk noct² anerlie þe landwart villagis bot als þe ciete, be continual beryng of dede bodyis, was desert and waist. mony Illuster and nobil houſſ war full of sorow be deith of þare

15 maisteris. Sextus cornilius, þe preist quirinal, was deceissit, and ho. puluillus, þe dewinour³; in quhais place was surrogate g. veturius, and þe erare becauſ he was condampnit afore be þe smal pepil. siclike six⁴ quintilius, consull, was deceissit, & thre þ tribunis of pepil in þe said pest. so was þis ȝere ful of p. 274.

20 pest and trubil, and þoche na dangere apperit be externe weris, ȝit in þe ciete war sindri motiouns of trubill.

Of þe returnyng of romane legatis fra athenis; how þe consullis war put doun, and ten men chosin to regnne in þare place; of þe chance and ordinance
25 þareſtir following. Ca. xj.⁴

Now war þe legatis returnit fra grece with þe lawis of Athenis. þan laubourit þe tribunis besely⁵ to haue þir lawis publist, þat þe pepill mycht be gouernit be lawis gevin to þame in writt. At þe first assemblance of senate was decernit þat x⁶ men sal be create
30 to exerce and prattik⁷ þir lawis abone þe pepill, but ony appell-

¹ vncouth

² sextus.

³ besalie.

⁷ practik.

² dewinour.

⁴ lix.

⁶ tes.

lacioun. fforthir to eschew all contentiouns (gif ony war [rysing] amang the pepil) It was statute þat na vthir magistrate nor dignite sal haue place during þat ȝere, providing all wayis þat na derogatioun war made to þe law Atiliane concernyng mont Aventyne, nor ȝit to nane vtheris sacrate lawis. (XXXIII) The 5 ȝere iij^e and ane fra þe first fundatioun of Rome, the gouernance of romane empire was changit; for as þe first gouernance þareof was changit fra þe empire of kingis to þe empire of consullis, so fra þe empire of consullis It was changit now to þe governance (252). * of x men. This translatioun was þe les notabil, þat It was noȝt 10 permanent; for as þe begynnynge þareof was full of pride and Insolence, so was þe declinatioun þareof þe more suddane, and was occasioun be quihilk þe empire returnit (as afore) to þe consullis. The names of þir x men followis: Ap. Claudius, ti. genutius, pub. festius, l. veturius, g. Iulius, Au. manlius, pub. 15 sulpicius, pub. curacius, T. romulus, & spu. posthumius.¹ I fynd þat Appius Claudius and ti.² genutius war ekit amang þir x. men becaus þai war chosin to haue bene consulis in þis present ȝere; & fra þai war frustrate þareof, þai war ekit amang þe nowmer of þir x men. pub[lyus] festus was made ane of þir 20

p. 275. | ten men becaus he dressit þis mater to þe favoure of faderis aganis þe mynde of his colleig. spu[ryus] posthumius, pub[lius] sulpicius, and Aulius manlius war chosin to be of þir ten men In recompenȝ of þare travell and laubouris; for þai war send as legis to bring þir lawis foresaid, as men of grete experience, & 25 semit þarefore to be þe more abill to constitute new lawis for þe gouernance of þare ciete. The remanent ten men war chosin be wisdome & grauite of age, to mak þame þe leȝ repugnant to ony gude materis done be þe remanent faderis. þe gouernance of þis new ciete stude maist be Ap[pius] Claudius, for he cled himself 30 wiȝ sa new Ingyn, þat quhare he was haldin afore gretest persewar and Inemy to þe pepill in all þare actiouns, he become

¹ Appius claudius, titus genutius, publius sestus, Lutius weturyus, gneus Iulius, Aulus manlus, publius sulpicius, pu[bl]ius curatius, titus romulus, and spurius posthymus.

² tytus.

haistelie þare manteinare and principall favorare.¹ Thir ten men satt Ilk day þare courſ about in Iugement for admizistracioun² of Iustice, and before him þat had þe administratioun³ for þat day went xij seriandis armit with axis, wandis, and vther ornamentiſ riall, & afore Ilkane of þe remenant ix⁴ went ane maser.⁴ Thus war þir ten men all of ane opinioun and concorde, to vse þir lawis with maist seuerite & Iustice abone þe pepill. The moderatioun and gouernance of þir ten men may be knawin be exemplil of ane of þame self; for eftir þat þir x men war create gouernouris of þe ciete but ony provocatioun, was found ane man slane and hid vnder erde in þe houſ of pub. sixtius,⁵ a man of lynage patriciane. thus was ane day sett to þe said pub. six.⁶ be g. Iulius, x⁶ man, to here him crymynally accusit afore þe pepill for þis felony þat was sa patent & terribil. ȝit þis g. 15 Iulius⁶ chesit erare⁷ to be accusare of þis pub. six.⁵ afore þe pepill þan to be Iuge þareof, þat þe * thing þat was tane fra his (253). authorite and new power suld be ekit to þe liberte of pepill. (XXXIV) Als sone as þe grete & smal estatis of þe ciete had schewin þame content to haue þir lawis exercit abone þame, 20 with na leſſ reuerence þan þe samyn had bene cummyn fra þe orakillis & responſ⁸ of goddis, Incontinent þir x men sett þame with vter diligence to publis þe said lawis; and to þe grete desire and fervent expectatioun of pepil þai publist þir x tabillis afore | rehersit in public concioun; and to þat fyne þat gude fortoun, p. 276.

25 felicite, and honouris may succeed to þame and þare barnis, thay prayit þe pepill to rede & avise with þe said lawis, for sen þe witt of mony Is bettir þan of few, they haue devisit (sa fer as ressoun and Intelligence may haue place) gude and equale lawis, als lele⁹ for riche as pure; and schew þai wald be frequent dis- 30 putacioun discuss euery mater be þame self, and eftir maist solid and ferme deliberatioun, þai wald bring þare sentence to licht equivalent to þe valoure þareof, þat It may be said the romanis has nocht onelie lawis made in writt, bot als executis þe samyn

¹ fauurrare.⁴ mafier.⁷ errar.²—³ om.⁵ publius sextus.⁸ oracles and responsis.⁸ nyne.⁶ gneus Iulyus, tent.⁹ leill.

be public consent. als sone as þe pepil had sene euery titill & cheptoure of þir lawis, correcket as apperit sufficientlie, The foresaidis lawis writtin in tabillis war pronuzcit in commites centuriat. Thir x tabillis, amang sa grete¹ multitude of confusit lawis, war þe first fontane of all public & private Iuris. Than 5 was ane murmour² amang þe pepill þat twa tabillis ȝit laikit, quhilkis beand ekit to þe first x tabillis, all difficulte of quah-sumeuir questioun occurring for the tyme mycht haue sufficient decisioun amang þe romanis. The pepill abaid *with* sic desire to haue þir other twa tabillis, þat quhen þe nixt commites war 10 cummyn, Thay continewit þir ten men in þare authorite; for þis new signorie of x men was so plesand, as apperit, þat the pepill thocht þe names of consullis was als odius as þe names of kingis, and þarefore nowthir socht þai þe supporte of tribunis in þare materis, nor ȝit þe remeid of appellacioun, traisting *nocht* onelie 15 all þare materis and accions to be plesandlie dressit in tymes cuming, bot als traistit þir x men to leif þare auctorite quhen tyme requirit, as Iulius did afore. (XXXV) Now war þe commites proclamit to be haldin þe thrid day estir þe nuȝdinis for creatioun of þir ten men, quhen grete seditioun be desire of 20

(254). honouris raiȝ in þe ciete. þe grete princis and faderis * þareof dredand þis new signorie to fall sum tymes to vnworthy persouns began to frequent þe pepill; and þoȝt þai Impugnit oft tymes þis new signorie, ȝit þai lauborit to haue ane parte þareof afore p. 277. þe samyn pepill | with quham þai had sa frequent contentiouns 25 afore. This new and dulce auctorite movit ap[pius] Claudius (for he was in his ȝong and flurisant ȝouth) to persew þe samyn with sic ambitioun, þat It was vncertane quhiddir he suld be nowmerit amang þe x men or amang þe candidatis; for he be crafty dissimilacioun schew him[self] erare ane desireare of office 30 þan to be presentlie cled *with* þe samyn. he reprochit þe faderis & grete princis of þe ciete, and began to extoll the new litis & vtheris sic as wer clothit in quhite vestiture and went oft tymes amang þe duellianis and Icelianis in þe merkett, traisting be þare familiarite to conques þe favoure populare; quhil at last 35

¹ grite.² myrroure, A.³ ignorance.

his collegis (quhilkis war mervelluslie gevin afore to him in all materis) beheld *with* grete sollicitude his doingis, havand na litil admiracioun quhat he purposit to do. Na thing be his doingis apperit to þame commendabill. Na benignite nor swete contentance semit be his proude havingis; for he *nocht* allanerly apperit oure desirus of new digniteis, bot als our frequent and familiare *with* private persouns. Thir war na signis þat he ony way purposit to departe fra his auctorite, bot erare signifit him at þe nixt commites to be continewit. alwayis his collegis durst *nocht* oppone¹ þame opinlie to his avarice, bot set þame þe maist presand way þai mycht to soft his preis. At þe nixt commites, howbeit he was þe youngest, his collegis gaif him all² power to cheis þe x men to be gouernouris of þe ciete for þe nixt ȝere. This was done be crafty slicht of his collegis, to þat syne þat sen *þe* power was gevin to *þe* said Appius to cheis þe x men of new, he suld *nocht* cheis him self; ffor³ It was neuer herd afore þat ony man chesit him self to ony auctorite or office, Except anis þe tribunis be þare wikkis exempill practicate sic ane like thing afore. Appius consentit weil to his collegis to be principale *haldare* of þe nixt commites, and to cheis þe x men more eselie, he thocht best to remove all thingis þat war Impediment to him. So quhen he had deprivit two nobil men of þe houis of quintius, namyt q. Capitolinus & q. cycynnatus,⁴ of all auctorite & honouris, & siclike had *|* deponit his fader broder,⁵ namyt C. p. 278.

25 Cladius, quhilk was ay ane defen* doure of public liberte, he (255). chesit x men to be gouernouris of þe ciete, howbeit þai war *nocht* of sic preeminence and wisdome as þir vthir ten men þat rang afore; and first of all he chesit him self, howbeit na man wald haue belevit sic thingis, for It was reprevit *with* al gude men; *30* and eftir þat he had chosin him self, he chesit M. cornelius maleginensis, M. sergius, l. minutius, q. fabius, q. petulius, T. Anthonius, Ceso duellius, spu. Appius, & a. Robuleus.⁶

¹ expone. ² haill. ³ bot, A. ⁴ citiymatus. ⁵ father bruther.

⁶ mertius cornelius maleginesum, Martius sergius, Lucretius minutius, quintius fabius, quintius petulius, titus Antonius, Ceso Duellius, spurryus appius, & A. Robulious.

how þir ten men rang *with* grete tyranzy abone þe romanis, and how þai empeschit þe commites and generall electioun of pepil to mak þame self regne *with* perpetuall empire abone þe romanis.

Ca. xij.¹ 5

(XXXVI) This was þe fyne of þe commissioun gevin to Appius, þat he chesit him self quhare he suld haue chosin vtheris to þis new signorie. than Appius began to leif estir his sensualite² and appetite, Inducing þe remenant of his collegis to follow his maneris. afore þai war cummyn to þare auctorite, þir x men made quiet consultatiouns amang þame self, but ony avise of vther cumpanyis; and belive þai war instruckit with sa pridefull conseil, þat þai couth³ nocht dissimill⁴ þare hicht, and kepit þare entreß sa strate, þat þe pepill couth⁵ nocht but grete difficulte haue speich of þame. Now was þe mater drawin ford-
wartis to þe Idis of maii, be quhilkis cummys þe solemne sesoun to begyn ony officis or digniteis. The first day of Iugement haldin be þir ten men was richt notabill be huge dredoure and fere appering to þe pepill; for þoche þir other ten men (quhilkis rang in þe þere afore) kepit sic ordoure during þare tyme, þat euery ane of þame rang þare day about, havand afore him for þat day þe xij seriadis *with* axis, wandis and ornamentis riall, On þe first day of Iugement every ane of þir ten men come with xij seriadis, armyt *with* axis and wandis, to þe court atanis, Extending in þe hale to þe nowmer of j^cxx⁶ seriadis, * and sen þir x 25 men war create but appellacion, na man durst oppone him to p. 279. þare authorite. þus þai representit þe resemblance and figure of x kingis attanis afore þe pepill. This terroure was multiplijt sa hie, þat It nocht onelie made þe small pepill, bot als þe faderis

¹ lx.

² sensewalitie.

³ could.

⁴ dissimill.

⁵ culd.

⁶ ane hundreith & t[w]enty.

and grete princes of þe ciete, astonist, traisting þir ten men
 subornate¹ and in sindri wise Instruckit to seik occasioun for
 þir hereschippis and slauchter. apperit gif ony man war mynde-
 full of sic thingis as concernis þare liberte, Or spak ony thing in
 5 defence þareof afore The senate or pepill, þat þis man (Nocht-
 w~~it~~standing of quhatsumeuir preeminence he be of) sall be first
 scurgit with wandis, syne hedit *with* ane ax, to þe grete fere and
 terroure of all otheris þat wald attempt sic thingis in tymes
 cummyng. and abone þir dammagis na support was left to
 10 romane pepill aganis thir x men; for nocht onelie all appellacioun
 was tane away, bot als *with* þare awne consent every other
 thing þat mycht þareto mak Impediment was on þe samyn maner
 tane away. howbeit It was nocht so *with* þir men þat rang in
 þe ȝere afore, for þai sufferit þare sentence and decretis to be
 15 correkkit be vigoure of ane appellacioun, Interponit fra ane of
 þame to þare collegis, as was provin in þe actioun of Iulius x
 man aganis sixtius²; for þis Iulius, of his fre volunte & benevo-
 lence, remittit certane thingis to þe Iugement of pepill, howbeit
 þe decisioun þareof pertenit to his awne auctorite. Thus was þe
 20 terroure certane tyme grete in þe ciete, to na leß terroure of þe
 faderis þan small pepill; [bot at last It was converrit halely on
 þe small pepill,] for þis ten men abstenuit fra all Iniure of þe
 faderis and princis of þe ciete, exercising þare luste and Insolence
 with grete cruelte and rigoure on þe commons and vilest parte
 25 of þe ciete alanerlie. forthir þai war gevin to þe favoure of party
 bot ony sicht to Iust or Iniust mater[ris]; & þat þare favoure
 mycht haue strenth of equite, þai gaif þare decisionis and Iuge-
 mentis of al materis at hame, syne publist þe samyn in opin
 courte. gif ony man appellit fra ane of þare sentence to ane
 30 vthir, he was sa trublit þat he repentit sare þat he stude nocht at
 þe first sentence. In þe mene tyme raiß ane quiet rumoure
 (howbeit na man durst be auctorite þareof) þat þir men war
 sworne & convenit amang þame self to reiose þis new senzorrie,
 nocht onelie for þe tyme present, bot als for all tymes cummyng, p. 280.
 35 In sic wise þat þai sall [stop and] empesche * all commites for (257).

¹ subornit.² sextwis (!).

election of new magistratis and digniteis.¹ (XXXVII) The small pepill, opprest *with* mony harmes, beheld reuthfully *þe* visage of *þe* faderis, and began to favoure þare liberte, for throw *þe* fere and dreddoure of seruitute² þai brocht þare commoun weill in *þis* present troubil. *þe* faderis *nocht* onelie hatit *þir* x men, bot als 5
þat *þe* small pepill, na thing commanding *þe* thingis done be þame, and thocht na thing vnsemand *þat* *þir* hevy *dammagis* war fallin to þame, sen þai of þare awne fre volunte sufferit þame self to be thirlit to *seruitude*. The faderis wald *nocht* supporte *þe* pepill in *þis* mater, bot dissimillit to *þat* fyne *þat* *þe* trubill & 10
Iniuris done Ythandlie be *þir* ten men. *suld* be sa odius & vnsufferabil, *þat* *þe* pepill *suld* be constrenit to desire *þe* consullis to be chosin agane, & *þe* ciete to [be] brocht to *þe* samyn estate as It was afore. Now was *þe* maist parte of *þe* ȝere gane, And 15
 two tabillis ekit to *þir* vther x tabillis afore rehersit. Thus was It be mature deliberatioun concludit, gif *þir* two tabillis, full of lawis (as said Is), war pronuncit in commites centuriate, *þat* It was *nocht* nedefull to haue *þis* new signory of x men continewing ony langare abone *þe* pepill. Thus abaid *þe* pepill *with* grete desire to haue *þe* nixt commites, *þat* be the samyn þare consullis 20
mycht be chosin as afore, & tuke grete sollicitude in þare myndis, how & be quhat maner þai *mycht* recovir agane the power of tribunis, quhilk was *þe* onelie protectioun of þare liberte, how beit It was lang desertit. All way apperit na mentiou to be made of the commites, for *þir* ten men garnist þare sidis with *þe* 25
 patricians & nobil ȝounkeris of *þe* ciete, quhare þai war wount to garnissh *þe* sammyn *with* *þe* tribunis to conqueis³ *þe* favoure of pepill. apperit þarefore *þe* gouernance of *þir* ten men to be in plane eversioun and *dammagis* of tribunis; for *þir* ten men war *nocht* onelie gouernouris of the pepil, bot als gouernouris of þare 30
 gudis & fortoun, in sic wise *þat* quha had maist riches had maist p. 281. authorite abone *þe* laif. and abone *þir* *Iniuris* | mony of *þe*

¹ *B. proceeds*: quhairthrow þai soll reiose *þis* new signorie *nocht* onlie for *þe* tyme present, bot als for all tymis cuming, and to reiose *þe* said signorie *perpetualie* þai soll empesche and (!) commisis for electioun of new magistratis & digniteis. *þe* small pepill, *etc.*

² *seruitude*.

³ *conqueis*.

small pepill war scurgit *with* wandis, & vtheris hedit with axis,
 and to þat fyne þat þare cruelte suld noctt appere for noctt,
 eftir the slauchter or punycioun of þe man followit confiscatioun
 of his gudis. The ȝoung nobillis, corruppit *with* rewardis, tuke
 5 na sollicitude to resist þe Iniuris done be þir ten men, bot erare
 war gevin to fortifye * þare licence and opyn renȝeis¹ than to (258).
 desire þe commoun liberte. (XXXVIII) Now war þe Idis
 cummyn of maij,² but ony substitutioun or electioun of new
 digniteis. Thir private persouns regnand in the place of ten
 10 men, *with* myndis na thing mynyst to bruke perpetuale empire,
 come to þe sicht of pepil clothit with axis, wandis, and oþir
 ornamentis riall, schewin be þe sammyn þe verray resemblance
 & similitude of kingis. Thus semyt þe public liberte perpetualie
 to periþ, for na man for þe tyme present nor to cum apperit to
 15 be recoverare þareof.

how the sabinis and Equis made grete Incursiouns in
 þe romane landis ; how the ten men sumound þe
 senate and faderis to consult in þis mater ; Of þe
 scharpe³ orisoun made be Valerius & horacius
 20 aganis þe ten men. Ca. xij.⁴

Nocht onelie war þe romanis disparit but ony esperance of
 releif in þis mater, bot als war contempnit *with* þare nychbouris,
 quhilkis thocht vnwourthy þat romanis suld haue ony empire,
 sen þai had na liberte. In þe mene tyme, þe sabinis with grete
 25 power maid diuerþ Incursiouns in [þe] romane landis ; and eftir
 þat þai had waistit braid boundis þareof *with* huge pray of men
 and gudis but ony resistence, þai colleckit þare army togiddir,
 quhilkis *with* Incursiouns war wide skatterit throw þe cuntre, and
 set doun þare tentis at Eretum, beleving þis new dissensioun
 30 [rising] amang þe romanis to be Impediment to the rasing of

¹ rynȝeis.

² may.

³ schairp.

⁴ lxj.

ony armye. The romanis war noct̄ onelie effrayit be messingeris,
 bot als be fleing of landwart pepill to þe ciete for fere of þis
 p. 282. trubil. þe x men | tuke consultatioun, quhat was to be done, &
 howbeit þai war vode of all gude esperance, knawand bait̄ þe
 haterent of þe small pepill and þe princis of þe ciete aganis þame, 5
 ȝit þare dredoure was ekit be ane new trubil; for þe equis on þe
 tothir side with sindri Incursiouns waistit þe tusculane landis,
 and sett doun þare tentis at Algidum. Incontinent come
 (259). * legatis fra þe tusculanis, desiring supporte aganis þe equis. þis
 new troubil made þir ten men sa effrayit, þat þai war constrainit 10
 to tak consultatioun of þe senate, quhat was to be done aganis
 þir two armyis of equis and sabinis, liand with awfull mynassing
 about þare ciete; and howbeit þai knewe na thing bettir þan
 extreme haterent & Invie¹ baith of þe faderis and pepill aganis
 þame, ȝit þai commandit þe senatouris to be summond to þe 15
 courte, knawing weill þe frequent hereschippis made in þe romane
 landis be Inemyis, & all the troubill following þareapoun, wald
 be sa hevelie² Imput to þame, þat þe pepill mycht tak occasioun
 þarethrow to depone þame baith of þare auctorite & honouris,
 leß þan þai war þe more stoutlie confederit togiddir vnder ane 20
 mynde to resist ane few nowmer of þame þat desirit to bring þare
 digniteis to noct̄, & to tak sic punycioūn³ on þame, þat þe
 residew of þare attemptatis suld be þe more eselie dantit. als
 sone as þe seriand be opin proclamatioun summound⁴ þe
 senatouris to þe court, becaus þai war noct̄ summound⁴ lang 25
 tyme afore to sic effect, þe novelte þareof brocht all þe pepill in
 sic⁵ admiracioun, noct̄ knawand quhat was happynty, Nor þe
 cauſ quhy þe thing (þat was sa mony ȝeris afore vnhantit⁶ and
 out of consuetude) was brocht agane in vse; and becaus sic
 thingis war done as pertenit to þe auld liberte of þare ciete, The 30
 thankis⁷ þareof suld be gevin alanelie to Inemyis. The pepil
 lukit throw all partis of þe merket and saw few senatouris
 present. thus was þe courte of ten men desert but ony cum-
 pany. þe small pepill allegit þe cauſ quhy þe faderis noct̄

¹ Inwy.² hewaly.³ pvnisioun.⁴ summond.⁵ grit.⁶ on hantit.⁷ thank.

convenit was þat private¹ men war clothit *with* authorite aganis
 þare lawis, and had na power² to | convene þe senate. apperit p. 283.
 þarefore þe tyme ganand to recovir³ þe public liberte, gif þe
 small pepil wald concur *with* þe faderis, and consent na mare to
 5 þe rasing of ane armye þan þe faderis has done to convene at þe
 command of þir ten men. few of þe faderis war sene owhir in
 þe merkett or in þe ciete, for mony of þame departit of þe ciete
 to landwart placis, and but ony sollicitude of public materis
 gaif þame to þare awne besines, traisting ay þe more distant &
 10 ferrare þai war fra þe cumpany of þir ten tyranfull men, to be þe
 ferrare fra euery trubill approcheing. * als sone as þir ten men (260).
 saw þe faderis nocht convenit, þai send apparatouris to þare
 houß⁴ to tak plegis for þare non-comperence,⁵ and to inquire
 gif þai desist⁶ fra public convencioun be sett purpoß. Thir
 15 apparatouris schew at þare returnyng þe faderis war departit of
 þe ciete to landwart placis. the x men war mare glade quhen
 þai herde þe departing of faderis to þare landwart placis, þan to
 haff herde⁷ of þare rebellioun, & þarefore commandit þe faderis
 to be summound as afore to compere on þe nixt morow; & on
 20 þe said morow þe faderis convenit with more nowmer þan was
 belevit. þan þe small pepill began to rummys, saying þe faderis
 has betrasit þare public liberte, obeying to þe command of þir
 ten men, as þai had bene lauchfully summond; for þir x men
 war private persouns but ony auctorite. (XXXIX) jit þe faderis
 25 convenit mare of þare awne benevolence þan for ony ferefyll
 wourdis of þir ten men. It is said quhen Appius Claudius had
 schewin þe cauß of þare convencioun, or evir þe senate & faderis
 had gevin þare votis & consultatioun concernyng þe mater pro-
 ponit, þat ane prudent man, L. Valerius, askit licence to speik
 30 sum thing concernyng þe common weill; and becaus þir x men
 had Inhibit him *with* awful mynassing to speik, he rasit ane huge
 noysis & troubil in þe courte. Incontinent M. horacius ruschit
with feirß sprete in þe courte, & callit þe x men for dispote ten
 tarquinis, and said sen þe tarquyns & kingis war banist and put

¹ prewait.
² powarre.

³ recovere.
⁴ houssis.

⁵ none-comperance.
⁶ desistit.

⁷ haue hard.

fra þare empire be þe lynnage & houß of Valerius & horacius his
 predecessoris, he thocht It resonabil þat þir ten men war banist
 p. 284. be | him on þe samyn maner. “þe ten men” (said horacius) “ar
 nocht hatit to þe pepill for ȝoure name, for grete Iupiter¹ and
 romulus the begynnare of oure ciete, and all þe remanent kingis 5
 eftir him succeding, & þe kingis of sacrifice, ar callit men; bot
 ȝe ar odius for ȝoure tyranny & pride, resembland to þe pepill þe
 figure of x kingis, and sen we mycht suffir na Iniuris nor wrangis
 in l. terquyne þat was oure king, Nor ȝit in his son sixtus ter-
 quyneus þe deflorer of lucreß, how may we suffir ony tyrannyis 10
 of private² men? Avise discretelie, howbeit ȝe haue grete
 pussance, to Inhibit men to speik owtis in þe courte or vtouth
 þe courte.” forther he couth persave na ressoun quhy It pertenit
 (261). nocht als wele to him, þat was ane private [man], to con*vene þe
 pepil to ane concioun, as It pertenit to þir ten men to convene 15
 þe senate. Thir x men, gif þai pleiß, sall haue sone experience
 quhiddir þare dolour Is greter in recouering þare liberte, or þare
 avice greter in posseding of wrangwis empire. “thir ten men”
 (said horacius) “has convenit þe senate to haue consultatioun
 concernyng the batell now appering be sabinis, howbeit na 20
 battallis apperis sa damageus³ to þe commoun weill as þir men,
 quhilkis war create for ministratioun of lawis, and has left na
 place to equite nor Iustice in oure ciete, bot has tane away þe
 commites, þe ȝerelie digniteis, and þe thing þat was þe onelie
 defence of þare liberte, þat Is to say, þe changeing of empire 25
 þare ȝere and courß about, put doun be þare manifest tyranny;
 and þoche ȝai be bot private persons, ȝai ȝegnne with kingly
 empire and kinglie ornamentis. soith⁴ is þat eftir þe proscrip-
 tioun of kingis war certane ȝerelie digniteis create to be chosin
 onelie of þe patricianis, & sone estir, be secessioun of pepill to 30
 þe sacrate montane, war create certane new digniteis to be chosin
 only of þe plebeanis; bot þis new signorie is nowther for þe
 weill of þe patricianis nor plebeanis. ȝai ar nocht for þe weill of
 plebeanis, for ȝai did neuer thing be avise of þe pepill. ȝai ar
 nocht for þe weill of patricianis, for in þis ȝere quhilk is now nere 35

¹ grit Iubiter.² pryaite.³ dampnagius.⁴ saith.

gone þai desirit nowthir þe faderis nor princis of þe ciete, nor ȝit
 nane other of þe patricianis to ony of þare consultation, and
 regnis now *with* | sa pridefull empire þat þai Inhibit ony man to p. 285.
 speik for þe public weill; and to þat fyne þat þare authorite sall
 5 nocht continewe be onelie esperance þat þai haue in dredoure of
 þe pepill, I say þe pepill now presently sustenis ma cruelteis &
 oppressiounis be þir ten men, þan may be ymaginate or dred to
 cum on þame in tymes *cummyn*."

Of the orison made be C. Claudius to soft þe ferocite (262).

10 of Appius Claudius; Of þe orison made be l.
 Cornelius to continew þir ten men in þare auctorite;
 how twa armyis of romanis war rasit aganis þe
 sabinis & equis, and baith discomfist.

Ca. xiiij.¹

15 (XL) Quhen horace had said thir wourdys, þe ten men war sa
 commovit þat þai couth nocht fynd þe way how þai suld meiȝ
 þare Ire, nor ȝit how þai mycht reveng the samyn, nocht knawing
 to² quhat fyne þis contentioun suld cum. Incontinent C.
 Claudius, fader brother to appius Claudius tent man, began to
 20 speik to his said nevo,³ erare in maner of prayer þan ony
 displesere, Requiring him for þe lufe he had to þe saul of ap.
 Claudius his fader, to assist erare to þe civile⁴ societe In
 quhilk he was bred & nurist þan to þe wikkit confederation
 maid betuix him and his colleigis. And forther he requirit
 25 him to consent þareto, erare for þe lufe he had to his awne
 fader, þan for þe favoure he had to þe commoun weill; for gif þe
 commoun weill be nocht defendit *with* gude will, It will be
 haldin in þe richt perforce; and becaus of grete debate risys
 grete Invie and haterent, he dred sarelie þe end of þare con-
 30 tentiounis, throw þe haterent of pepill aganis þame, suld be

¹ lxij.

² be, *both*.

³ newoy.

⁴ sewyle.

noysum & perrellus. quhen þe x men had Inhibit C. claudius to speik ony thing without he war demandit, he eschamit a litil. Nochtþeles he opynnyt his mynde with more dispite, & said he thocht expedient þat na consultatioun of þe senate suld be made in tymes cummyng be ony avise of þir x men, for þai war bot 5 private persouns, regnand in auctorite but ony commites or electioun of pepill. mony of þe faderis and grete princes of þe ciete assistit to his opinioun. ane other sentence, semand mare p. 286. pronȝeand and scharp, was pronuncit in þe said | courte, howbeit It was nocht of sa grete effect, quhi/kis said þe patricianis war 10 convenit to cheif ane Interking, becaus na man aucht to convene þe senate without he war clothit with public office, and sen (263). C. claudius has decernit þir x men alanerlie bot private * persouns, Thay haue na Iurisdictioun nor power to assembil þe faderis to ony convencioun. The action of ten men beand 15 nere perist in þis wise, raiȝ vp l. Cornelius, brother to M. cornelius x man,¹ for he was ordanit be all þare avise to speik in þe lattir end of þis mater; & Incontinent l. Cornelius vnder þe schaddo of batall (as þe samyn war Instantly appering be sabinis and equis) began to defend þe action of his 20 brother and his collegis, Saying he had na litill admiration how and be quhat maner It was happynnyt, þat þir ten men suld be Impugnit,² specially be sic men as reiosit þe signorie þareof In þe þere afore. “quhat Is þe cauȝ” (said he) “þat na man Impugnit þis new signorie sa mony monethis bipast? 25 and now quhen Inemyis approchis to oure portis, þe raiȝ trubil and discorde amang þe pepill.” he mycht nocht vnderstand þe samyn done to ony vthir fyne, bot onelie to mak þe mater (In quhilk þai lauboure) sa dirk and nubilus, þat na thing salbe sene clerelie In It quhat suld be done. forther, nane Is amang 30 þame, sen þare myndis ar chargit with sic sollicitude, þat can remove the thing þat dois maist preiudice in þis mater. as to þe mater presentlie occurring, he thocht þir ten men suld departe fra þare office at þe nixt Idis of maij, as valerius & horacius afore desirit; for als sone as þe batellis war endit, 35

¹ tent man.² Inpungnit.

þe public weill mycht be brocht as afore to tranquillite and peace.
 In þe mene tyme he thocht expedient þat Appius Claudius
 (quhilk was chosin to create þir x men) suld be examineate¹
 quheþer he create þame to reiose þare authorite alanelry for ane
 5 ȝere, Or gif he create þame to continew ay and quhil þe lawis
 (quhilkis failȝit and Inlakit) war completit. for þir ressouns he
 thocht na thing was to be done except alanelie þe rasing of
 armyis aganis | the sabinis and equis. Attoure, gif þai belevit p. 287.
 the fame of þis batell was vane, gif þai belevit na faith was to be
 10 gevin to þe messingeris þareof nor ȝit to þe legatis of tusculanis,
 gude war to send furth exploratouris to reporte all thing (as
 apperit) wîth maist securite; & gif ony faith war to be gevin to
 þe saidis legatis, gude war to raiȝ ane armye, and þe sammyn to
 be led as þir ten men thinkis expedient, and na other mater to be
 15 presentlie tretit. (XLI) This orisoun of Cornelius movit þe
 ȝouȝ faderis to assist to his opinioun. * Than valerius & (264).
 horatius began feirslie to Invay aganis þir ten men, and desirit
 licence to speik for þe commonweill afore þe pepill, sen þai war
 Inhibit for þis present factioun to speik afore þe senate. Con-
 20 sidering þir ten men war bot private persouns, Thay had na
 power to Inhibit ony man to speik oþwhir in þe courte or
 conciououn. Na place aucht þarefore to be gevin to þare vane and
 vsurpit authorite. Appius (traistis þis new segnorie aluterlie to
 periȝ gif he resistit noȝt þe violence of valerius² and horacius
 25 with siclike audacite as þai persewit) commandit na man to speik
 bot gif he war requirit. At last, becaus Valerius said he wald
 noȝt kepe silence³ at þe command of ane private man, Appius
 commandit ane serian to pas and apprehend him. Thus was þe
 debate more seirȝ þan afore; and þoȝt valerius requirit þe pepill
 30 to assist to his opinioun, he was noȝt supportit⁴ bot violentlie
 eiekit out of þe courte. þan C. Cornelius embrasit appius, and
 causit him put ane finale end to þis debate, and gaif power to
 Valerius to speik quhateuir he list, howbeit his speking noȝt
 avalit. thus bure þe ten men furth þare authorite, Noȝtwith-
 35 standing ony reclamatioun in þe contrare. the agit faderis and

¹ examenat.² weolence of waleryus.³ cilence.⁴ suport.

nobillis of þe ciete had grete haterent aganis þe power of
 tribunis; And becaus þai knewe þe pepill war more desirus to
 haue tribunis þan consullis, Thay had levir þir ten men had gane
 p. 288. force and haterent of þe pepill. for gif al materis war pleſsantly 5
 dressit, It mycht happen owhir be continuatioun of battellis, or
 ellis be moderate and soft empire of þe consullis, þat þe pepill
 mycht desist fra ony desire of tribunis in tymes cummyng.
 finalie, be tollerance of þe faderis, ane army was rasit. þe ȝoung
 men of þe ciete (becaus þe empire of þir ten men was but 10
 appellatioun) gaif þare names in writh but ony obstakill. als
 sone as þe legiouns war writhin, thir ten men tuke consultatioun
 amang þame self quha¹ sall pas to batall, and quha sall be capi-
 tanis of þe armyis. the principall amang þir ten men was Appius
 Claudius and q[uintius] fabius; and becaus þe trubill apperit 15
 mare noysum at hame þan of feild, this appius was fund for his
 feirß and violent Ingine mare gannand to dant civil conten-
 tiounis, gif ony occurrit in þe ciete, þan to lede ony army. On
 (265). þe tothir side was fund þat * fabius was more Ingenius² in
 chevelrie³ þan constant in civil werkis; And þoche he was ane 20
 nobleman, and sum tyme richt proffittabil to þe ciete, baith in
 were and pece, ȝit þe signorie of þir x men, & þe Ire of his
 collegis, alterit his mynde in siclike sorte, þat he desirit erare
 to be like appius in maneris þan to be like himself. The
 charge of batall aganis þe sabinis was gevin to þis q[uintius] 25
 fabius, havand wit⁴ him M. rabuleus & q[uintius] petuleus to
 be collegis. On þe tothir side war send aganis þe equis M.
 Cornelius, l[uciis] minutius, Ceso duellius, T[itus] Antonius,
 & M. sergius. Spurius oppius was ordanit to remane ⁴with
 appius Claudius to helpe him to reule þe ciete. (XLII) The 30
 commoun weill of rome was na bettir gedit at hame þan of
 feild. It was evil gedit at hame; for appius Claudius and
 spurius Oppius be þare wikkit gouernance drew all þe pepill in
 þare Inuy and haterent; and þe mater was evil gedit of feild

¹ quhay.

³ chywile.

² Ingynius.

⁴ A new hand (No. 11) begins here in B. (p. 321).

be falt of knichtis and men of armes. for þe saidis knichtis (to þat fyne þat na thing suld follow *with* felicite þat was done be þir ten men) sufferit þame self to be vincust to þare hie dis- honoure & *dammage*. Thus war þe romanis discomfist baith 5 at Algidum be þe equis, and at Eretum be þe sabinis. howbeit þe *sammyn* was in diuerß sortis, for sa mony of þame (as | war p. 289. discomfist be sabinis) fled within þe *nycht* to rome, & campit þame *with* garnist Oistis¹ on ane hie montane betuix Crustumeria and fidena, and defendit þame fra persute of Inemyis² 10 mare be strenth of þe place quhare þai war campit þan be ony manhede or vertew of þare handis. The romanis gat mare *dammage* at Algidum þan at Eretum; for *nocht* onelie war þai brokin and spulȝeit of þare tentis at Algidum, bot als spuleȝeit of all þare other gudis and constrenit to fle to þe toun of 15 tusculum to saif þare livis be fidelite of þare confederate freyndis be quham þai war *nocht* frusterit.³ Thir tithingis, being divulgate in rome, made þe faderis sa effrayit þat þai put aside⁴ all Invie & haterent þai bure aganis þir ten men, & 20 commandit continuall walking to be in þe ciete, and be generale edict commandit all þame þat mycht bere armoure and wappynys to stand in þare statiouns for defence of þe wallis & portis; syne ordanit ane new power to be send haistelie to supporte * þe romanis at tusculum, and to cauȝ þe ten men (quhilkis war (266. in tusculum) to departe fra þe said toun, and keip þare army 25 vnder garnist tentis in þe feild; and commandit þe tothir army of romanis þat lay betuix fidena and Crustumeria to transport þame in þe sabyne landis to mak the sabinis sa effrayit, seand þare Inemyis⁵ campit in þare landis, þat þai sall desist fra ony segeing of þe romane⁶ ciete.

¹ hostis.² Inimes.³ frustrat.⁴ on side.⁵ Inimes.⁶ romanis.

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS.

UNIV. OF ALBURN.
MAR 5 1910.

20.6
43

Scottish Text Society

LIVY'S 1291
HISTORY OF ROME

THE FIRST FIVE BOOKS

TRANSLATED INTO SCOTS BY
JOHN BELLENDEN

1533

EDITED, WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY
BY
W. A. CRAIGIE, M.A.

VOL. I.

Printed for the Society by
WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS
EDINBURGH AND LONDON

1901

The Scottish Text Society.

Patrons.

THE EARL OF ABERDEEN, G.C.M.G. | THE EARL OF ROSEBURY, K.T., K.G.

President.

VISCOUNT MELVILLE.

Vice-Presidents.

DAVID MASSON, Esq., LL.D.

SIR ARTHUR MITCHELL, K.C.B., M.D., LL.D.

ÆNEAS J. G. MACKAY, Esq., Q.C., LL.D.

JOHN SCOTT, Esq., C.B.

LORD AMHERST OF HACKNEY.

Council.

SIR RALPH W. ANSTRUTHER, Bart.

J. T. T. BROWN, Esq.

J. MAITLAND THOMSON, Esq.

J. T. CLARK, Esq.

THE REV. WILLIAM METCALFE, D.D.

WILLIAM TOUGH, Esq., M.A.

F. J. AMOURS, Esq.

THE REV. J. KING HEWISON, M.A.

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD, Esq.

PROFESSOR SAINTSBURY, LL.D.

GEORGE NEILSON, Esq.

RICHARD BROWN, Esq.

J. TAYLOR BROWN, Esq., LL.D.

J. HORNE STEVENSON, Esq., M.A.

THOMAS G. LAW, Esq., LL.D.

Secretary.

WILLIAM TRAQUAIR DICKSON, Esq., M.A., W.S., 11 Hill Street, Edinburgh.

General Editor.

G. GREGORY SMITH, Esq., M.A., c/o MESSRS W.M. BLACKWOOD & SONS,
45 George Street, Edinburgh.

Treasurer.

PETER RONALDSON, Esq., C.A., 3A North St David Street, Edinburgh.

LIST OF PUBLICATIONS TO JAN. 1902.

1883-84 { THE KINGIS QUAIR, together with A Ballad of Good Counsel. By King James I. of Scotland. Edited by the Rev. Professor W. W. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. pp. 113 and iv.

THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part I. Edited by the late John Small, M.A. pp. 160 and iv.

THE COURT OF VENUS. By Iohne Rolland, 1575. Edited by the late Rev. Walter Gregor, M.A., LL.D. pp. 231 and xxxii.

LIST OF PUBLICATIONS—*Continued.*

	THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part II. Edited by the late John Small, M.A. pp. 169 and vi.
1884-85	BISHOP LESLEY'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part I. Translated into Scottish from the original Latin by Father James Dalrymple. Edited by the late Rev. Father E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 130 and iv.
	SCHIR WILLIAM WALLACE, Knight of Ellerslie. Part I. By Henry the Minstrel, commonly known as Blind Harry. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 181.
	THE WALLACE. Part II. Edited by James Moir, M.A. pp. 198.
1885-86	SIR TRISTREM. With Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. Edited by G. P. M'Neill, M.A. pp. 148 and xlvi.
	THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part I. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 176 and vii.
1886-87	THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part II. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 160 and iv.
	THE POEMS OF ALEXANDER MONTGOMERIE. Part III. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 96 and lvii.
	GAU'S RICHT VAY TO THE KINGDOME OF HEUINE. Edited by the late Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D. pp. 130 and lviii.
1887-88	LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS (Fourteenth Century). Part I. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 224 and v.
	BISHOP LESLEY'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part II. Edited by the late Rev. Father E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 270 and xxvi.
	NINIANE WINZET'S WORKS. Vol. I. Edited by the Rev. J. King Hewison. pp. 140 and cxx.
1888-89	THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part III. Introduction. By A. J. G. Mackay, LL.D. pp. cclxxxiii.
	THE WALLACE. Part III. Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. By James Moir, M.A. pp. 189 and liv.
	LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part II. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 386 and iii.
1889-90	BISHOP LESLEY'S HISTORIE OF SCOTLAND. Part III. Edited by the late Rev. Father E. G. Cody, O.S.B. pp. 262 and iii.
	SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part I. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 220 and vi.
	THE POEMS OF WILLIAM DUNBAR. Part IV. Containing the first portion of the Notes. By the late Rev. W. Gregor, LL.D. pp. 244.
1890-91	NINIANE WINZET'S WORKS. Vol. II. Notes and Glossary. Edited by the Rev. J. King Hewison. pp. 203 and xxxiii.
	LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part III. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 192 and iii.
	SATIRICAL POEMS OF THE TIME OF THE REFORMATION. Part II. Edited by James Cranstoun, M.A., LL.D. pp. 181 and lix.
1891-92	LEGENDS OF THE SAINTS. Part IV. Completing the Text. Edited by the Rev. W. M. Metcalfe, M.A. pp. 285 and iii.
	THE VERNACULAR WRITINGS OF GEORGE BUCHANAN. Edited by P. Hume Brown, M.A., LL.D. pp. 75 and xxxviii.
	SCOTTISH ALLITERATIVE POEMS IN RIMING STANZAS. Edited by F. J. Amours. pp. 187 and vi.

